

**FREEDOM OF INFORMATION
AND
PRIVACY ACTS**

SUBJECT: ROBERT F. KENNEDY
ASSASSINATION

LA FILE NUMBER: 56-156
SUB FILE H VOLUME 4



FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION

NOTICE

THE BEST COPIES OBTAINABLE ARE INCLUDED IN THE REPRODUCTION OF THE FILE. PAGES INCLUDED THAT ARE BLURRED, LIGHT OR OTHERWISE DIFFICULT TO READ ARE THE RESULT OF THE CONDITION AND OR COLOR OF THE ORIGINALS PROVIDED. THESE ARE THE BEST COPIES AVAILABLE.

U. S. Department of Justice

MATERIAL MUST NOT BE REMOVED FROM OR ADDED TO THIS FILE

**X DO NOT DESTROY
HISTORICAL VALUE
NATIONAL ARCHIVES**

FEDERAL BUREAU

**DO NOT DESTROY
PRESERVE FOR SELECT
COMMITTEE ON ASSASSINATIONS
INVESTIGATION**

Bureau File Number

62-587

**DO NOT DESTROY
PENDING LITIGATION**

277A

277-167

also Nos. 129, 198, 187, 104, 115, 210, 217

67

104

115

396

277B

Serial

Volume Number

56-156-98

Serial 64-880

98-1

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Jury Influenced by Unrest, Cooper Says

Feelings of Entire Nation Reflected in Minds of Members, Defense Believes

BY LEE DYE

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's chief defense attorney Grant B. Cooper said Wednesday the jury that handed down the death sentence for the 25-year-old Jordanian was deciding issues far greater than the trial itself.

Cooper, obviously depressed over the verdict, told reporters after the trial that the jurors were influenced by student and civil unrest across the country and by the identity of the victim, a candidate for the office of the President of the United States.

He said several times during the press conference that he was not charging that the jurors had been unfair, but he said that "the underlying feeling of the entire United States (regarding unrest in the universities and civil disobedience) caused a backlash that has seeped into the minds of the jurors."

"The jurors are governed by the same emotions—love and hate—that you and I have, and they can't help but be affected by unrest," Cooper said.

Russell E. Parsons, Cooper's associate in the defense of Sirhan for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, made several emotional statements similar to the same effect.

Trial Called Fair

"Things are bad in this country," Parsons said, in reference to the unrest and lawlessness, "and it's very difficult to get a fair trial."

Cooper then repeated his claim that no member of the defense team was saying Sirhan did not have a fair trial.

Cooper said the identity of Sirhan's victim greatly influenced the outcome of the trial.

"If the victim had not been Robert Kennedy, the court would have accepted the plea of second degree. I mean it. I believe it. With this type of situation and this type of evidence, it never would have gone this route."

Jurors 'Had a Job'

"A candidate for the President of the United States was assassinated," he said. "They (the jurors) had a job to do."

During the press conference, Cooper stood silently amid a throng of reporters while the prosecution answered questions. His glance traveled back and forth between the prosecutors and the reporters.

Finally, he stood quietly staring at the floor until the prosecution finished.

Then, in response to a question, summed up his feelings like this:

"Of course I am disappointed. I believed in our defense, and I believed he should not be executed. I feel very bad."

He said he was committed, because of the death verdict, to stay beside his client in the jail.

"I've got to go forward," he said, "even if I have to spend money out of my own pocket."

Sirhan Not Upset

Both Cooper and Parsons said Sirhan did not seem upset when the verdict was read.

Sirhan was led into the courtroom at 11:32 a.m. He turned briefly to Parsons and said: "Let's hope for the best."

Cooper said that after the verdict, Sirhan told him not to be concerned.

"Even Jesus Christ couldn't have saved me," Sirhan told him.

The motion for a new trial will be heard on May 11. Cooper said he will base the motion on three points:

First—On the grounds that the court did not accept a plea of guilty with life imprisonment, as recommended by the district attorney and his deputies.

Second—The jury was not properly constituted.

Third—Sirhan's personal notebook, which was introduced over the defense's objections, should not have been admitted as evidence. Cooper said the admission of the notebook was "a grave error of constitutional dimensions."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1

LA Times
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-24-69
Edition: Home
Author: Lee Dye
Editor: Nick B. Willie
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angel
☐ Being Investigated

File Stripped
Initials [initials]
Date 4-27-72
per [signature]
b7c

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
1 APR 24 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

56-156-2-800



NEAR TEARS — De-
fense attorney Grant
Cooper as he told news-
men, "I feel very bad."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Most Jurors in Favor of Death Penalty From Start, One Says

BY DAVID LARSEN

Times Staff Writer

"As long as we have capital punishment," said juror George Stitzel, "what other crime would justify it if this didn't?"

That seemed to be the general feeling Wednesday of the seven men and five women who decided the fate of Sirhan B. Sirhan.

From the start, most of the jurors favored a conviction on first-degree murder, Stitzel revealed. It was then a matter of converting those few who leaned to a verdict of second-degree murder.

Similarly, in the penalty phase of their deliberations, most of the panelists voted from the beginning for death.

Stitzel, a pressroom supervisor at The Times, said five formal ballots were taken during the 12 hours of the penalty deliberations, although oral votes were taken from time to time to see how the count stood.

Rundown on First Ballot

The first formal ballot, taken shortly after the jury retired Monday afternoon, showed five in favor of the death penalty, three favoring life imprisonment, and four undecided.

On Tuesday, the count became nine for death, one for life and two undecided. Another ballot that same day brought the tabulation to 10 for death, two for life.

By Wednesday, the count had changed to 10 for death, one for life, one undecided. The two holdouts, whom Stitzel declined to identify, were finally persuaded to go along with the majority.

"The main argument by those who wanted life imprisonment for Sirhan was that it would be a greater punishment," he disclosed.

Those who favored death, he said, pointed out that this is the ultimate

penalty under the law, and that the defendant deserved it for the crime he committed, the assassination of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

The first ballot during the guilt phase showed eight for first-degree murder, two for second-degree, and two undecided, said Stitzel. He couldn't recall how many other polls there were during the nearly 17 hours of those deliberations, but said the majority was always in favor of a first-degree verdict.

What did the jury feel was the most damaging evidence against Sirhan?

"As far as I was concerned, it was the notebooks," said Stitzel, referring to the writings of the defendant that "Kennedy must die."

What about the psychiatric evidence?

Stitzel said the jury felt Sirhan was mentally ill, but not to a degree that would affect the verdict.

"I think the jury took the testimony of the psychiatrists and psychologists into consideration fairly," he said.

See Contradictions

"But," he added, "the feeling was that they contradicted each other and even themselves from time to time."

Was the jury convinced that Sirhan had lied?

"I think they believed he told some lies," the juror replied.

Did his courtroom outbursts have any effect on the jury?

"No."

Stitzel said the overriding consideration in his mind was "the gravity of the crime, the cold-blooded murder of an individual

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Time
Los Angeles, Cal

Date: 4-24-69

Edition: Home

Author: David Larsen

Editor: Nick B. Williams

Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

1 C.C. A
Bu

66-156-2-79

Politics No Factor

He indicated that the political stature of the victim was not a major factor during the deliberations. "The jury felt that Sirhan could just as well have shot the busboy, and that would also have been adequate for first degree," he said.

"Of course," he added, "this was obviously a political assassination, and you couldn't remove the element completely from your mind."

Stitzel revealed why, on the second day of the guilt deliberations, the jury returned to the courtroom to ask Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker to clarify his instructions on second-degree murder.

All that amounted to, he recalled, was that one of the sentences in the type-written instructions was either missing a comma or else had the word "has" instead of "his," thereby causing confusion when it was read. "We asked for clarification just to be absolutely sure," he said.

No Outbursts

Stitzel said there were no emotional outbursts during any of the deliberations—"after all, we had been living together for two months."

As were other jurors, he was startled when informed of a deal that had at one time been made between the defense and prosecution, a piece of information that the panel hadn't received.

The defense was willing to enter a plea of guilty to first-degree murder with the understanding that Sirhan would receive a life sentence, an arrangement to which the prosecution had agreed, feeling they might have a hard time convincing the jury that the defendant deserved to die for his crime.

Rejected by Judge

Judge Walker, however, rejected the bargain.

When Stitzel was asked what penalty he would have favored if he had known this, he replied: "I honestly don't know."

That was the same reaction of Bruce D. Elliott, a systems analyst and the jury foreman. "I'd have to give that some thought," he said.

Asked if he felt that the verdicts represented the jurors' wish to express the conscience and mood of the community, Elliott said no, the verdicts simply represented each juror's convictions.

Did the current issue of law and order represent any part of his thinking in coming to a decision? A little bit, he said, but not to a significant degree.

Cites Circumstances

Another juror, Gilbert Grace, a city Water and Power Department employee, said "the victim could have been anyone" and the verdict would have been the same. "It was just the circumstances of the crime," he said.

Benjamin Glick, retail clothier and the only Jew on the panel hearing the case of the Arab defendant, said he feels the verdict "expresses my opinion for American justice."

Albert N. Frederico, a plumber, made no secret of his feelings about the psychiatric testimony.

"All those psychiatrists—they really had us all stirred up," he said. "It was confusing. It stunk!"

When the jurors returned to the Biltmore after handing down this verdict, they were greeted

at the entrance by applause from some of the spectators assembled there.

Like a Party

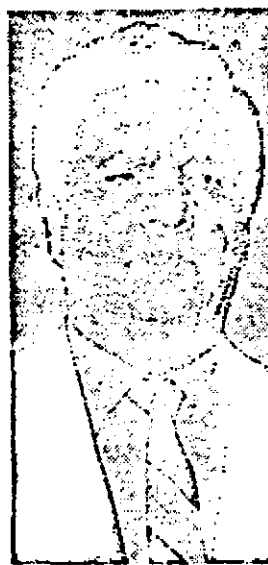
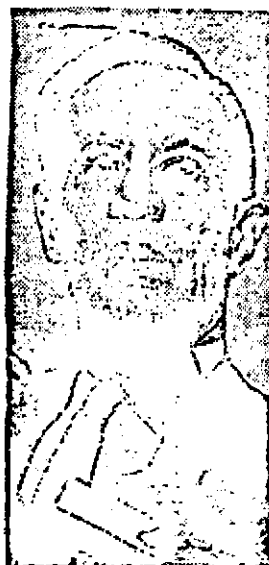
Once in their sixth-floor rooms, they sent for bag-lunches and said farewells in an atmosphere not unlike that of a party.

Laughter was heard in the corridor. Each juror had received a photo of the panel seated in the jury box, and many of them went from room to room getting their pictures autographed.

Judge Walker showed up and chatted with the group.

But as they departed the place that had been their home since mid-February, the mood of most of the jurors grew serious and reflective.

"We felt we should stand behind our laws," said Stitzel. "There seems to be a tendency in some areas not to do this."



JURORS — George Stitzel, left, said most of the Sirhan jury favored death penalty from the start and Gilbert Grace said the identity of the victim of the murder was not a factor in the deliberations.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Conduct Called Factor by Prosecutor

BY RON EINSTOSS
Times Staff Writer

Sirhan B. Sirhan's own conduct during his trial, as much as the enormity of his crime, may have been the decisive factor which led the jury to return a death penalty verdict.

That was the opinion Wednesday of Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton, who headed the three-man team which prosecuted the 25-year-old Palestinian Arab.

Asked following the return of the verdict whether anything at the trial might have given him reason to believe a death penalty verdict would be returned, Compton said:

"I don't believe the defendant's conduct was such as to evoke sympathy or endear him to the jury."

Compton obviously based his evaluation on the fact that in death

penalty cases jurors often are swayed as much by the personal actions and testimony of the defendants as they are by the evidence against them.

Compton said he felt the verdict was "proper" and that it expressed the jury's attitude toward "this particular crime."

It also, according to the prosecutor, was the one "the great majority of the American people" who, he said, favor capital punishment would have voted for if they had been sitting on the jury.

In the opinion of Compton, a veteran of many death penalty cases, "the jury's verdict may serve

as a deterrent to others who consider violence to accomplish their ends.

"I hope it is a deterrent . . . I hope it puts people on notice that we simply can't tolerate this kind of action as solution to our political or social problems," he declared.

It was left to Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts, who with Compton and Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard prosecuted Sirhan, to comment on the psychiatric testimony on which the defense relied heavily to save Sirhan's life.

"In this case, to some extent," said Fitts, "it (the testimony) was not as worthy of respect as I

might have anticipated when the trial began."

Howard, a great admirer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, offered no comment following the verdict.

On Monday in his argument to the jury, Howard had asked that the jurors have "the courage to write the end to this trial and to apply the only proper penalty for political assassination in the United States of America."

Compton, asked to speculate on whether Sirhan would ever be executed, said that based on "the pattern of these things" in recent years, "I don't think it would be in the very near future."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-24

LA Times
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-24-69
Edition: Home
Author: Ron Einstoss
Editor: Nick B. Willie
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-71-798

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

1cc
Bureau

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Sentenced to Death; Impassive as Verdict Is Read

Decision Comes After 12 Hours of Deliberations

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan was sentenced Wednesday to death in the gas chamber for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

The 25-year-old Palestinian's face was ashen but impassive as he heard the death verdict. Moments later he told his visibly shaken defense attorney, Grant B. Cooper, "Don't be concerned. Even Jesus Christ couldn't have saved me."

Appeal of a death sentence is automatic in California and Sirhan's defense said it will stay with his case through the appeal.

The seven-man, five-woman jury signaled it had reached a verdict at 11:04 a.m., after 12 hours' deliberation since the penalty phase of the murder trial began at noon Monday.

Three sharp buzzes from the ninth floor deliberation room to Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker's eighth floor courtroom set off a flurry of activity among the more than 50 reporters who maintained a vigil in the quiet courtroom.

Mother Waited at Home

Adel Sirhan, 30, quietly took his seat and awaited the jury. His mother, Mary, 56, and youngest brother, Munir, 21, were not in court. They awaited the verdict, Adel said, by the television set in their small Pasadena home.

The somber jury entered the court at 11:34 a.m. and were asked by Judge Walker, "Ladies and gentlemen of the jury, you have a verdict?"

"We have, your honor," said foreman Bruce D. Elliott.

He handed the verdict to bailiff Willard Polhemus, who passed it to Judge Walker.

The 69-year-old jurist, presiding over his final and most celebrated case before retiring in July, scanned the verdict and handed it to court clerk Alice Nishikawa, who read aloud:

"The People versus Sirhan Bishara Sirhan. We, the jury in the above-entitled action, having found the defendant Sirhan Bishara Sirhan guilty of murder in the first degree as charged . . . how fix the penalty at death."

Is This Your Verdict?

She paused, then continued, "Is this your verdict, ladies and gentlemen of the jury? So say you one, so say you all?"

The jury unanimously spoke its assent. Polled individually, each juror replied firmly, "Yes."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 LA Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4-24-69

Edition: Home

Author: Dave Smith

Editor: Nick B. Williams

Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-797

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
4-24-69

Sirhan, chewing gum, as he had last Thursday when the first-degree murder verdict was returned, paled as he listened to the jurors affirm their belief that he should die for the assassination of the New York senator.

Less than five minutes before, he had entered the courtroom trailing smoke from one last puff on a

cigaret and smiling boyishly at codefense counsel Russell E. Parsons.

Others were more visibly affected by the verdict.

Cooper, 66, who has never had a death verdict returned against one of his clients before Wednesday, appeared on the verge of tears. His eyes reddened and his jaw muscles twitched as he gave notice in a husky voice of a motion for a new trial.

Judge Walker set a hearing on Cooper's motion for May 14.

Adel Sirhan, almost unnoticed in the second row of the courtroom, gave a tight smile as reporters reached out to pat his arm. Eyes glistening with tears, he merely smiled and said nothing.

It was all over in 5 minutes. At 11:39 a.m., court was adjourned and Sirhan led away to his 13th-floor cell, where he has been confined since his arrest last June 5.

Automatic Appeal

Cooper, asked if he would pursue an appeal, said, "Now I've got to go forward with it. I can't ignore him now that there's a death penalty—even if I have to spend money out of my own pocket."

Cooper and Parsons both represented Sirhan without fee.

Cooper said the death verdict, "of course, is a great personal disappointment for me. I believed in our defense and I believe he should not be executed. I feel very bad."

Asked if he expected international repercussions as a result of the death verdict, Cooper said he did not, except perhaps for some individual reaction in some Arab countries.

The three-man prosecution team expressed satisfaction with the verdict.

Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton told newsmen: "We feel it was the proper verdict. It expresses the feelings of the jury and their attitude toward this type of crime."

In final argument for the prosecution, Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard argued — without saying "death penalty" in so many words—that the jury should return "the only proper verdict for political assassination in the United States of America."

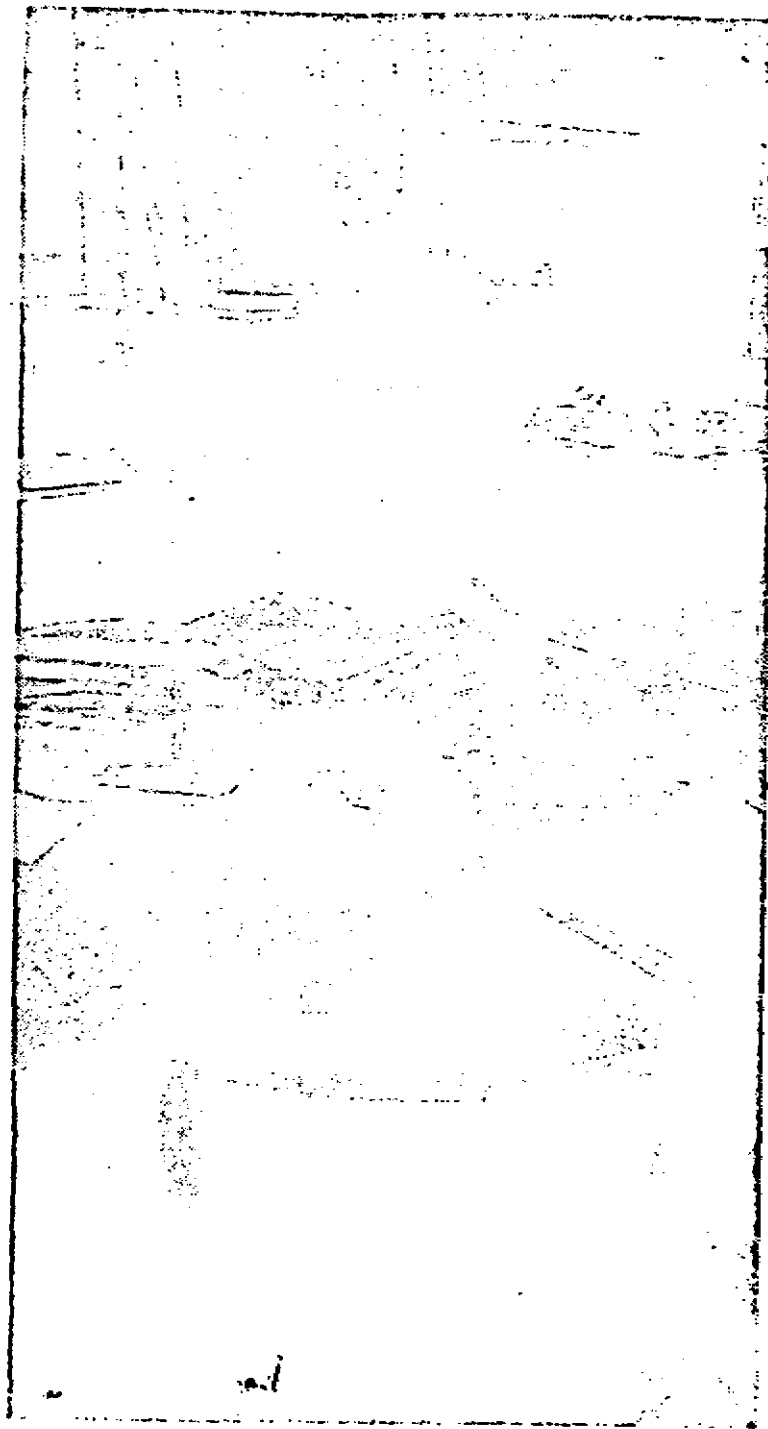
Sirhan's apparent inattention, occasional outbursts of temper and his often-profane, violently anti-Zionist testimony from the witness stand "was not such as to invoke sympathy or endear him to the jury," Compton said.

Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts said he did not believe, and would not

wish, that the death verdict represents repudiation of psychological and psychiatric testimony as such.

But the expert testimony offered by the defense in this case, he said, "was not as worthy as expected." He said he "would hope that such testimony would be more worthy in future cases."

Sirhan's death sentence could be reduced to life imprisonment at the discretion of Judge Walker. The California Supreme Court, while not empowered to reduce the sentence itself from death to life, could, however, reduce the conviction from first-degree to second-degree murder, which could then carry a life sentence.



IT'S ALL OVER — Judge Herbert V. Walker, returning to the bench for a few moments after end of long Sirhan trial, looks toward the empty chair, foreground, where the defendant had sat.
Times photo by [illegible]



SILENT — Abdel Sirhan, 30, had nothing to say to newsmen after brother was sentenced.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

WOUNDED AT HOTEL**Hoped Sirhan Would
Get Life, Youth Says****BY ERIC MALNIC***Times Staff Writer*

"Death is too good for him," Ira Goldstein said.

"It would be better for him to stay in jail for good and know why he's there."

Goldstein, 20, was one of five bystanders wounded when Sirhan B. Sirhan opened fire in a pantry corridor at the Ambassador last June 4, fatally wounding Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

"I expected it," he said when asked his reaction to the jury's decision Wednesday that Sirhan must die.

"But to tell the truth, I am against it," he added, explaining that in addition to favoring a lifetime of contemplation, he is philosophically opposed to the death sentence.

William Weisel, 31, another of those wounded, is not.

"I think the death penalty serves as a deterrent," Weisel, an American Broadcasting Co. news director in Washington, D.C., told The Times in a telephone interview. "Some others who might have had ideas about shooting peo-

ple will look at this as a lesson . . .

"I have nothing personal against Sirhan, but he took someone's life. . .

"I think the trial brought out that the shooting was premeditated, and in a case like that, I think the death penalty is the proper penalty."

Weisel received a deep flesh wound in the abdomen when Sirhan opened fire. Goldstein, an electronics company employee who lives at 4077 Hayvenhurst Ave., Encino, was struck in the hip.

Mrs. Arthur W. Evans, 43, of Saugus, who declined comment Wednesday because she has a legal suit pending against Sirhan, received a scalp wound.

Paul Schrade, 44, West Coast regional director of the United Auto Workers, had a deep scalp wound and a depressed skull fracture. Irwin Stroll, 27, 6083 Horner St., had a flesh wound in the lower left leg. Neither was available for comment Wednesday.

In addition to being convicted of first-degree murder in the death of Sen. Kennedy, Sirhan was found guilty of assaulting the five with intent to commit murder. All five returned to active life after hospitalization for their wounds.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

**I-26 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Cal**

Date: 4-24-69
Edition: Home
Author: Eric Malnic
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED

APR 24 1969

FBI - LOS ANGELES

1 C.C. to Rev.

56-156-21-726

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Elder Sirhan— Lays Penalty to 'Mad' U.S.

TAIYEBEH, Occupied Jordan (M)—Bishara Sirhan, father of the convicted assassin of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, said Wednesday that "mad America" had sentenced his son to death.

"I am very sad, I am very sorry—but I expected it," he told The Associated Press.

"My son will never ask for mercy . . . He will go to his death proudly."

He added: "If my son will be killed, he will not be the last. There are 100 million Arabs."

Sirhan's father, who left his family in the United States in 1961 and returned here, had sworn revenge on American politicians after his son's conviction.

"My son did well," he said at that time, adding that Kennedy was to blame for his own death.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-28 LA Times
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-24-69
Edition: Home
Author:
Editor: Nick B. Will
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angel
☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 APR 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

1. C.C. to Bu.

56-156-2-79

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SIRHAN JURORS AT STANDSTILL

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Jurors in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial, at an impasse at ballots. Law requires that they pass over their decision as to a life or death — life or death penalty for the convicted murderer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, return this morning to continue their deliberations.

The jury of seven men and five women, after deliberating 21½ hours, quit yesterday at 3:44 p.m.

At that point, they had debated the young Arab's fate for eight hours and 44 minutes in two days.

Court attaches pool-pooled speculation late yesterday that the jury was deadlocked. There is, they averred, no set of standards by which to judge a murder jury.

But the strain of the long deliberation showed on their faces as it did on the faces of the jurors who were bundled into a barred sheriff's department bus at 4 p.m. for the trip to the Billmore Hotel where they are quartered.

Grant B. Cooper, chief defense counsel, was clearly disturbed. He told newsmen:

"It is obvious there are people on the jury who are demanding that Sirhan get the death penalty. Whether they are in a minority or a majority, I have no idea."

Equally disturbed was Adel Sirhan, the defendant's 30-year-old brother. Only member of the family to wait out the jury in the grim, armor-plated eighth-floor Hall of Justice courtroom, the nattily dressed Arab immigrant said:

"I have run out of patience."

The jurors were scheduled to return about 8 a.m. today. It is believed they have taken several ballots. Law requires that they be unanimous. There is no majority rule in the decision as to whether a man convicted of first-degree murder shall live out his life in prison or die in the gas chamber.

Should the jurors be unable to agree, the procedure would be as follows:

Judge Walker would have to summon them into court to inquire of them how the matter stood. This could involve a poll of the 12 as to their position on life or death.

If he determined the jury to be hopelessly deadlocked he could then:

• Ordain a life sentence for Sirhan.

• Call for a new penalty jury, which would have to hear the arguments in the case in reprise.

• Enter into an agreement with defense and prosecution lawyers by which they left the issue of penalty up to him.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif

Date: 4-23-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodeno
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
1 APR 24 1969
FBI — LOS ANGELES

1 C.C. to Rev

56-156-31-744

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

JURORS STILL-OUT IN SIRHAN CASE

The jury in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial recessed for the night Tuesday without reaching a verdict on whether the defendant should be sentenced to death or life imprisonment for the slaying of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

The panel has now deliberated 9 hours since getting the case Monday.

Three short buzzes from the ninth-floor jury room to the eighth-floor court of Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker is the signal that will indicate a verdict has been reached.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-3 LA Times
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-23-69
Edition: Home
Author:
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

44-156-1723

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

1 C.C. to Rev

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Jury Deliberating Penalty for Sirhan

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

The jury in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial retired Monday to decide whether Sirhan should live or die for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

They were locked up after 2½ hours' deliberation without reaching a verdict.

Among the last words they heard before they were given the case was a quotation from Kennedy's own plea after Martin Luther King was murdered that Americans dedicate themselves "to tame the savageness of man to make gentle the life of this world."

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper urged the jury, "as a kind of posthumous tribute to Sen. Kennedy," to spare Sirhan's life.

Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard, citing 10 months of special precaution to insure a fair trial for Sirhan, told the jury that now that he has been convicted of first-degree murder, "he has no special claim to further preservation."

Without asking for a death verdict in so many words, Howard made it clear that was what the prosecution sought as he urged the jury "that each of you in your hearts have the courage of your convictions, the courage to write the end to this trial and to apply the only proper penalty for political assassination in the United States of America."

Final Plea

In a quiet, final plea for mercy for Kennedy's murderer, Cooper read from Kennedy's own statements of April 5—one day after King's death, and exactly two months before he himself was fatally shot.

Cooper told the jury that Kennedy told a crowd in Cleveland:

"Whenever any American's life is taken by another American unnecessarily—whether it is done in the name of the law or in the defiance of law, by one man or a gang, in cold blood or in passion, in an attack of violence or in response to violence . . . the whole nation is degraded . . ."

"We must recognize that this short life can neither be ennobled nor enriched by hatred or revenge. Our lives on this planet are too short and the work to be done too great to let this spirit flourish any longer in our land . . ."

Cooper said that he believed that if Kennedy himself had been in the courtroom Monday, he would have asked the jury to spare Sirhan's life.

In a dramatic closing moment, Cooper turned to face the tiny Palestinian Arab, who sat chewing gum, his eyes large and somber, and told him:

"And now, Sirhan Sirhan, I've done all the best that I could do for you."

Shifting his gaze to Mrs. Mary Sirhan, 56, in the second row of the courtroom, Cooper said, "Mary Sirhan, I now entrust the life of your son to this American jury. And, Mary Sirhan, may your prayers be answered."

Mrs. Sirhan was the only defense witness in the penalty phase of the trial. Cooper called her to the stand and asked just one question: "In his entire life before the shooting, has Sirhan ever been in trouble with the law?"

Solemn Answer

Mrs. Sirhan answered in a solemn voice: "He has never been. And that is not from me and not from him. This is because I raise him up under the law of God and in His Love."

Cooper stressed repeatedly that while the law prescribes either death or life imprisonment for first-degree murder, the law states no preference.

If Kennedy's life must be avenged, Cooper suggested, Sirhan's conviction and a sentence of life imprisonment is vengeance enough.

To execute Sirhan cannot bring Kennedy back, Cooper said, but to sentence Sirhan to life in the California Medical Facility at Vacaville would enable penologists and psychiatrists to study the defendant, to see "what more can be learned about the human mind, and what makes people want to kill."

Such a study, Cooper said, could help prevent further such crimes as Sirhan's.

Cooper's plea followed an impassioned plea for mercy by defense attorney Russell E. Parsons, who told the jurors that a verdict of death would be, in effect, telling the world that justice isn't possible in America.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 LA Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4-22-69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-722

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 23 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
4-23-69

Hint of Hitlerism

"This man is sick," said Parsons, "and I don't believe we've got down to the bottom rung yet, where we execute sick people in California." To do so, he said, would be "to follow Hitler, who believed in killing the lame, the halt and the sick."

Howard, in a brief argument, told the jury:

"Mitigation of political assassination to any degree must sooner or later spell an end to the traditional democratic election process we now enjoy."

Howard conceded that Sirhan is mentally ill and said, "We have never disputed that Sirhan Bishara Sirhan is abnormal—only the extent of his abnormality, and its legal significance, if any."

But, said Howard:

"You should be reminded that Sirhan Bishara Sirhan reached this shore at the indulgence of a nation which takes pride in providing refuge to the oppressed. There may well be a substantial number in this courtroom who need look no farther back than one generation to find themselves strangers in a new society which offered greater opportunity for the individual to achieve success within the limits

of his capacities. For this smile when he declared defendant, that was not from the witness stand, I don't know who shot Sen. Kennedy."

"History may well record that but for this defendant, Sen. Kennedy might have succeeded to the highest honor and responsibility which the American democratic process can bestow."

Linked to Politics

"Beyond doubt, the tragedy which occurred in the early morning hours of June 5, 1968, at the Ambassador Hotel was politically motivated. The question now to be resolved is the proper penalty for political assassination in the United States of America."

Howard reminded the jurors they had been asked to consider what 200 such assassinations might do to the country, then added: "A half-dozen would suffice to leave this country bereft of democratically endorsed leadership."

Sirhan has shown no remorse, Howard said, adding, "Perhaps you observed his reaction when attorney Russell Parsons, in his address to you, urged in all sincerity that America pray for the ill-starred Kennedy family." (Sirhan smiled and covered his mouth.) You could not have failed to observe the defendant's

Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker, in 15 minutes of legal instruction to the jury, told them that the law in this penalty phase of the trial "doesn't forbid you to be influenced by sympathy or pity for the defendant," but that it does forbid "unreasoned conjecture" in their verdict.

Judge Walker also told the jury that they may not consider the possibility of Sirhan's eventual parole in deciding whether a life sentence might be sufficient penalty.

The California Adult Authority determines whether and when a person convicted of first-degree murder is eligible for parole. He could be eligible after seven years.

In Sirhan's case, however, he was also convicted on five counts of assault with a deadly weapon with intent to commit murder. Each count carries a sentence of one to 15 years.

Though these terms would run concurrently with a life sentence, they would be a strong mitigating factor should the Adult Authority ever decide to consider a parole for Sirhan.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

COOPER IN IMPASSIONED PLEA FOR LIFE OF SIRHAN

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Faced with a decision defense counsel has told them "should be God's alone," Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's murder trial jury returns to its deliberations today — the life or death of the convicted murderer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy hanging in the balance.

At issue, according to Chief Defense Counsel, Grant E. Cooper, is:

"Should Sirhan Sirhan spend the rest of his natural life behind the bars of a penitentiary, or shall he forfeit his life by inhaling the deadly fumes of cyanide gas?"

Cooper, in an impassioned plea for his client's life, told the jury yesterday:

"You are gathered to determine the ultimate issue, an issue that should be God's alone."

"These are your alternatives — life imprisonment, or death in the grim green room of San Quentin."

Aligned against Cooper's plea was the understated admonition of Dept. Dist. Atty. John Howard:

"Sirhan was entitled to the fair trial which each of you have now given him. He has no special claim to further preservation."

"... I would ask that each of you within your hearts have the courage of your convictions... and apply the only proper penalty for political assassination in the United States."

In two hours and 35 minutes of deliberation yesterday the 12 jurors were apparently unable to resolve the momentous decision they must make.

Arguments and legal advice concluded at 11:49 a.m. yesterday. The jury lunched under heavy guard at the Baltimore Hotel and then returned to the

Hall of Justice to begin deliberations alone at 1:25 p.m.

The jurors, asked for nothing — nor did they seek any further advice from Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding over the trial, during their afternoon session.

At 3:30 p.m. Sheriff's Inspector William Conroy told waiting newsmen the jurors were retiring for the night.

He disclosed that they had chosen Dr. Bruce D. Elliott as their foreman. Dr. Elliott, TRW Systems programmer, an emigrant from the Middle West, also presided over the jury when it found Sirhan guilty of first-degree murder in the June 5, 1968, Ambassador Hotel shooting of Sen. Kennedy.

At that time the jury had a number of choices ranging from first-degree murder through manslaughter to an acquittal — which no one sought.

Now it has only two — life and death. Should it be unable to agree on either, the choice could be left to Judge Walker. State and defendant alike could choose him to select the penalty.

Sirhan awaits his fate in the isolation cell on the Hall of Justice's 13th floor, where he has been confined for the past 10 months.

He sat there yesterday, clad only in underwear staring at the barred door of his cell and the armor plate which covers its windows. He had no visitors and spoke only briefly to the squad of sheriff's deputies who keep him under constant surveillance.

His only relative in the heavily guarded courtroom was his brother, Adel.

Another brother, Munir, 31, had taken his mother. Mrs. Mary Sirhan, home.

Yesterday morning, the 33-year-old Arabian woman was the only witness called by either side to testify on the issue of penalty. She told the jury of seven men and five women:

"He has never been (in trouble with the law). That is not from him or from me. That is because I raised him up in the law of God and His love."

Then, in a trice, she was out of the witness box, seated a few feet from Sirhan as Howard opened his argument saying:

"Sen. Robert F. Kennedy was struck down at a moment when he represented the ideals and hopes of a substantial segment of this nation."

"History may well record Sen. Kennedy might have succeeded to the highest honor and responsibility which the Americans, in democratic process, can bestow."

"The question now to be resolved is the proper penalty for political assassination in the United States of America."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4-22-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156 2-791

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 23 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau 4-23-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Jury Deliberating Penalty for Sirhan

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

The jury in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial retired Monday to decide whether Sirhan should live or die for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

They were locked up after 2 1/2 hours' deliberation without reaching a verdict.

Among the last words they heard before they were given the case was a quotation from Kennedy's own plea after Martin Luther King was murdered that Americans dedicate themselves "to tame the savageness of man to make gentle the life of this world."

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper urged the jury, "as a kind of posthumous tribute to Sen. Kennedy," to spare Sirhan's life.

Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard, citing 10 months of special precaution to insure a fair trial for Sirhan, told the jury that now that he has been convicted of first-degree murder, "he has no special claim to further preservation."

Without asking for a death verdict in so many words, Howard made it clear that was what the prosecution sought as he urged the jury "that each of you in your hearts have the courage of your convictions, the courage to write the end to this trial and to apply the only proper penalty for political assassination in the United States of America."

Final Plea

In a quiet, final plea for mercy for Kennedy's murderer, Cooper read from Kennedy's own statements of April 5—one day after King's death, and exactly two months before he himself was fatally shot.

Cooper told the jury that Kennedy told a crowd in Cleveland:

"Whenever any American's life is taken by another American unnecessarily—whether it is done in the name of the law or in the defiance of law, by one man or a gang, in cold blood or in passion, in an attack of violence or in response to violence . . . the whole nation is degraded . . ."

" . . . We must recognize that this short life can neither be ennobled nor enriched by hatred or revenge. Our lives on this planet are too short and the work to be done too great to let this spirit flourish any longer in our land . . ."

Cooper said that he believed that if Kennedy himself had been in the courtroom Monday, he

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 LA Times
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-22-69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-721

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Ben

would have asked the jury to spare Sirhan's life.

In a dramatic closing moment, Cooper turned to face the tiny Palestinian Arab, who sat chewing gum, his eyes large and somber, and told him:

"And now, Sirhan Sirhan, I've done all the best that I could do for you."

Shifting his gaze to Mrs. Mary Sirhan, 56, in the second row of the courtroom, Cooper said, "Mary Sirhan, I now entrust the life of your son to this American jury. And, Mary Sirhan, may your prayers be answered."

Mrs. Sirhan was the only defense witness in the penalty phase of the trial. Cooper called her to the stand and asked just one question: "In his entire life before the shooting, has Sirhan ever been in trouble with the law?"

Solemn Answer

Mrs. Sirhan answered in a solemn voice: "He has never been. And that is not from me and not from him. This is because I raise him up under the law of God and in His Love."

Cooper stressed repeatedly that while the law prescribes either death or life imprisonment for first-degree murder, the law states no preference.

If Kennedy's life must be avenged, Cooper suggested, Sirhan's conviction and a sentence of life imprisonment is vengeance enough.

To execute Sirhan cannot bring Kennedy back, Cooper said, but to sentence Sirhan to life in the California Medical Facility at Vacaville would en-

able penologists and psychiatrists to study the defendant, to see "what more can be learned about the human mind, and what makes people want to kill."

Such a study, Cooper said, could help prevent further such crimes as Sirhan's.

Cooper's plea followed an impassioned plea for mercy by defense attorney Russell E. Parsons, who told the jurors that a verdict of death would be, in effect, telling the world that justice isn't possible in America.

Hint of Hitlerism

"This man is sick," said Parsons, "and I don't believe we've got down to the bottom rung yet, where we execute sick people in California." To do so, he said, would be "to follow Hitler, who believed in killing the lame, the halt and the sick."

Howard, in a brief argument, told the jury:

"Mitigation of political assassination to any degree must sooner or later spell an end to the traditional democratic election process we now enjoy."

Howard conceded that Sirhan is mentally ill and said, "We have never disputed that Sirhan Bishara Sirhan is abnormal—only the extent of his abnormality, and its legal significance, if any."

But, said Howard:

"You should be reminded that Sirhan Bishara Sirhan reached this shore at the indulgence of a nation which takes pride in providing refuge to the oppressed. There may well be a substantial number in this courtroom who need look no farther back than one generation to find themselves strangers in a new society which offered greater opportunity for the individual to achieve success within the limits

of his capacities. For this defendant, that was not enough.

"History may well record that but for this defendant, Sen. Kennedy might have succeeded to the highest honor and responsibility which the American democratic process can bestow.

Linked to Politics

"Beyond doubt, the tragedy which occurred in the early morning hours of June 5, 1963, at the Ambassador Hotel was politically motivated. The question now to be resolved is the proper penalty for political assassination in the United States of America."

Howard reminded the jurors they had been asked to consider what 200 such assassinations might do to the country, then added: "A half-dozen would suffice to leave this country bereft of democratically endorsed leadership."

Sirhan has shown no remorse, Howard said, adding, "Perhaps you observed his reaction when attorney Russell Parsons, in his address to you, urged in all sincerity that America pray for the ill-starred Kennedy family." (Sirhan smiled and covered his mouth.) You could not have failed to observe the defendant's

smile when he declared from the witness stand, "I don't know who shot Sen. Kennedy."

Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker, in 15 minutes of legal instruction to the jury, told them that the law in this penalty phase of the trial "doesn't forbid you to be influenced by sympathy or pity for the defendant," but that it does forbid "unreasoned conjecture" in their verdict.

Judge Walker also told the jury that they may not consider the possibility of Sirhan's eventual parole in deciding whether a life sentence might be sufficient penalty.

The California Adult Authority determines whether and when a person convicted of first-degree murder is eligible for parole. He could be eligible after seven years.

In Sirhan's case, however, he was also convicted on five counts of assault with a deadly weapon with intent to commit murder. Each count carries

ries a sentence of one to 15 years.

Though these terms would run concurrently with a life sentence, they would be a strong mitigating factor should the Adult Authority ever decide to consider a parole for Sirhan.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan's Penalty Hearing On Today

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald Examiner Staff Writer

"If at the end of this trial, you thought it was a proper case, would you be willing to come down from the jury room, look this defendant in the eye and say:

"Sirhan Sirhan, for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy you die in the gas chamber?"

This question, asked of each juror in the Sirhan murder trial, is no longer theoretical.

Today 12 jurors gather in the eight-floor, armor-plated Hall of Justice courtroom, where they decreed a first degree murder verdict for the young Arab last week, to hear from Dep. Dist. Atty. John Howard why, if at all, Sirhan should die.

Defense attorneys in the case believe that Howard will "urge the death penalty without actually asking for it," according to Grant B. Cooper.

As the prosecution views penalty in the case of the convicted murderer, in deciding if the jury must set national social and judicial policy.

Acting Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton has said that it will be up to the jury to set a precedent in how political assassins are to be punished in this country. There are no cases to guide them, Compton points out.

Compton is a firm believer in the death penalty per se. He terms it an "integral part of the graduated scale of punishment provided for in this state."

He is active in attempts to defeat a California Bar Association resolution calling for its abolition.

California Law leaves the penalty up to the jury and gives it no guidelines. It is a matter for the "untrammeled discretion" of the seven men and five women jurors, according to the law.

Howard says he will point this out strongly to the jurors. He says he will also bear down heavily on Sirhan's "lack of remorse" for his June 5, 1968 Ambassador Hotel fatal shooting of the New York senator.

Mercy. Sirhan's admittedly unpaired mental capacity and what defense lawyers believe in

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-2 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-21-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-71-787

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

be justice in the case will be advanced as reasons why he should not die, but go to prison for life.

There is an outside chance the defendant's mother, Mrs. Mary Sirhan, 55, may take the witness box to plead for her son's life, according to defense co-counsel Russell E. Parsons.

Cooper was turned down by Judge Herbert V. Walker last week when he sought permission to call a battery of other witnesses including Dist. Atty. Evelle J. Younger and former San Quentin Warden Clinton Duffy. Younger reportedly once was ready to agree to a deal by which Sirhan would plead guilty in return for a life sentence. Duffy is an outspoken foe of capital punishment.

Judicial order in a penalty trial calls for the prosecution to present its case first. Howard

will open the trial today. He says he will address the jury, but call no witnesses.

The evidence and argument phase of the penalty trial is expected to be short — no more than two days.

Decision time in the trial may take much longer. It took the Sirhan jury 16 hours and 42 minutes deliberation, spread over four days to find the 25-year-old Palestinian immigrant guilty of first degree murder.

Decision as to whether he shall live or die could take hours or weeks.

Since reaching their verdict Thursday morning, Sirhan's jurors have been locked up under heavy guard in the Biltmore Hotel. Their wives and husbands were permitted to visit them this weekend as they have been each weekend since the jury was sequestered.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

'IS THIS YOUR VERDICT, SO SAY YE ALL?'—'YES'

Ten months and 10 days of tension climaxed in 31 minutes of pronouncement yesterday for Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, murderer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

The case of Sirhan, pro and con, was presented in 15 weeks of trial in Los Angeles' Hall of Justice. His jury deliberated 16 hours and 42 minutes.

At 10:45 a.m. yesterday, Capt. Craig Carpenter of the Los Angeles Sheriff's Department, told Sirhan, who sat idly in his cell: "I think you may have a verdict."

At 11:19 a.m. he did.

Returning to the courtroom at 11:11 a.m., the jurors were asked by Judge Walker:

"Ladies and gentlemen of the jury, do you have a verdict?"

"Yes, we have, your honor," replied the foreman, Bruce Elliott, handing a thick sheaf of papers to a court attache, who relayed them to the judge.

After Judge Walker had read them, he passed the papers to his clerk, Mrs. Alice Nishikawa, whose voice reflected nervousness as she read:

"We the jury in the above entitled action find the defendant Sirhan Bishara Sirhan guilty of murder, in violation of Section 187, Penal Code, a felony, as charged in Count One of the indictment. We further find it to be murder in the first degree."

Continuing, Mrs. Nishikawa asked, "Is this your verdict, ladies and gentlemen, so say ye one, so say ye all?" to which the jurors' unison reply was:

"Yes."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-7 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/12/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenc
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angel

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-788

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Ben

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Father, Arabs Call Sirhan Hero-Martyr

JERUSALEM (UPI)—Sirhan Bishara Sirhan said Thursday night he was even more adamant than ever before that his son had "committed an act of political courage and even of necessity" in his shooting of Robert F. Kennedy.

It was shortly after 9 p.m. when the elder Sirhan received the news that a Los Angeles jury had found his son guilty of first-degree murder in the death of Kennedy last June.

Sirhan was in his two-story stone house on the edge of the village of Taibeh, where he has remained throughout the long trial.

Something had to be done "to bring to the attention of the United States people the wrongness of America's support for Israel," Sirhan told newsmen.

Many of the Arab residents of Taibeh and through the occupied West Bank area agreed with Sirhan. The Arabs view the young Jordanian as a hero and a martyr for the Arab and Palestinian cause.

Veteran political observers in Beirut said the conviction of Sirhan was expected to provoke a wave of popular protest in the Arab world.

Although the long trial got little more than routine attention in the Arab press, interest in his case has been sparked recently by the appearance in Arab capitals of posters hailing Sirhan as hero of Palestine.

The well-printed posters in black and red are issued by the Palestine Liberation Organization and show a drawing of Sirhan with the words "I did it for my country."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-7 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/18/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Gooden
Title: Mensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-787

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SIRHAN CASE: SHOOTING TO VERDICT

By MYRNA OLIVER
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

It began at 12:12 a.m. on the morning of June 5, 1968, in a kitchen pantry off the Embassy Room of Los Angeles Ambassador Hotel.

It began to end at 11:19 a.m. on the morning of April 17, 1967, in an armor-plated courtroom on the eighth floor of Los Angeles' Hall of Justice.

In the post-victory hour of the California Presidential Primary election, Sirhan Bishara Sirhan fired a .32 caliber mini-magnum bullet point-blank into the brain of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, D-N.Y., aspirant to the Presidency.

Yesterday a jury of seven men and five women found Sirhan guilty of murder in the first degree, and his prosecutors labeled it emphatically a political assassination.

Sirhan's long legal march toward possible death in San Quentin's gas chamber began at 12:12 a.m. June 5, when he was captured, first by Kennedy supporters such as former Rams football star Robseyvelt Grier and athlete Rafer Johnson, quickly afterward by the Los Angeles Police Department.

He did not give his name. At 7:30 a.m. June 5, "John Doe," later identified by his brothers as Sirhan, was indicted before Municipal Court Judge Joan Dempsey Klein on six counts of assault with a deadly weapon.

In the shooting melee, Sirhan had also injured Paul Schrade, United Auto Workers official; Ira Goldstein, a young Los Angeles newsman; Mrs. Elizabeth Evans, a Democrat campaign worker; Washington newsman William Weisel, and teenager

Senator Kennedy died at 1:20 a.m. June 6 at Good Samaritan Hospital, some 25 hours after he acknowledged his California political victory and was shot down amid echoes of the applause.

Within another day, on June 7, Sirhan was indicted by the Los Angeles Grand Jury for murder. He was further indicted for five counts of assault with a deadly weapon with intent to commit murder.

The diminutive Arab defendant, insisting he could not remember the incident which prompted his incarceration, was arraigned for the charges June 8 in an improvised courtroom in the jail chapel at the New County Jail.

Protected by the kid-gloved mail-list of Los Angeles County Sheriff's Department, Sirhan was moved immediately to his isolated cell on the Hall of Justice's 13th floor near two courtrooms where his future would be decided.

The heavily guarded cell and surrounding hallways have no windows. Now pallid, Sirhan has not seen the sun since transfer to his chamber of protection.

Attorney Russell E. Parsons, veteran trial lawyer, assumed Sirhan's defense from the public defender and immediately moved to seek:

Discovery, a legal proceeding, by which the defense had access to statements of all prosecution witnesses. Judge Herbert V. Walker, who was to play the final legal role of his career in Sirhan's Department 107 courtroom, granted the request.

Suppression of Sirhan's disability from the evidence, on the grounds they had been taken by der. Prosecution and defense rested jointly April 8, after 90 wit-

Sirhan's day in court began Jan. 7, with his defense attorneys—Parsons, Grant B. Cooper and Emile Zola Berman—moving to throw out his indictment on the grounds his grand jury was not a representative cross section of the population. The maneuver fell flat.

His jury of eight men and four women was impaneled Jan. 24. Six alternates, two of whom were to replace ailing and bereaved members on the deciding panel, were sworn Feb. 11, and the 18 "men good and true" were sequestered in the Biltmore Hotel, cut off from publicity about the evidence they were to weigh.

Attorneys began their opening statements, for and against the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, Feb. 13, and called their first witness Feb. 14.

Possible mistrial had threatened official opening of the case on Lincoln's Birthday when a Los Angeles morning newspaper published reports of a possible deal in which the defendant could get the promise of a life sentence if he pleaded guilty.

Judge Walker ruled that the trial should proceed.

Fifty-six witnesses after it began, the prosecution rested its case against Sirhan on Feb. 27. Sirhan testified for and against himself March 3-6, admitting he shot Kennedy, but insisting he couldn't remember the shooting or writing threats on the senator's life in his diary.

His defense rested March 27, after calling 39 witnesses, including several psychologists and psychiatrists who testified that Sirhan was mentally ill and of too great a "diminished capacity" to meaningfully and maturely plan or carry out murder.

Prosecution and defense rested jointly April 8, after 90 wit-

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-7 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/10/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Gonder
Title: Fenselt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES

56-156-34-1786

and the personalities leading to the death of the New York senator.

On April 9, the prosecution began its closing argument, spearheaded by Asst. District Attorney David N. Fitts, and on April 10 Parsons, Berman and Cooper answered him.

Chief Deputy District Attorney Lynn D. Compton summed up the case of the people vs. Sirhan Monday, April 14, and Judge Walker instructed the jury in the law under which they were to operate.

At 2:55 p.m. Monday the jury retired to its deliberation room, one floor above Sirhan's courtroom, returning two days later for more instruction from Judge Walker on the relation of diminished capacity to a verdict of second-degree murder.

Yesterday, they found Sirhan guilty of murder in the first degree.

"So say you one, so say you all?" asked the clerk.

"Yes," chanted the solemn jurors.

Sirhan stiffened.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Defense Fights for Sirhan's Life

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer.

Defense and prosecution attorneys in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial girded today to battle for the life of the convicted assassin of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy at a penalty trial set to begin at 9:30 a.m. Monday.

At issue is whether the jury of seven men and five women, who yesterday convicted the young Arab of first-degree murder in the June 3, 1968 shooting of Kennedy, should die in the gas chamber or spend the rest of his life in state's prison.

Chief defense attorney Grant B. Cooper believes that when Dep. Dist. Atty. John Howard begins his arguments in the penalty phase of the first political assassination trial held in this nation since 1902, he will "urge the death penalty without actually asking for it."

The Sirhan jury brought in its verdict yesterday at 11:19 a.m. Strain etched across his face, jury foreman Dr. Bruce Elliott, himself not much older than the 25-year-old convicted murderer.

answered "we have," to Judge Herbert V. Walker's inquiry if the jury had reached its verdict.

At a nod from the bushy-browed jurist, Bailiff William Polhemus took the written verdict from Dr. Elliott and brought it to the bench.

Moments later, in a husky voice, Judge Walker's clerk, Mrs. Alice Nishikawa, turned toward Sirhan and read:

"We the jury find the defendant Sirhan Sirhan guilty of murder in violation of Section 17 of the Penal Code. We find him further to be guilty of murder in the first degree."

She paused, and then, turning across the well of the armor-plated courtroom asked of the

jurors: "So say you one, so say you all?"

The jurors answered in unison, "Yes."

After further verdicts of the murder jury—those finding Sirhan guilty of assault with a deadly weapon with intent to commit murder—Cooper demanded the jury be polled on the murder verdict.

Several of the women jurors could barely utter their affirmative answers to Mrs. Nishikawa's quiet but insistent questioning.

Sirhan was clearly nervous, but it was an edgewise nervousness. The Jordanian killer who had frequently shouted oaths and obscenities across the courtroom during his 13-week trial, was quiet. He whispered frantically for moments to Russell E. Parsons, one of his lawyers, and chief defense investigator Michael McCowan, and then was hustled out of court. Neither Parsons nor McCowan, would discuss what their client said. They described him as "disappointed."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/18/69
Edition: Donald Goodenow
Author:
Editor:
Title:

Character:
or
Classification:
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-775

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bur

All McCowan would say was: "I can tell you this—he didn't cry."

The ink of the Sirhan verdict was barely dry when Cooper and Parsons began their battle to win for him a life sentence instead of a killer's death in San Quentin's gas chamber.

Cooper launched a series of four legal maneuvers, each of which was flatly rejected by Judge Walker.

● First he sought another jury to decide the issue of penalty on the ground that Sirhan's rights had been violated in the choosing of the trial jury.

The judge's answer was, "No."

● Second, in an afternoon court session, he pleaded for permission to subpoena Dist. Atty. Evelle J. Younger and his staff to tell the jury they had once been willing to allow Sirhan to plead guilty without a trial and then see him sent to prison and not executed.

Judge Walker said, "No."

● Third, he demanded that former San Quentin warden Clinton Duffy, an outspoken foe of capital punishment, be allowed to take the witness box to

tell Sirhan's jury that death was not an "efficacious" punishment for murder.

Said Judge Walker, "The law forbids this."

● Finally, at the urging of Sirhan's Arab associate counsel Issa Nakhleh, and admittedly against his better judgment, Cooper asked that witnesses be allowed to come from Washington to tell the jury of the Arab-Israeli conflict, which the defense claims warped Sirhan's mind and drove him to murder Sen. Kennedy.

No, again, answered Judge Walker.

Rejected in his four pleas, Cooper grew cagey as to what his strategy will be when the penalty trial opens.

Prosecution attorneys made it clear that in their opinion, when the jury deliberates Sirhan's fate, it must make a socio-political as well as a legal decision.

Said Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton at a news conference:

"This is a unique case, without precedent. I feel that the jury will express the conscience of the nation and the reaction of the nation to this crime. This is political assassination."

There is also an outside chance Mrs. Mary Sirhan, the killer's mother, may take the witness stand to plead for Sirhan's life.

Adel Sirhan, who visited his brother in his cell yesterday afternoon, refused to speak further. It was explained that the defense was taking no chance of any utterance of the family leaking to the jury.

That jury, too, was in near seclusion—in its sixth floor quarters in downtown Los Angeles' Biltmore Hotel.

Judge Walker dispatched them under heavy guard a few minutes after the verdict was announced. He told them their husbands or wives could visit with them until Sunday evening.

This is the status of the Sirhan case as it stands today:

● The jury must decide the penalty for the young Arab's crime, with "untrammeled discretion" as to a life or death penalty.

● No matter what it decides, Judge Walker has the authority to reduce, but not increase the penalty. He could void any death sentence.

● It will be up to Judge Walker to fix penalties for Sirhan's five convictions on the lesser counts of assault with a deadly weapon with intent to commit murder. California law demands that sentences for these crimes not be added to the murder penalty; if Sirhan gets life he will serve concurrent sentences on the assault counts.

● No matter what the penalty verdict, there probably will be an appeal. Such an appeal is mandatory if death is decreed, and will take more than a year to pursue.

● The defense is convinced that Judge Walker committed "more than one" major judicial error during the trial, which it hopes to take to a higher court.

● Appeals may see changes in the defense staff. Parsons is an appeals specialist. But Cooper, who said he has worked without sure he can afford to continue in the case.

● No matter what the final decision in the Sirhan case—no final penalty will be inflicted for more than a year, according to Cooper.



—Herald-Examiner Photo

SIRHAN'S LAWYERS DISCUSS VERDICT
Russell E. Parsons, left, and Grant B. Cooper

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

The Family: 'We Didn't Expect This'

Stunned silence quickly gave way to tears as the family of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan huddled in its modest Pasadena home and heard of the Arab's conviction for first-degree murder.

Mrs. Mary Sirhan, the assassin's mother, and brothers Adel and Munir, wept when the verdict reached 696 E. Howard St. yesterday.

"We didn't expect this verdict," Adel told reporters.

Other newsmen were met with a firm "no comment" as police arrived at the one-story, wood-frame house and shooed reporters and curious onlookers away.

A police officer stood guard in front of the Sirhan porch.

The front door clicked open and Munir, wearing a blue shirt and dark slacks, headed for a car in the driveway.

"How is your mother?" he was asked. "How is your family?"

"No comment. Absolutely no comment," Munir repeated, somber-faced. He drove a car from the driveway to a place along the curb.

He looked calm, as if the initial storm had passed, and moved back inside the house. A few minutes later he appeared again, and moved a second car from the driveway to the curb.

He only became flustered once when he had difficulty shifting the first car into reverse gear so he could back it out.

He continued to mutter "no comment" through clenched teeth.

After he disappeared for the second time, an officer moved his patrol car into the driveway.

With drapes drawn and window shades pulled, the Sirhans chose to shut out as much of the outside world as possible.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-7 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/10/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: Myrna Oliver
Editor: Donald Goodenough
Title: Kennalt

Character:

or

Classification: 66-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-196-21-784
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED

FBI — LOS ANGELES

cc to Bureau

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Brief Penalty Trial Seen for Sirhan

Jury Hearing on Life or Death to Start Monday

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, who brought his hate from the land of the Bible to a newer world, was convicted Thursday of first-degree murder in the killing of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

The jury will begin deliberation Monday morning on whether he should be sentenced to death or life imprisonment, in a penalty phase expected to end Monday afternoon or Tuesday morning.

The seven-man, five-woman jury signalled its arrival at a verdict at 10:47 a.m.—16 hours and 42 minutes after it began deliberations last Monday.

The tiny Palestinian Arab defendant showed no visible reaction as the verdict was read. He sat forward in his chair, elbows on the counsel table, and stared soberly ahead as he heard the verdict.

Fusillade of Shots

For wounding five other persons in the fusillade of shots that killed Kennedy last June, Sirhan was found guilty on five counts of assault with a deadly weapon with intent to commit murder. Each conviction carries a sentence of one to 14 years.

Sirhan, 25, appeared solemn but nervous as he entered the courtroom trailing a cloud of cigaret smoke. He had a small smile for defense attorney Russell E. Parsons, who clapped him encouragingly on the knee as he sat down.

At 11:09 the jury entered equally solemn, and Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker asked, "Ladies and gentlemen of the jury, you have a verdict?"

"We have, your honor," the foreman murmured.

Foreman Bruce D. Elliott handed the verdicts to Bailiff Willard Polhemus, who passed them to Judge Walker.

The 63-year-old jurist, presiding over his last and most celebrated case before retiring in July, scanned the six verdicts and passed them to

Court Clerk Alice Nishikawa, who read them aloud.

Sirhan's family was not present for the verdict, although most of them were in court every day of the 15-week trial.

A brother, Adel, 30, told The Times Thursday morning—between the time the verdict was reached and the time it was announced—that "I don't think we should show up down there now, do you?"

After the verdict, Adel, his mother, Mary, and brother, Munir, wept as they heard the verdict over their television set in their small Pasadena home.

Verdict Not Expected

"We feel terrible about the verdict," said Adel, his voice wavering. "There is nothing more I can say. We didn't expect this verdict."

After Mrs. Nishikawa finished reading each verdict, she asked the jurors: "Is this your verdict, ladies and gentlemen of the jury? So say you one, so say you all?"

Murmured assent was unanimous for all six verdicts.

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper requested that the jury be polled on the first count—the murder conviction—and as each juror's name was called, the answer was a firm, "Yes."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 L.A. TIMES
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/18/69
Edition: HOME
Author:
Editor: NICK B. WILLIAM
Title: KENSALT

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

7-152-N-713

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 APR 18 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cct to Bureau
4-18-69

Judge Walker then ~~reopened~~ the trial until Monday for the penalty phase and Sirhan, even before the judge could say "Remand the defendant," was out of his chair and striding briskly from the courtroom.

Continued from Page 1
several paces ahead of his security guards.

Cooper, who spoke with Sirhan in a small holding tank moments after adjournment, said "his reaction was one of disappointment." Cooper would not repeat what Sirhan said, but added that disappointment was evident "by the expression on his face."

Cooper, asked his own reaction, told reporters in a news conference later, "Naturally, one is disappointed." But he added:

"I'm not going to quarrel with this jury. They had the case fully and fairly presented to them and I'm not going to quarrel, even though I might disagree with their verdict."

Cooper disclosed that he had already made a motion to impanel a new jury for the penalty phase, but that Judge Walker, in a brief conference at the bench, had denied it.

Gives No Clue

Asked what testimony he would present in the penalty phase to show Sirhan's life should be spared, Cooper said he didn't want to telegraph his punches. But earlier he indicated he would attempt to call Dist. Atty. Evelle J. Younger, Chief Dept. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton and Dep. Dist. Attys. John E. Howard and David N. Fitts to the witness stand to confirm that the prosecution once was willing to accept a plea of guilty with the understanding that Sirhan get life imprisonment.

Cooper later asked Judge Walker, in a brief proceeding Thursday afternoon, to be allowed to call the prosecution to the stand. The judge denied the motion.

The jury has never heard of the agreement, if Judge Walker had permitted Cooper to introduce it, some sources felt it would have been a strong factor in swaying the jury toward a life sentence.

Compton, at the same news conference, said the prosecution was pleased at the verdict and felt "the jury analyzed the evidence and expressed the conscience of the community, the reaction of the community."

System Praised

He said the verdict—and the lengthy trial — "demonstrated to the world that our system does work."

Compton said the prosecution would not specifically urge the jury to impose the death penalty on Sirhan, but said it will "express the arguments for and against the death penalty and let the jury exercise their absolute discretion."

Howard, who will argue for the prosecution in the penalty phase, said he intends to gear his argument to Sirhan's "lack of remorse and to the effect of political assassination on the democratic process."

Sirhan testified from the witness stand that he hated Kennedy because, in his campaign for the Democratic nomination to the U.S. Presidency, he had advocated sending 50 Phantom jet bombers to aid Israel in its conflict with Arab nations.

Sirhan also testified, "I'm not particularly proud, but I'm not sorry, either," about the death of Kennedy.

Not a 'Must'

Asked about the earlier agreement to accept Sirhan's plea of guilty, Compton acknowledged that the bargain struck last February "imposes on us the obligation not to assert that the death penalty is an absolute must."

Both defense and prosecution have said that the penalty phase will probably be brief—possibly only a few hours, or a day or two at the most.

Compton said he didn't feel the jury's verdict necessarily reflected disdain for the defense contention that Sirhan was mentally ill and acting under diminished mental capacity when he shot Kennedy.

"I don't feel that the verdict was a repudiation of psychiatry in general," said Compton. "I just think the objective facts were quite overwhelming evidence of premeditation."

The psychiatric evidence, culled from 10 expert witnesses in three weeks of testimony, could still be a major factor in deliberations on Sirhan's punishment, although it was insufficient to influence the jury from Thursday's first-degree verdict.

The verdict ended what is perhaps one of the least suspenseful yet oddly controversial murder trials in U.S. history.

It was known from last June 5—and admitted by the defense even before the trial—that Sirhan was Kennedy's killer. With that on the record, the only questions to resolve in a public trial were whether Sirhan could be held fully responsible for his actions, and if so, how severely he should be punished.

Early in February, the defense was willing to enter a plea of guilty of first degree murder with the understanding that Sirhan would receive a life sentence.

The prosecution was willing to accept this arrangement, feeling that on the basis of their own psychiatric evidence they might have a hard time convincing the jury that Sirhan really deserved to die for his crime.



Bargain Rejected

But Judge Walker rejected the bargain, ruling that the defense might change the plea if it chose, but must take its chances on the penalty and let the jury decide between life or death. Sirhan was then unwilling, the deal fell through and the trial proceeded.

Irritation at the ensuing length and expense of the trial has been widespread since. Los Angeles County Supervisor Kenneth Hahn, chairman of the Superior Courts Committee, has issued regular press releases on the mounting expense of the Sirhan trial. He says it has now cost the taxpayers more than \$1 million, although that figure is disputed.

The general public, too, has expressed anger at the slow, deliberate trying of a defendant whose slaying of Kennedy is beyond question, even admitted.

Complaint has taken many forms: That the extraordinary security is wasteful; that Sirhan should be summarily gassed; that Judge Walker should have accepted the guilty plea and sentenced Sirhan to life; that the protraction can be laid to the lawyers' or the judge's personal vanity and that the taxpaying public shouldn't have to support Sirhan for the rest of his life.

Special Facilities

On learning that a three-cell unit was being readied for Sirhan at the California Medical Facility in Vacaville, in anticipation that he might get life, one man said with heavy sarcasm, "Yeah, so he can live like a king up there."

Perhaps the best answer to such complaints is Judge Walker's own. He told The Times last month that unresolved mysteries arising from President John F. Kennedy's assassination in Dallas in 1963, and the subsequent killing of Lee Harvey Oswald by Jack Ruby, cost the American taxpayer more than \$5 million in extra investigation and answering the conspiracy theorists. He didn't want that here, Judge Walker said, and so ordered all the facts laid before the public in a hard-fought trial.

The late Judge Preston Battle's acceptance of a guilty plea by Martin Luther King's slayer, James Earl Ray, and continuing speculation about the truth in that case are also seen by some as a strong argument for Judge Walker's logic.

The trial has held many moments of drama.

These centered mostly on the tiny defendant—his weathervane moods, his impassioned anti-Israeli lectures from the witness stand, his little fits of pique and the big rages when he asked to die, and all the smiles and frowns that so rarely matched what was being said in court.

The most chilling single vignette to illustrate the peculiarly off-key quality to Sirhan's responses occurred during defense at-

orney Russell E. Parson's fire-and-brimstone summation, when he said, "There isn't a man in America who shouldn't say prayers for the remainder of the Kennedy family every night."

Sirhan, battling with a mirthful smile throughout the grandfatherly Parson's final plea, clapped his hand over his mouth and doubled over at that, as if barely suppressing a laugh.

Signs of Nerves

The trial didn't always amuse Sirhan. Often he appeared brooding and nervous, chewing at hangnails, locking and unlocking his fingers, darting somber glances around the courtroom. He always sat with his chair drawn close as possible to Parsons, touching the old man, whispering to him interminably.

And there were the temper flareups, in court and out, strangely triggered by impending introduction of the very things most likely to save Sirhan:

—His notebook: a chaotic chronicle of his downward emotional spiral from personal frustration to general hostility to specific murderous hate. The prosecution and the judge were using the notebook "to railroad me into the gas chamber," Sirhan told the judge in one behind-scenes exchange.

Names Scratched

—Defense witnesses: including two girls with whom he was infatuated, who could have testified to the emotional shallowness and superficiality of his dealings with other people. Sirhan angrily scratched their names from a witness list and, in a dramatic open court outburst, tried to fire his attorneys, plead guilty and demand execution. Judge Walker denied the demand and threatened to gag and bind Sirhan if the temper tantrums continued.

—His school grades and intelligence rating: strong.

support for the defense contention that life had shortchanged him from the beginning. Of superior intelligence in some ways, Sirhan couldn't endure hearing that he was deficient in others.

By trial's end, virtually all the reporters who had scrutinized Sirhan daily for 15 weeks were agreed that the little Palestinian refugee was indeed mentally ill. Their only question was the same one plaguing the jury: How sick was he? Sick enough that it mitigated his crime? In short, was he more sick than guilty, or more guilty than sick?

Peculiar to California

The defense has revolved on the contention that Sirhan is both guilty and sick. This is the defense of diminished capacity—a legal doctrine available to the defense only in California.

It is a doctrine that is still being developed since its first application in 1949. In brief, it holds that a person may be found guilty of first degree murder and yet be unable because of mental illness, rage, fear, obsession or intoxication, to maturely and meaningfully premeditate, deliberate and hold malice aforethought.

Whether Sirhan's case fit a . . . where onto this still indeterminate scale of responsibility was a subtle matter of degree for 12 jurors to calculate and agree upon unanimously.

Sirhan was by no means the only person to suffer damage in the long and often acrimonious trial.

His mother, Mary, faithful in attendance until the very end, inspired a curious blend of sympathy and bemused speculation as she sat day after day, eyes fixed straight ahead, a study in stoicism.

Only 5 feet, 11 inches tall, not pretty, with a face careworn well past its 56 years, Mary Sirhan lost her composure only rarely in public.

Occasionally, when testimony lanced a bit too deeply through her formidable emotional barricades, she would cry a little, and one could not help but be moved to see the homely yet somehow appealing face crumple with pain.

She has buried eight of 13 children, been abandoned by her husband, and it has been a wretchedly unhappy life. Who could have imagined it could grow so much worse?

Mother's Strength

But always, just as the tears began, Mary Sirhan would draw herself up short and reiterate her firm, perhaps unyielding, belief that God is on her side and will give her strength.

There is iron in this woman who could say, as she did one morning, "If I did not belong to God, I don't know where I'd be." Perhaps. But no one envies her present position.

Sirhan's brothers, Adel and Munir, one each of whom invariably accompanied their mother to the trial, took a more contemporary but equally stoic view of the proceedings.

Munir, 21, did nine months in jail after a teen-age dalliance with marijuana. "I learned my lesson," he says. But then his favorite older brother killed Kennedy and today Munir looks at the future with a pessimism that could be youth, or maybe something more. "When one falls, we all fall," he says with a wry half-smile.

Adel, 30, a musician and now the only one of five brothers without a police record, is little more optimistic. Reminded once that he has a life ahead of him when the publicity is over, he shrugged and said, "With my name? But maybe so — someplace else."

At least four other persons suffered in varying degrees in the trial of a man they had never heard of before last June. These were two psychologists and two psychiatrists who absorbed a good deal of hard cross-examination.

First was clinical psychologist Martin M. Schorr, who testified for the defense that Sirhan was a paranoid schizophrenic who, in killing Kennedy, was killing the absent father he hated and feared.

Reporters were thrilled with Schorr's vivid, quotable language in describing Sirhan, and they were thrilled anew when they learned it wasn't Schorr's language at all. He had lifted it almost verbatim from a recently-published book because, he confessed, "I wanted a punchy way to spice up my testimony."

Schorr never fully regained his composure once the prosecution tossed the word "plagiarism" into the air. Defense attorney Cooper himself later referred to Schorr as "the little man in the green suit."

Next in Line

The next expert to be blistered was Dr. Bernard L. Diamond, professor of law, psychiatry and criminology at UC Berkeley, possessor of a glittering reputation in the field of psychiatry and the law.

Diamond, testifying for the defense with self-assurance and a dazzling command of psychiatric expertise, also found Sirhan a "mild schizo-

phrenic and said further that he was in a state of self-induced hypnosis — from standing in front of mirrors at the Ambassador—when he shot Kennedy.

In a dramatically written summary, from which he read in court, Diamond admitted that the diagnosis might appear "an absurd and preposterous story, unlikely and incredible." But, he insisted, it was true.

The prosecution seized upon this admission and derided Diamond's testimony and courtroom manner, portraying him as egotistical, omniscient and quick to dismiss the opinions of others.

Even Cooper, in his summation to the jury, conceded that "you might not have liked Dr. Diamond's manner."

Earlier Report Cited

Dr. Seymour Pollack was the chief prosecution psychiatrist. He testified that he found Sirhan mentally ill, but described him merely as "a developing paranoid personality."

When Cooper began cross-examination, it was disclosed to the jury that in an earlier report to the prosecution Pollack had diagnosed Sirhan in more serious sounding language as a "psychotic" and a "borderline schizophrenic."

Cooper also elicited from Pollack the fact that Pollack himself, in the same report, had urged that Sirhan escape the death sentence.

Preconception Angle

Clinical psychologist Leonard Olinger, a part-time instructor at USC's extension division, was the final expert witness. He testified for the prosecution that all previous nine experts—including Pollack for the prosecution—had exaggerated the extent of Sirhan's illness.

Schorr's work particularly, he said, was chiefly the result of Schorr's own preconceived notions about the case and his expectation that he would find major illness in Sirhan.

Cooper, cross examining Olinger, charged him with having preconceptions of his own—particularly because it was on the basis of newspaper accounts of the trial that Olinger phoned the prosecution and offered to counter Schorr's testimony. Cooper said Olinger had solicited his own way into the case uninvited.



FOR THE PROSECUTION — Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton telling newsmen that the Sirhan trial and verdict "demonstrated to the world that our system does work." At the left is one of the other prosecutors, Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts.
Times photo by Fitzgerald Whitley



'DISAPPOINTED'—Grant B. Cooper, chief defense attorney for Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, stands with arms folded in back of room as prosecutors hold news conference after jury returned its verdict. Cooper told newsmen, "Naturally, one is disappointed."

By photo



Sirhan Bishara Sirhan

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Appeal Hinted Regardless of Penalty

Attorney Believes Judicial Errors Were
Made; Verdict Disappoints Defense Team

BY DAVID LARSEN

Times Staff Writer

"Naturally one is disappointed," said Grant B. Cooper, chief defense attorney for Sirhan B. Sirhan. "But I'm not going to quarrel with this jury. They had the case fully and fairly presented to them. They have given it serious consideration and this is their verdict."

The reaction Thursday of defense attorney Russell E. Parsons to the first-degree murder conviction was similar. "I feel very bad about it," he said. "We have a sick man and the psychiatric evidence was overwhelming."

A third defense attorney, Emilie Zola Berman, said: "I am disappointed that our defense of diminished capacity wasn't accepted."

"I just regret that the sciences of psychology and psychiatry are held in such low esteem," he said in New York.

Sirhan 'Disappointed'

The reaction of Sirhan himself was, according to Cooper, one of "disappointment."

Cooper said this was evident "by the expression on his face." But the attorney declined to disclose what his client had actually uttered upon hearing the verdict, calling it a privileged matter.

He added that Sirhan had asked that his statements be kept confidential.

Asked if Sirhan fully realized the import of the outcome, Cooper answered: "Of course."

At a news conference following the verdict, Cooper ranged over several points.

When asked if there had been judicial errors during the lengthy proceedings, he replied that he felt so.

Cooper said that regardless of whether Sirhan gets life imprisonment or the death penalty, there "probably" would be an appeal.

Cooper declined to reveal what arguments he will offer against the death penalty during the penalty phase of the trial, saying he didn't wish to telegraph his punches for the prosecution.

"But obviously we don't consider the death penalty appropriate," he said.

Cooper Tells Timing

Regardless of what the jury decides upon for a penalty, Cooper said, it will be at least a year before the appeal is resolved.

Cooper mentioned a matter that will come before the Court of Appeal today, that of Lincoln High School teacher Sal Castro and 12 other defendants, accused of felony conspiracy for their roles in student walkouts last year.

If the court upholds the defense position that the grand jury was improperly constituted — favoring certain segments of the population — then the Sirhan case would have to be retried, Cooper said.

In response to a question, the attorney said Sirhan has not indicated that he wants any change of lawyers.

Cooper said he had no regrets about the course pursued by the defense.

"I don't know of any other way we could have tried it," he stated. "We did the best we could and we lost. That's all."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-29 L.A. TIMES
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/18/69
Edition: HOME
Author: DAVID LARSEN
Editor: NICK B. WILLIAM
Title: KENSALT

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED

1 APR 13 1969

FBI — LOS ANGELES

cct to Bureau
4-18-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Verdict Was People's Will, Prosecution Says

BY RON EINSTOSS

Times Staff Writer

The circumstances of the murder and the conduct of Sirhan B. Sirhan were the major contributing factors to his conviction of first-degree murder, Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton said Thursday.

Appearing at a press conference several minutes after the verdict, Compton, flanked by his fellow prosecutors, David N. Fitts and John E. Howard, termed the jury's decision "appropriate" and said it "expressed the will of the community."

Asked the penalty the prosecution will seek at that phase of the trial, scheduled to begin Monday, Compton said:

"I don't think it appropriate for me to express what we think would be the appropriate penalty."

He explained that "this is a unique case without precedent" and that it should be left to a jury to decide what should be the "appropriate" penalty for a political assassination.

'An Obligation'

The burly, 47-year-old ex-UCLA football player conceded that the fact that the prosecution early in the trial agreed to accept a penalty of life in prison "imposed on us an obligation not to assert the death penalty as an absolute must."

But he made it plain that Howard, who will deliver the prosecution's argument to the jury, will emphasize those facts which point to one punishment — presumably the death penalty.

Howard, who has been assigned to the case since moments after the shooting, and who has lost 35 pounds since the trial began in January, said the thrust of his summation will be that the killing of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy was a "political assassination" and that the jury must decide what should be the proper punishment for such an act.

He hinted that he will hammer home to the jury what he described as Sirhan's lack of remorse.

He intends to remind the panel that while the electorate went to the polls last June 5 Sirhan went to a pistol range. To be fair, Howard said, he will say all he can in Sirhan's favor, but, he added, "that will be very little."

Fitts, who carried the brunt of the prosecution's presentation in court, remained silent during the press conference, but he said later that he was "relieved" when he heard the verdict.

Psychiatric Testimony

Compton who had asked the jury to disregard the trial testimony of psychiatrists, said he did not think the verdict necessarily was a repudiation of such testimony in general.

Rather, he said, in this case the jury "did not accept the diagnosis of the psychiatrists."

The facts in the Sirhan case, according to Compton, pointed overwhelmingly to a first degree verdict. He said he felt Sirhan's outbursts in the courtroom "probably had very little effect one way or the other" on the jury's decision.

It was his conduct in plotting and carrying out the murder, Compton said, which was instrumental in influencing the jury.

Compton commended both Fitts and Howard, saying "this whole community owes a debt of gratitude to them for the work they performed on this case."

He also complimented the three defense attorneys, for their behavior during the trial.

Compton, Howard and Fitts all have been through death penalty trials before, Compton having obtained seven death verdicts, Fitts four and Howard, who has spent much of his career as a prosecutor handling major fraud cases, one.

However, with all their experience, there has never been a Sirhan case — a political assassination which in itself, as Howard said, affects "our democratic processes." The tension has shown on their faces and in their actions for months.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-29 L.A. TIMES
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/18/69
Edition: HOME
Author: RON EINSTOSS
Editor: NICK B. WILLIAMS
Title: KENSALT

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-781
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
APR 13 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

c to Bureau
4-18-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan's Fate May Not Be Decided for Years

Death Sentence Would Automatically Be Appealed Under Laws of California

Whatever penalty the jury decides for Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, it could be months or even years before his future is really certain.

On Monday, the seven-man, five-woman jury will begin deliberating whether he should be sentenced to death in San Quentin's gas chamber or to life imprisonment.

If they decree death, Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker could, on his own authority, commute the sentence to life imprisonment.

Barring that, appeal of a death sentence is automatic anyway, under California law.

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper estimated Thursday, after the verdict of guilty of first-degree murder in the death of Robert F. Kennedy, that it would be at least one year before Sirhan's appeal—if there is one—would be resolved.

He said he planned to file a notice of appeal on

the verdict, but indicated he did not know whether he would press an appeal immediately.

"Partly," he added, "it depends on whether someone comes up with some money to conduct a defense." Cooper has defended Sirhan thus far without fee.

As to Sirhan's more immediate movements, it has been estimated by both defense and prosecution that the penalty phase starting Monday morning could wind up that same afternoon, or Tuesday at the latest.

Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard says he will sum up the prosecution argument "in 20 minutes." Cooper, arguing for the defense, says he will be "extremely brief." Neither side plans to call witnesses.

Formal sentencing by Judge Walker was expected to be held about three weeks after the jury returns a verdict in the penalty phase.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-31 L.A. TIMES
Los Angeles, California

Date: 4/18/69

Edition: HOME

Author:

Editor: NICK B. WILLIAMS

Title: KENSALT

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-782

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 18 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
4-18-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SIRHAN'S ACT A 'NECESSITY,' FATHER SAYS

JERUSALEM (UPI)

—Bishara Sirhan said Thursday night he was even more adamant than before that his son had "committed an act of political courage and even of necessity" in his shooting of Robert F. Kennedy.

It was shortly after 9 p.m. when the elder Sirhan received the news that a Los Angeles jury had found his son guilty of first-degree murder in the death of Kennedy last June.

Something had to be done "to bring to the attention of the United States people the wrongness of America's support for Israel," Sirhan told newsmen.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-30 L.A. TIMES
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/18/69

Edition: HOME

Author:

Editor: NICK B. WILLIAMS

Title: KENSALT

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED INDEXED

SERIALIZED FILED

APR 13 1969

FBI - LOS ANGELES

cc to Bureau
4-18-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan May Receive Second-Degree Verdict

BY JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's jury could possibly have a verdict of second-degree murder on its mind as it returns to the Hall of Justice for the fourth day of deliberation in the young Arab's trial.

The jury gave first indication of its thinking at mid-afternoon yesterday when it asked Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding over the trial, for additional instructions on a second-degree verdict.

Conviction for second-degree murder carries a penalty of five years to life. A person so convicted is eligible for parole after 20 months. However, Sirhan's attorneys have indicated they doubt if he could ever be paroled.

Specifically, the jury wanted additional advice on the question of impaired mental capacity as it relates to the June 5, 1968, slaying of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy at the Ambassador Hotel.

The jurist told the seven men and five women jurors:

"If you find that the defendant's mental capacity was diminished or reduced to the extent that you have a reasonable doubt whether he did or could maturely and meaningfully premeditate, deliberate and reflect upon the gravity of his contemplated act, or form an intent to kill, you can not convict him of murder in the first degree, but you may find him guilty of murder in the

second degree if you are convinced beyond a reasonable doubt that he had the mental capacity to harbor or entertain malice aforethought."

During the 15-week trial, the defense freely conceded that Sirhan "hated Kennedy and wanted him dead."

Grant B. Cooper, the young Arab's chief defense counsel, seemed encouraged by the turn of events the jury deliberations had taken. He told newsmen in the armor-plated courtroom after the jurors had again retired to their deliberation room:

"It does not hurt us. It indicates at least one of them (the jurors) is thinking of second degree. One juror can ask that question."

This was reference to the law which permits a single juror, or any number of jurors to ask the judge for amplified instructions.

The Sirhan jury has now debated for more than 14 hours. It quit for the day at 3:59 p.m. It was set to reconvene at 8 a.m.

As he awaited the verdict, Russell E. Parsons, another of Sirhan's lawyers, disclosed that the defendant expected to be traded by this government for concessions in the Middle East if he is convicted.

Parsons said that Issa Nakhleh, Palestinian Arab associate counsel in the case, had discussed such a maneuver with King Hussein of Jordan at the United Nations last week. Nakhleh is director general of the unrecognized Palestine Arab delegation to the UN.

Parsons said:

"He saw King Hussein last week at the United Nations. Nakhleh was there to discuss the exchange with him. We worked it out. He hasn't been here for fun you know. He has been here to help us. We have been working it out with Nakhleh. I was going to Jordan first, but then we decided against it."

However, there was no confirmation from any official source that such a course was being considered.

Reached in New York, Nakhleh had this to say:

"There can be no discussion of an exchange... until after the verdict. Talk to me after the verdict."

It was pointed out at the Hall of Justice that the legal complications of such an exchange would be enormous. The United States has no jurisdiction over Sirhan. He is a prisoner of California — a sovereign state. Moreover, it is expected that public reaction to such barter would be swift and extremely adverse.

Furthermore, insofar as is known, there are no important American prisoners held by any Arab state.

Sirhan made a brief appearance in court when the jury returned for instructions. Dressed in rumpled blue shirt and black pants, he seemed extremely tense. He smiled nervously at Parsons when the elderly lawyer explained the legal maneuvers to him.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4-17-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-788

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 APR 18 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
4-18-69

The jurors continue to be calm and agreeable with one another, according to Bailiff William Polhemus. So far they have not asked to have any of the trial transcript read to them.

Their only demands have been for a piece of chalk, a light bulb and a blackboard eraser which they requested yesterday.

Under an agreement approved by the judge yesterday, jurors who desire may be permitted to eat in their rooms at their Biltmore Hotel quarters. The law provides that they be kept together, except when sleeping. However Judge Walker eased the stricture at the jury's request and with the approval of prosecution and defense.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

The jury studying the murder case against Sirhan Bishara Sirhan returned to the courtroom to ask further instructions on a finding of second-degree murder.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-2 LA Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4-17-69
Edition: Home
Author:
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

cc to Bureau
4-17-69

56-156-717

INDEXED
FILED
1 APR 17 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Jurors in Sirhan Case Seek Ruling on Second Degree

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

The jury in Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's murder trial returned to the courtroom Wednesday to ask Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker to clarify his instructions on second-degree murder.

After listening for about five minutes and nodding that they understood, the jurors filed back to the jury room, where they deliberated for another hour without reaching a verdict. At 4 p.m. they were locked up, ending the second full day of deliberation.

Judge Walker re-read his original instruction, but added another interpretation to help clarify it:

"If you find from the evidence that, at the time the defendant shot and killed Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, his mental capacity had been substantially reduced, whether caused by mental illness or intoxication or a combination of mental illness and imbibing of intoxicating beverages, or any other cause, and if you find that to the extent that you have a reasonable doubt whether he did or could maturely and meaningfully premeditate, deliberate and reflect upon the gravity of his contemplated act or form an intent to kill, you cannot convict him of a willful, deliberate or premeditated murder of the first degree, but you may find him guilty of murder in the second degree if you are convinced beyond a reasonable doubt that he had the mental capacity to harbor or entertain malice aforethought."

Speculation Underscored

The jury's question and its lengthening debate underscored speculation that the panel is undecided whether the killing of Kennedy was first- or second-degree murder.

Speculation also arose that speculation itself was premature.

More than 150 exhibits were entered during the 15-week trial, and jurors wishing to appear fair-minded might feel obliged to examine them all, even if they had arrived at a private decision.

Sirhan's controversial notebook alone would require two hours for each of the 12 jurors to read.

Verdicts of acquittal or voluntary manslaughter—both possible under the instructions given the jury by Judge Walker Monday—are considered highly unlikely.

If Sirhan is convicted of first-degree murder, his trial would proceed the next day to a penalty phase, in which he could receive either a death sentence or life imprisonment.

This phase would be short—possibly just a few hours, almost surely not more than a day or two.

After three weeks of psychiatric testimony, attorneys for both sides feel there is little left that could be offered by way of mitigation for Sirhan's crime, and that the jury's decision will depend chiefly on attorneys' final arguments.

Further, the prosecution has already said it will not urge the death penalty.

If Sirhan is convicted of second-degree murder, the court will sentence him to

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 LA Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4-17-69

Edition: Home

Author: Dave Smith

Editor: Nick B. Williams

Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED INDEXED

SERIALIZED FILED

1 APR 17 1969

FBI - LOS ANGELES

cc to Bureau
4-17-69

56-156-N-2786

five years to life in prison, with the exact term to be set later by the California Adult Authority.

Should the jurors find themselves unable to agree on a verdict, a hung jury probably would not result in a retrial of the case. It is considered most likely that Judge Walker would take the case from the jury and, depending on agreement by the defense and prosecution, accept a guilty plea from the defense and simply sentence Sirhan to life imprisonment.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SIRHAN JURY SLOWED

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Tedious review of the more than 200 exhibits today bogged down the deliberations of the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder jury, delaying a verdict in the case of the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Yesterday the jurors began their deliberations at 8:17 a.m. and worked on the case until shortly before 4 p.m. when they were bused back to their heavily guarded quarters in the Biltmore Hotel.

The jurors have the exhibits in the case with them in their fifth-floor Hall of Justice jury room. So far they have not requested the reading of any of the more than 10,000 pages of the trial record.

Their only request, according to Bailiff William Polhemus, was for a piece of chalk and a light bulb.

Polhemus said the jury was surprising to him in its accord. He explained that often during the heat of deliberations jurors have fallings out which result in the formation of intra-jury cliques. No such situation exists in the Sirhan jury, he said.

Russell E. Parsons, one of Sirhan's defense lawyers, forecast that the consideration of exhibits in the case may delay the verdict for several days.

Today is the 51st day of the trial. The jury heard 10 witnesses.

Sirhan does not deny that he shot Kennedy at the Ambassador Hotel June 5, 1968. The essence of his defense is that his mental capacity is so impaired that he could not meaningfully and maturely plot and execute the killing.

For this reason his lawyers hope the jury will find him guilty of second-degree murder, which carries a penalty of five years to life.

Other verdicts available to the seven men and five women of the jury are acquittal, first-degree murder, or manslaughter with its penalty of one to 15 years.

Grant B. Cooper, chief defense counsel, fears a first-degree verdict. If that is the jury's choice it then will have to decide whether Sirhan should be imprisoned for the rest of his life, or be executed in San Quentin's gas chamber.

Judge Herbert V. Walker, who presides over the trial, told the jury that it must not consider the issue of penalty in this stage of its deliberations.

Jury deliberations are, of course, secret. So far the only thing known of the conduct of the 12 is that they elected systems analyst Dr. Bruce Elliott foreman. He is the youngest member of the panel.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4-16-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-785
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED

1 APR 17 1969

FBI - LOS ANGELES

cc to Bureau
4-17-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Jury in Sirhan Case Ends First Day of Study

Buzzer System Arranged to Permit Communication With Judge in Courtroom

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

The jury in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial completed its first full day of deliberation Tuesday.

Meanwhile, a system was set up so the jury can communicate with the courtroom. Three sounds of the buzzer from the ninth-floor jury room to the eighth-floor courtroom will signify the end of deliberation. Two buzzes would indicate that the jury wished to be brought into the courtroom to have portions of testimony read.

The Sheriff's Department is maintaining the tight security procedures that have been followed throughout the 15-week trial. All persons entering the courtroom are still subjected to a thorough search, since all future open sessions involving the jury, however brief, will also require the presence of the defendant.

Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker gave the seven-man, five-woman jury four possible verdicts in his instructions Monday: (1) guilty of first-degree murder, (2) guilty of second-degree murder, (3) guilty of manslaughter or (4) acquitted.

Penalty Not Involved

In this phase of deliberations, the jurors are under orders not to consider any question of what penalty should be imposed on Sirhan for the slaying of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy. At this point, they are to decide only on the question of guilt or innocence.

If Sirhan is convicted of first-degree murder, a penalty phase of the trial will follow, in which the jury must decide between death in the gas chamber or life imprisonment.

Should the jury return a lesser verdict, Sirhan will be sentenced by the court.

The jury elected Bruce D. Elliott, 28, as its foreman late Monday before retiring for the day. Elliott, who has a Ph.D. in electrical engineering, is a systems analyst for TRW Systems. He lives in Redondo Beach.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-3 LA Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4-16-69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. William
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-784
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED

APR 16 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

*c.c. to Bureau
4-16-69*

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Case Goes to Jury 15 Weeks After Start of Trial

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

The case of the People vs. Sirhan Bishara Sirhan went to the jury Monday—15 weeks to the day after the celebrated murder trial began.

After receiving one hour of instruction in the law from Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker, the seven-man, five-woman jury retired at 2:55 p.m. to an upstairs jury room.

There they elected a foreman and began deliberating whether the admitted killer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy is innocent or guilty.

Judge Walker told the jury four possible verdicts could be returned: guilty of first-degree murder, guilty of second-degree murder, guilty of voluntary manslaughter or—a virtual impossibility—acquittal.

The jurors deliberated until 4 p.m., when they were taken to the hotel where they have been sequestered since the trial opened. They will deliberate from about 8 a.m. to 4 p.m. daily, adhering to the shortened court day Judge Walker has been observing because of the need for heavy security whenever the courtroom is open.

The trial reached its end Monday morning with Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton urging the jury to scrap all psychiatric testimony—"throw 'em all out in one big bag"—and decide Sirhan's fate with "plain common sense and good logic."

Compton told the jury it was Charles Dickens who once wrote, "The law is an ass." Compton added, "I think the law became an ass the day it let the psychiatrists get their hands on the law."

He scoffed at defense contentions that Sirhan was a paranoid psychotic and a schizophrenic who suffered dissociative tran-ces. Sirhan, Compton said, was simply "cunning and vicious."

Sirhan, who chewed persistently on a hangnail and listened quietly as Compton spoke, fared better in Compton's summation than did the psychiatric profession.

Compton ridiculed point after point, doctor after doctor, and the lengthy expert testimony which painted Sirhan as too sick mentally to meaningfully premeditate the killing.

Disdains Tests

Referring disdainfully to two batteries of psychological tests given to Sirhan, Compton said:

"I say reject the tests, put 'em out, because it would be a frightening thing if the decision in a case of this magnitude turned on whether Sirhan saw a couple of clowns playing patty cake in an inkblot, or kicking each other in the shins."

If expert testimony could always be believed, Compton told the jury, then cases could be judged without juries at all.

Compton told the jurors he regarded them all as "average people" and urged them not to over-complicate their decision because of the formality of the 3½-month-long trial.

He wanted them, he said, to approach their decision with the same feeling of informality they would feel "in your own living room" and to "just

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 LA Times
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-15-69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

cc to Ben
4/15/69

56-156-783
SEARCHED
SERIAL
INDEXED
FILED
APR 15 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

use the gifts you have and use the processes you use in making everyday decisions in your normal life."

Compton said he, like the defense, wants "the world to know that justice is possible in this country," and added: "The verdict you return—which we urge should be first-degree murder—will be just as just as any other verdict."

Such a verdict carries only two possible penalties—death in the gas chamber or life imprisonment. Compton didn't specify a preference for either.

Compton said the only issue for the jurors to decide was whether Sirhan's defense of diminished capacity to maturely and meaningfully premeditate and carry out his act is a valid one.

Judge Walker opened the morning session by instructing the jury to disregard Compton's previous statements about diminished capacity on Friday.

Judge Walker told the jurors that it is "a doctrine that is being developed" and applies to crimes where specific intent to murder is proven. Compton had referred to diminished capacity in connection with crimes that Judge Walker said were unrelated to this.

Compton said Sirhan himself, in "fencing" on the stand with his cross examiners, provided the clearest evidence that he didn't suffer from diminished mental capacity, but rather showed unusual alertness.

Citing psychiatric testimony that Sirhan's mental illness was one that was causing rapid deteriora-

tion from its beginnings until now, Compton virtually snorted:

"If he was a vegetable on June 5, he should have been a dribbling idiot by the time you saw him on the witness stand."

But he was no such thing, Compton said.

Compton said psychiatrists and psychologists "don't belong here in the courtroom on the issue of guilt or innocence" and added "They can't tell you from showing Sirhan a lot of pictures and inkblots in November, or whenever it was, the kind of mind he had on June 5."

He likened the psychiatric defense to "sort of a double-play combination—Sirhan to Schorr to Diamond" and said this combination "always throws to first base."

Derides Findings

Compton, 47, one-time football player whose crewcut has now turned silver, derided the findings of defense experts—particularly two: clinical psychologist Martin M. Schorr and UC Berkeley psychiatrist Bernard L. Diamond.

He dismissed Schorr perfunctorily, saying, "He gets all hung up on family relationships and father images." He reserved special contempt for the performance of Dr. Diamond.

Compton said a prosecution psychiatrist based his opinions on the testimony of witnesses, but "the ubiquitous Dr. Diamond, the walking lie-detector, the handwriting expert, the gun expert, the psychologist and psychiatrist" implied that all other witnesses either knew nothing or were lying "until (he), Dr. Diamond, descended on the scene."

"He did it with mirrors," Compton said of Diamond's testimony that Sirhan had experimented with self-hypnosis with mirrors and inadvertently put himself into a trance before mirrors at the Ambassador Hotel last June 4,

just before he shot Kennedy.

"I think Dr. Diamond is completely and thoroughly discredited and deserving of no consideration at all," Compton said. Then he added, speaking of the entire psychiatric profession:

"Their whole reason even for being is to find something wrong with someone. And what better way to foist their theories off on the world than in the courtroom?"

Compton said the jury should not be swayed by the fact that it was Kenne-

dy who was shot to death, but added, "On the other hand, you cannot divorce your thinking from the fact that it was Robert F. Kennedy who was murdered because that was why the crime occurred." An ordinary citizen, Compton said, would not have incurred Sirhan's hatred.

Compton concluded:

"The psychiatrists say that if you hate a man and kill him, you are mature and responsible, but if you hate him a lot, you are not mature and not responsible. Ladies and gentlemen, we ask you: Don't put a premium on hate."

One juror was replaced Monday, after juror Ronald G. Evans of Ingle-

wood was excused because of the death of his father. The replacement was

George A. Stitzel, a press-room foreman for The Times.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Jury Deliberates The Fate of Sirhan

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald Examiner Staff Writer

Jurors in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial returned to court this morning to continue their deliberation of the fate of the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

The jury of seven men and five women retired yesterday at 2:34 p.m. following an hour and 20-minute instruction by Superior Court Judge Herbert V. Walker, who presides over the trial of the man accused of the June 5, 1968, Ambassador Hotel slaying of the New York Senator and presidential aspirant.

The jury met for one hour and six minutes, then was sent to its hotel. Deliberations resumed shortly after 8 o'clock this morning.

Walker's instructions followed the summation for the state given by Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton. He urged the jurors to find Sirhan guilty of first-degree murder. The defense has asked for a verdict of guilty of murder in the second degree.

Both sides say justice demands that Sirhan be found guilty. The chief prosecutor has said that if the jury finds a first-degree murder verdict, the state will not "demand" a death penalty, but tell the jury that either death or life imprisonment is an "appropriate penalty."

Central to the defense case is the contention that Sirhan suffers diminished capacity—that he is so mentally impaired that he could not have meaningfully and maturely plotted and executed Kennedy's slaying.

Defining diminished capacity, Judge Walker told the jurors:

"(It) means that at the time of the killing the defendant's state of mind . . . was substantially reduced by mental illness, intoxication or any other cause to the extent he could not meaningfully and maturely deliberate and premeditate on his contemplated act and harbor malice. . . ."

Four verdicts are available to the jury:

• It may find Sirhan innocent.

• He could be found guilty of manslaughter, which carries a penalty of from one to 15 years.

• Second-degree murder—penalty five years to life.

• First-degree murder—involving a sentence of either life in prison or death in San Quentin's gas chamber.

Sirhan will await the verdict in his isolated cell on the 13th floor of the Hall of Justice. He has with him a Bible and four books on Arab politics, his attorney, Russell E. Parsons, said.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4-15-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

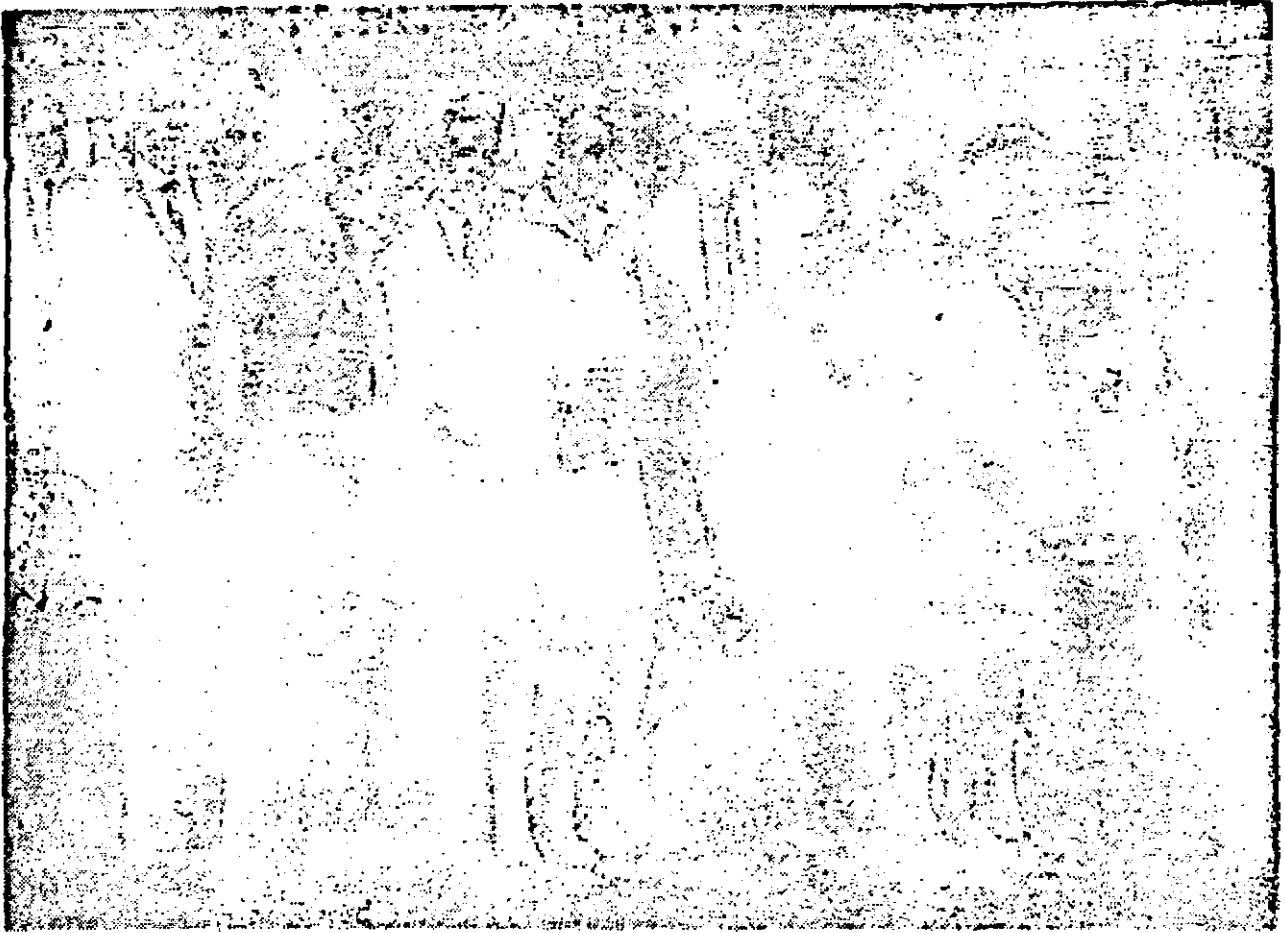
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED

APR 16 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

cc to Bureau
4-16-69



—Herald-Examiner Photo

SIRHAN JURY. CLOSELY GUARDED BY DEPUTIES, BOARDS BUS FOR THE BALTIMORE
Members heard final arguments shortly before, continued deliberations on Jordanian's fate today

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

JURY WEIGHS SIRHAN FATE

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Jurors in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial returned to court this morning to continue their deliberation of the fate of the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

The jury of seven men and five women retired yesterday at 2:54 p.m. following an hour and 20-minute instruction by Superior Court Judge Herbert V. Walker, who presides over the trial of the man accused of the June 5, 1968, Ambassador Hotel slaying of the New York Senator and presidential aspirant.

The jury met for one hour and six minutes, then was sent to its hotel. It was announced that deliberations after state of mind . . . was substantially reduced by mental illness.

Walker's instructions followed intoxication or any other cause. the summation for the state's the extent he could not meaningfully and maturely deliberate Lynn D. Compton. He urged the and premeditate on his contempt-jurors to find Sirhan guilty of a lated act and harbor first-degree murder. The de-nallice. . .

fense has asked for a verdict of Four verdicts are available to guilty of murder in the second he jury: degree.

Both sides say justice demands that Sirhan be found guilty. The chief prosecutor has said that if the jury finds a first-degree murder verdict, the state will not "demand" a death penalty, but tell the jury that either death or life imprisonment is an "appropriate penalty."

Central to the defense case is the contention that Sirhan suffers diminished capacity—that he is so mentally impaired that he could not have meaningfully and maturely plotted and executed Kennedy's slaying.

Defining diminished capacity, Judge Walker told the jurors: "(It) means that at the time of the killing the defendant's state of mind . . . was substantially reduced by mental illness, intoxication or any other cause.

the summation for the state's the extent he could not meaningfully and maturely deliberate Lynn D. Compton. He urged the and premeditate on his contempt-jurors to find Sirhan guilty of a lated act and harbor first-degree murder. The de-nallice. . .

fense has asked for a verdict of Four verdicts are available to guilty of murder in the second he jury: degree.

It may find Sirhan innocent.

He could be found guilty of manslaughter, which carries a penalty of from one to 15 years.

Second-degree murder—penalty five years to life.

First-degree murder—involving a sentence of either life in prison or death in San Quentin's gas chamber.

Sirhan will await the verdict in his isolated cell on the 13th floor of the Hall of Justice. He has with him a Bible and four books on Arab politics, his attorney, Russell E. Parsons, said.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-15-69
Edition: Latest News Sport
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

cc to Ben
4/15/69

56-156-51-7819
SEARCHED
SERIALIZED
INDEXED
FILED
APR 15 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES



—Herald-Examiner Photo

SIRHAN JURY, CLOSELY GUARDED BY DEPUTIES, BOARDS BUS FOR THE BILTMORE
Members heard final arguments shortly before, continued deliberations on Jordanian's fate today

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Juror Shift Shakes Up Sirhan Trial

BY JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's murder trial today moves into a final phase as jurors will—within a matter of hours—take their place as deciders of the young Arab's fate.

The defense of Sirhan—the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy—has nothing more to say. Grant B. Cooper, Sirhan's defense attorney, concluded his summation Friday.

It will be a different jury that determines Sirhan's fate. Ronald Evans, Inglewood telephone installer, was excused from jury duty late Friday when his father died at Alton, Ill.

A new juror will be chosen from the battery of five alternates this morning.

Defense and prosecution attorneys alike are disturbed over the last-minute jury change.

It raises, one said, the possibility of a hung jury.

The trial of the man who has admitted gunning down Kennedy in the Ambassador Hotel on June 5, 1968, already has cost Los Angeles County more than \$1 million.

Should Sirhan's jury be unable to agree, a new trial would become necessary. Cost to the

county, then, could reasonably be expected to at least triple.

Law requires that in a case of first or second-degree murder, each juror independent of his fellows—must decide upon both a unanimous verdict and the penalty, if any.

Cooper has made it clear that the defense believes Sirhan should be locked up for the rest of his natural life.

He is a killer, the defense concedes—but a killer who "does not think straight."

Cooper and his associate defense counsel, Emile Zola Berman and Russell E. Parsons, maintain he cannot be found guilty of murder in the first degree, but should be found guilty only of murder in the second degree.

However, Lynn D. Compton, chief deputy district attorney of Los Angeles County, summing up the case for the prosecution, told the jury, in effect, to either find Sirhan guilty of murder in the first degree or find him guilty of nothing.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-14-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

*cc to Ben
4/15/69*

56-156-21-73

7

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Juror Excused After Father Dies

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's murder trial went into extraordinary session late last night in order to excuse one of the Arab's jurors whose father had died at Akon, Ill.

Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding over the trial, excused Ronald G. Evans, of Inglewood.

The special trial session was held in an armor-enclosed auxiliary courtroom in the jail facility atop the Hall of Justice. Sirhan was present and no stranger to the room where the preliminaries to his soon-to-end murder trial took place.

Evans, a telephone company switchboard installer, was not immediately replaced. Judge Walker said that a successor to the juror would be chosen when court convenes Monday morning.

Evans was the second casualty in the Sirhan jury. The first was IBM computer programmer Lawrence K. Morgan, who was dismissed from the jury when he suffered a bleeding ulcer and had to be hospitalized.

The special session of court was called by Walker after learning from a bailiff that Evans' father had died.

Originally the jurist hoped to conduct the proceedings in the Biltmore Hotel where the jury is locked up. However, legal requirements call for the presence of the defendant in any matter affecting his jury and the case was moved to the jail house courtroom.

Sirhan, unshaven, wan and drawn, appeared in court alongside Parsons and readily agreed to the excusing of Evans.

The session of court was held who will make the final speech almost on the eve on what may for the state.

be the final day of the trial of Compton spoke only briefly the man accused of the June 5, before the trial was adjourned 1968, Ambassador Hotel fatal for the weekend.

shooting of Sen. Kennedy.

Chief defense attorney Grant B. Cooper abruptly cut short his remarks at mid-afternoon yesterday after again urging the seven men and five women who will decide Sirhan's fate to find him guilty of murder in the second degree.

He told the jurors:

"Suppose the deceased in this case had been a fellow by the name of John Smith, a fellow by the name of Jose Gonzales, or George Washington Brown . . . ore of the crowd.

"Suppose you had the same kind of testimony. Do you think you would hesitate two minutes in returning a verdict of second-degree murder as a result of diminished capacity?"

Cooper conceded that Sirhan killed Kennedy, and should go to prison.

He even conceded that Sirhan did plot Kennedy's assassination and did intend to carry it out.

But, he continued to insist that the plotting and intention were not "meaningful and mature" because of Sirhan's state of mind as it was found by both prosecution and defense psychiatrists.

"The essential element of the crime is the intent to kill plus malice aforethought," he said. Sirhan, he insisted, is not a rational man and could not have this intent and malice.

The defense attorney was quickly followed by Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton,

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-12-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

cc to Ben
4/15/69

56-156-54-772

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)



—UPI Photo

KATHY Fuller, 23, who may have been "the girl in the polka-dot dress" in the Robert Kennedy assassination, has died, apparently of an overdose of seconal. She said she was the girl seen running from Ambassador after RFK was shot.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-3 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-12-69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or 56-156
Classification:
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

*cc to Ben
4/15/69*

56-156-34-778

1-2-2
[Signature]

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

New Sirhan Juror to Be Selected

An alternate juror in Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's murder trial will be selected by lot to replace juror Ronald G. Evans of Inglewood, who was excused from duty because of the death of his father in Alton, Ill. Presiding Judge Herbert V. Walker excused Evans during an extraordinary session. A group of alternates has been sitting in on the testimony since Sirhan went on trial for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy. Their five names will be placed in a hat Monday, and one will be drawn to finish the trial.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Los Angeles Time
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/13/69
Edition: Final
Author:
Editor: Wick R. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 APR 14 1969	
FBI-LOS ANGELES	

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Final Argument in Sirhan Trial Begun by State

**Prosecutor Jolts Jurors
With Question Concerning
Cause of Kennedy Slaying**

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

The final word in defense of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan was spoken Friday and his lengthy murder trial entered its final hours as Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn Compton began the prosecution's final summation.

In a brief prelude to his argument Monday, Compton termed the case "highly overcomplicated" by psychiatric expertise and jolted the seven-man, five-woman jury with a question that brought them to the heart of the matter:

"Did Robert F. Kennedy, a young, highly successful man at the peak of his career—a former U.S. attorney general, a senator from New York and a candidate for the Presidency of the country—did he breathe his last breath on the dirty floor of the Ambassador Hotel, there with the mops and the dirty dishes, did he leave a widow with 11 children, because he favored U.S. support of the state of Israel or because he was a substitute father image in some Oedipus complex in Sirhan's mind?"

Prosecutor's Voice Disdainful

The defense has offered both theories as partial explanation of the Palestinian Arab's motive in killing Kennedy last June 5, just after he won the California Democratic presidential primary.

Compton, his voice disdainful as he waved toward a blackboard bearing the names of 10 "so-called experts"—psychologists and psychiatrists called to testify for both sides—said he had thought of erasing their names as he rose to speak, but then changed his mind.

"I hope," he added, "that I can erase them all from your consideration."

Compton said the psychiatric testimony had been so confusing and conflicting that "I can be frank to admit right now as I stand here that I can't answer the question of what Sirhan's real motive was."

Referring to Dr. Bernard L. Diamond's testimony that Sirhan was in a dissociative state induced by the combination of intoxication, rage and a self-induced hypnotic trance from staring into hotel mirrors, Compton said, with thinly veiled contempt:

"If you believe Dr. Diamond with his mirror act and believe Sirhan was in some kind of trance, so that he didn't know if he was on foot or horseback, then it would be inhuman to punish him for anything at all."

Then he added:

"But if you don't buy it—like I don't buy it, and like (deputy district attorneys) John Howard and Dave Fitts don't buy it—then there's nothing left but plain old cold-blooded first-degree murder."

Says None Reflect Wisdom

Compton implied that the precise definition of "mature and meaningful" premeditation that has been so much a part of the defense case is not a legitimate concern to the jurors because, he said, his office deals with about 35,000 felons each year, and in the premeditation behind all the 35,000 crimes, "none of it reflects mature and meaningful, wise judgment."

Compton followed a detailed four-hour summation of the fine points of law by chief defense attorney Grant B. Cooper, who urged the jury to find Sirhan guilty of second-degree murder and sentence him to life imprisonment.

As he had on Thursday, Cooper stressed that the defense did not feel Sirhan "should be given a medal for what he did"—or indeed, that he should "ever be turned loose on society."

But, Cooper argued, the facts in the case and the applicable law make a first-degree verdict inappropriate.

Cooper said the defense also would not ask the jury to return a manslaughter verdict—even

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

**II-1 Los Angeles Time
Los Angeles, Calif**

Date: 4/12/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. William
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-776

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 APR 14 1969	
FBI—LOS ANGELES	

though he contended, the evidence could warrant it—because he felt that such a request would simply not be discreet in this case.

Cooper said the jury could accept the facts as stated by the prosecution, ignore the claims of hypnotic or dissociative trances, and accept the evidence of "premeditation that goes back to at least May 18"—three weeks before the killing—and still would have to consider whether Sirhan's plans were mature or meaningful.

Citing Sirhan's claimed amnesia about his writings in his notebooks, where he wrote of his intent to kill Kennedy, Cooper asked, "Why, why in God's name did Sirhan deny these writings? Frankly, I don't know." The denials, Cooper said, were paradoxical but insignificant, in view of the fact that Sirhan admitted on the stand several times that he hated Kennedy and on one occasion was so enraged that he said: "So help me God, I would have killed him on the spot, right then and there."

Citing Sirhan's half-dozen outbursts of temper in the court or in Superior

Judge Herbert V. Walker's chambers, Cooper said the significance of such outbursts was that Sirhan couldn't restrain himself, even after the judge warned Sirhan he would be gagged and bound if he persisted.

Cooper said he "could have crawled under the table" when clinical psychologist Martin M. Schorr—whom Cooper three times dubbed "the little man in the green suit"—admitted that he had copied dramatic portions of a psychiatrist's recently published casebook while looking for a punchy way to spice up his testimony.

Cooper said Schorr "made a terrible faux pas" and "could have spoiled the work he had done by doing such a stupid thing . . . But whatever it was he copied, it wasn't his protocol," said Cooper, adding that the clinical test protocol developed by Schorr was substantially upheld by seven other defense experts.

Concluding his lengthy summation, Cooper told the jury, "I'm the last one to speak on behalf of this defendant. When I sit down, no voice will be raised again in his defense . . . We pass from our shoulders to yours the responsibility and the proper fate of Sirhan-Sirhan."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Kennedy Case, Suicide Linked

A young woman who killed herself early this week was identified Friday as a go-go dancer who figured briefly in the Robert F. Kennedy assassination investigation, police said.

She was Kathy Fulmer, 23, found semiconscious Monday evening in a motel at 2101 Parkside Ave. where she had registered under the name of Sundry Ross. She died of an overdose of Seconal a half-hour later at County-USC Medical Center.

She remained unidentified until Friday when a girl friend viewed the body. No motive for her suicide has been established.

Miss Fulmer came forward when investigators were seeking a girl who wore a polka dot dress in the Ambassador the night the senator was shot. She told deputy sheriffs she wore a polka dot scarf and had been at the hotel.

But, as the investigation developed, neither Miss Fulmer nor any of several young women wearing polka dot garments at the assassination scene had any bearing on the case.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-10
Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/12/69
Edition: Home
Author:
Editor: Nick B. William
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-775

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 APR 14 1969	
FBI-LOS ANGELES	

*acc to Bureau
4-14-69*

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SIRHAN DEFENSE ANSWERS

A PERFECT EXAMPLE
OF A SICK MAN

Chief defense counsel Grant B. Cooper began the final argument on behalf of Sirhan.

The following are excerpts from Cooper's remarks:

Let me take you back more than three months. You remember being examined by attorneys on both sides to determine if you could sit in this case . . . If you were free from bias and prejudice. Each one said that you were.

You were asked if you approached this case with an open mind. Each one of you said that you would. You were asked if you would equally apply the laws which favor the defense and those which favor the prosecution. Each said you would.

You were asked if you would imply innocence. You said you would. You were asked if you would follow the law with respect to diminished capacity. Each said you would.

You were asked that you would not allow sympathy or bias or prejudice—sympathy for the Kennedy family or the Sirhan family—to interfere with this case. And you said that you would not.

Over and over . . . you were asked if you would keep your minds open until you had heard both sides of the case.

We are here, ladies and gentlemen, to exact that pledge from you.

We are not here to free a guilty man. We tell you, as we always have, that he is guilty of having killed Sen. Kennedy.

We are not asking for an acquittal.

We expect that under the evidence, whether Mr. Sirhan likes it or not, on the facts of this case, he deserves to spend the rest of his life in a penitentiary.

I propose to discuss with you the law and to attempt to help you if I can with what the law is in this case and then to do my dead-level best to apply the law to this case. Not with the idea of turning Sirhan Sirhan loose . . . but to put it in proper . . . and intelligent perspective.

Let me explain how your instructions will come . . . Both sides prepare their conception of what they think the law is. We submit them to his honor . . . his honor has the last word. He tells us what law he is going to give you so that when we argue the law to you we will state it truthfully.

First I think you should know what the presumption of innocence is. If after considering all the evidence you entertain reasonable doubt as to whether it should be first-degree or second-degree murder, I believe his honor will tell you that it is up to you under the law to give the defendant the benefit of reasonable doubt.

If there is doubt in your mind as to whether it should be murder in the second degree or manslaughter, it would be your duty under the law to return a verdict of manslaughter, providing that you entertain reasonable doubt.

A reasonable doubt is not a mere possible doubt. It is . . . you the juror say that you can not feel an abiding conviction to a moral certainty. Not an absolute certainty, a moral certainty is all that is required.

I heard "reasonable doubt" best expressed by Judge (Leo) Aggeler: "You know it's like love. You can't define it, but you know it when you've got it." That is just as good a definition of reasonable doubt as there is.

You have been bombarded with the testimony of experts. An expert witness is a person who has special skill, knowledge or training . . . You should consider their background of experience and education and the credibility of the education. You are not bound to accept the testimony of any expert.

You are not to decide the case in conformity with the number of witnesses. The prosecution has put in 60 witnesses, the defense 20. The defense has called more experts than the prosecution. The question is the quality of the witnesses.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-10 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/11/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kenseit

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-774

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 11 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
4-14-69

There is a difference between direct and circumstantial evidence. Witnesses said Sirhan pulled the trigger—that is direct. Circumstantial evidence comes into this with respect to the defendant's state of mind . . . the inferences which we draw from facts.

Whether by direct or circumstantial evidence, the prosecution must establish the facts to prove guilt beyond a reasonable doubt.

On the real, only issue you have before you as to whether or not the defendant had diminished capacity, the only way that can be established is by circumstantial evidence. That is the guts of the whole case, the whole sole issue in this case.

You are not permitted to find the defendant guilty . . . unless the proved circumstances are not only consistent with that the defendant is guilty of the crime . . . but cannot be reconciled with any other rational conclusion. If the evidence is susceptible to a reasonable interpretation one of which points to the defendant's guilt and the other

which points to his innocence, it is your duty to reject that which points to guilt and accept that which shows his innocence.

Because of the testimony of all the psychiatrists and psychologists . . . because of his conduct at the bar of justice in this case, I wouldn't want Sirhan Sirhan turned loose on society when the psychiatrists tell us he is getting worse.

There are two Sirhans, the good Sirhan and the bad Sirhan, and the bad Sirhan is a nasty Sirhan. I have learned to love the good little Sirhan. But as lawyers must do what is right for him to the best of our ability, we also have a responsibility to society, and I for one am not going to ask you to bring in a verdict of less than guilty of murder in the second degree.

Let's take motive. Can there be any question in anyone's mind but that his motive was political?

When we talk about crime, we talk about the elements of crime. Murder has the following elements: There must be the intent to kill. In first-degree murder, it must be willful, deliberate and premeditated and it must be the killing of a human being. Motive is not an element.

Was it a mature motive; was it a meaningful motive?

Let's take excerpts from things you have heard over and over again. To do away with the government and declare anarchy. Is that mature thinking? Is that meaningful thinking?

In his pronouncement, he wrote: "I advocate the overthrow of the current President of the United States of America. I have no definite plans yet, but will soon compose some." Is that mature thinking? Is that meaningful thinking?

His "Robert F. Kennedy must be assassinated before 5 June 1968. I have never heard. Please pay to the order of of of of of of of"—11 of's. Is that mature and meaningful thinking?

All murder which is willful, premeditated and deliberate with malice aforethought is murder in the first degree. Now I would appreciate it very much if you will italicize what I am about to tell you.

So far as I am concerned in the discussion I am going to have with you and in the application of the law, you may assume that all of the facts are not as the defendant has testified to them . . . that this is a tissue of lies. . . and all the facts with respect to the shooting, all things except the opinions of the psychiatrists and psychologists, are as they say.

You may assume . . . and: Your next instruction is in slaughter. The law in its wisdom from my point of view, the law of diminished capacity distinguishes between would be illogical to suggest that this wasn't a willful, deliberate and premeditated alleged crime was committed by the defendant had substantial kind of mind you are dealing with—is this a bad man?

But I want to point out to you ly . . . reduced mental capacity. I am not overlooking that have willful, deliberate and premeditated killing in manslaughter . . . That is the law. Illness, intoxication or any other cause, the court will say, I am not overlooking that the man killed was Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, who left a

Deliberate means formed or arrived at . . . weighed or considered for and against the proper course of action. to you you must consider what effect this diminished capacity had on the defendant's ability to form any of the specific states that are the essential elements of murder. But what was the motive? Nothing for gain for him (Sirhan). A political motive, yes, but something in his mind. He believed it was right. How stupid. He believed he shouldn't have been punished for it. How stupid.

The word "premeditation" means thought over beforehand. Remember . . . the elements: To form specific intent to kill; premeditate and deliberate; reflect upon the gravity of the contemplated act. Let's take malice aforethought. Malice is expressed when there is manifest intent to kill a human being. The mental state must precede rather than follow the act.

The law doesn't undertake to measure premeditation of deliberation . . . the true test is not the time elapsed but the extent of the mature and meaningful reflection. The cold, calculated decision may be arrived at in a short time. Insofar as diminished capacity, if because of mental illness or intoxication or any other cause, the defendant is unable to govern his actions . . . he does not act with malice aforethought. In that case this defendant would be entitled to a verdict of manslaughter.

To constitute a willful and deliberate killing, the slayer must weigh and consider the question of killing and the reasons for and against, and having in mind the consequences, decide to and commit the unlawful act causing death. There are some forgotten people in this case. There were five other people who were shot. In assault with intent to commit murder there must be specific intent to kill. In manslaughter the specific intent to kill is not necessary. What I am telling you is legalese.

If you find that the defendant's mental capacity was diminished to the extent that you have a reasonable doubt whether he did meaningfully, willfully premeditate and deliberate . . . you can not find him guilty of murder in the first degree. The instruction goes on with respect to harboring malice. The next thing is malice aforethought. If there is malice aforethought it is not manslaughter. It has got to be a decision between the two degrees of murder. The shooting resulted in Kennedy's death, and he is dead whether it is murder in the first degree or murder in the second degree or manslaughter.

The next thing is malice aforethought. If there is malice aforethought it is not manslaughter. It has got to be a decision between the two degrees of murder.

Some of you may have wondered about the psychiatrists who testified that this defendant could not meaningfully reflect upon the act. Dr. Diamond . . . teaches in the schools of criminology, law and medicine. Dr. Marcus, appointed by the court . . . also told you that in his opinion . . . Sirhan couldn't meaningfully and maturely premeditate and deliberate, couldn't meaningfully and maturely weigh the facts. As did the others.

Some of you may have wondered about the psychiatrists who testified that this defendant could not meaningfully reflect upon the act. Dr. Diamond . . . teaches in the schools of criminology, law and medicine. Dr. Marcus, appointed by the court . . . also told you that in his opinion . . . Sirhan couldn't meaningfully and maturely premeditate and deliberate, couldn't meaningfully and maturely weigh the facts. As did the others.

Some of you may have wondered about the psychiatrists who testified that this defendant could not meaningfully reflect upon the act. Dr. Diamond . . . teaches in the schools of criminology, law and medicine. Dr. Marcus, appointed by the court . . . also told you that in his opinion . . . Sirhan couldn't meaningfully and maturely premeditate and deliberate, couldn't meaningfully and maturely weigh the facts. As did the others.

Some of you may have wondered about the psychiatrists who testified that this defendant could not meaningfully reflect upon the act. Dr. Diamond . . . teaches in the schools of criminology, law and medicine. Dr. Marcus, appointed by the court . . . also told you that in his opinion . . . Sirhan couldn't meaningfully and maturely premeditate and deliberate, couldn't meaningfully and maturely weigh the facts. As did the others.

If you find this defendant guilty of murder, then it necessarily follows that you would have to find the defendant guilty of assault with intent to commit murder on counts 2, 3, 4, 5, and 6. If you find him not guilty of murder, by that verdict you have determined that there was no specific intent to kill. You would only be able to find him guilty of assault with a deadly weapon . . . a lesser offense.

It is the law of transferred intent.

There is no question but what Sirhan Sirhan intended to kill Sen. Robert F. Kennedy. When he fired all of those shots . . . I don't think he had realized he had killed Kennedy. The pulling of the gun in my opinion was a continued attempt to try to kill Sen. Kennedy.

One other instruction that we discussed at length when we examined you . . . that is the individual opinion of each

juror. The people and the defendant are entitled to the individual opinion of each juror. Each one of you is supreme in determining the facts. Your powers are equal even above his honor, in a jury trial. You are the judge of the facts.

The reason we have 12 jurors is so that we have 12 individual opinions. You must agree before the verdict can be reached.

You have told us, you will recall . . . that you would not compromise just for the purpose of arriving at a verdict . . . just so you can get home earlier.

And God knows you are eager to get home.

COURT RECESSED
FOR THE DAY

You will recall a peculiar incident that happened here when I was ready to call Mrs. Sirhan to the stand.

Mr. Cooper (Grant Cooper, another defense attorney) stated that the defendant's outburst had very greatly upset Mrs. Sirhan. Munir (Sirhan's brother) sent word that she really didn't want to go on.

Those are the circumstances under which we put the mother on the stand.

This is a very vital situation. You should bear in mind that when Mr. Sirhan stood up and said he wanted to dismiss his lawyers, he was in a very disturbed state.

Since June, I have practically lived with him in his jail cell. Mr. Berman (Emil Zola Berman, of defense) had given up his business in New York and come here to help.

Mr. Cooper came into this best experts available. Dr. case as soon as he was able Schorr (Martin M.) may have to. They had given their all to made some mistakes, but he this case. That alone should is a man with tremendous mean something to you. background. That hasn't been disproved. They have all said he was sick. There is no doubt about it. But how sick?

The mother took the stand and told us she and her family were Palestinians. All of a sudden they had to give up their home. That is bound to have an effect on people.

They never got back. They are not immigrants. They are refugees who were brought here under a bad situation.

They were forced out of their home. They went into a house 500 years old. She told you about the toilet, the little holes in the pavement in this building.

She told you about the food—margarine, a little dried flour which they mixed and made bread. It is unbelievable how they lived.

They got little medical care. There were shots outside daily. Sirhan saw this. He was a young boy, but it must have left a scar on him.

There was barbed wire. A barbed wire fence was built. She told you her small son ran into the street, was pushed over by a truck and killed by the fence.

Sirhan was acquainted with this. It must have left an indelible impression.

Finally they came to this country—as refugees in peril.

He did pretty well in school.

He played hockey from school to tend the wants of his poor dying sister. You can't be too bad when you do that.

We thought we did pretty well when we brought in the

If I may go back to Mrs. Sirhan and her son, she did the best she could with this boy.

He was hurt out here at the race track. He loved horses. The frustrations mounted up until this fellow didn't know what he was doing.

Here we are with a perfect example of a man who is sick. In this field they hardly refer to persons as being "insane" any more. If you ever had a perfect case, you had it here. Here's a man who wants to stand up and fire the lawyers who are trying to help him.

I have come to like him. You can't be around him without feeling sorry for him. I've sat here and had him reach up and hold my hand like a baby.

You have seen him. One moment he appears to be smart as a whip. The next he can't tell right from wrong.

I would like this verdict to spell out in every hamlet, in every Arab desert and all over Europe, that a man can get justice in America. That is neither life imprisonment nor the death penalty, because this case doesn't warrant it. Not for this poor, sick wretch, no matter what he did.

Let us make sure that throughout the world, that in every hamlet, the people know that in America you can

And I'd stake this case on Dr. Seward (Georgene Seward), professor at USC. She examined these reports of Dr. Schorr and Dr. (O. Roderick) Richardson and she didn't find them wanting.

And she was selected for that purpose by the opposition.

And Dr. DeVos—did he find Dr. Schorr or Dr. Richardson wanting?

Dr. Marcus was appointed by the Superior Court to help us in this case. He testified that this man was sick, that he was incompetent to form intent.

Dr. Marcus wanted some help. The psychologist furnishes the tools to the psychiatrist. Dr. Marcus suggested they use Dr. Richardson.

And this fellow who picked up a telephone and said he wanted to help the district attorney. Since June, I have tried to stand off that kind of people. Everybody wanted in on the act.

He has the gall to come here and condemn the work of skilled men.

Eight doctors have testified this man is more than sick.

This man is not a candidate for first degree murder.

In the end, she expired with him in the room attempting to take care of her.

That was trauma Number Two.

As the result of this, he was flunked out of Pasadena City College.

That was trauma Number Three.

Trauma Number Four occurred on Sept. 25, 1958. He was working at the Allilisch Ranch and there was to be a practice race, a morning workout with two horses.

Millard Sheple told us fog was the only unusual condition. He heard what sounded like an accident. He ran over and found Sirhan "lying against the post and under the rail—very seriously hurt."

Trauma Number Four was another frustrated ambition.

We come to trauma Number Five. He tried to go back to the ranch but he couldn't do the work. He had to quit.

He returned home to Pasadena and became secluded, and started extensive reading in the occult and Rosicrucian literature and other such work, and experimented with this business of the power of the mind.

He complained about headaches, became more and more brooding, quick to anger, obsessed with suspicion and distrust.

On June 2, 1967, he wrote a declaration of war against

American humanity. This is quite a document, quite revealing of the trauma assailing this boy's personality and his mind:

"Victims of the party in favor of this declaration are the president, vice-president, etc. down the ladder. The author of this memorandum expresses his wishes very bluntly that he wants to be recorded by history as the man who triggered off the last war."

Within three days of this pompous declaration came June 5, 1967, the commencement of the six-day Arab-Israeli War. This was the biggest trauma of them all.

On May 18, Sirhan heard Sen. Kennedy's speech that if elected he would make every effort to supply Israel with 50 phantom jets. We have this from his mother—he tore into the television. He banged on the television. He struck at the television in absolute madness.

On June 1, he was at the Corona Range, firing . . . on that day he signed his own name and his own address. On June 4th, when he went to the San Gabriel Gun Club, he signed his name and his address. He was not trying, under any circumstances, to hide anything.

On June 4 he met Nystri, a friend of his, and had coffee with him . . . at a hamburger joint across from Pasadena City College.

get justice, whether it is in Mississippi or in Los Angeles.

It is going to take a little courage to return a proper verdict in this case, a little courage to see that justice is done. But it can and must be done.

It will go down in the history books.

New York attorney Emile Zola Berman continued the closing argument in Sirhan's behalf. The following are excerpts from his remarks:

I want to talk to you specifically about a thing called trauma. Trauma is a blow or an insult—trauma to one's personality, a blow to what makes a person become what he is.

I'm going to talk to you about the traumatic events upon Sirhan's personality. From a young boy to the 24-year-old man—what it was, step by step, that put him in the posture which created the tragedy that blighted our nation.

Perhaps within five months after they came to this country, dear old Dad was working in the backyard, and Sirhan, then about 14, interfered as a careless kid in some work the father was doing.

As the father was about to strike him, Adel (an older them and would not allow brother) stepped between Papa to strike young Sirhan. Papa immediately confronted Mama and laid down the gauntlet that she must make a choice between him and the children.

Mama said: "You are my husband and he is my child."

Dear, ever-loving Dad took all the family's money and departed for Jerusalem and has never been heard from since.

That was trauma Number One in the USA.

In Sirhan's third semester at Pasadena City College, his sister, Ayda, was the victim of leukemia. It was for Sirhan to spend day and night tending his sister and being absent from school almost six weeks.

Mystri had a paper, which he gave to Sirhan. Sirhan saw an ad for what he called the "Jew Parade" on Wilshire Boulevard, not knowing this was an edition of tomorrow morning's paper and that the parade was to be on June 5.

He couldn't find the parade, but he saw (Sen.) Kuchel's headquarters and parked his car.

A word about this car as the getaway vehicle. That car was three solid blocks from the nearest entrance to the Ambassador Hotel.

He went into the Kuchel headquarters . . . not much going on . . . somebody told him there was a real bash going on at the Ambassador. He went by foot to the Ambassador Hotel.

There were bars . . . and mirrors in the Venetian Room. That is pretty much of the nitty-gritty in this. There were mirrors everywhere he turned, mirrors in his home, mirrors in the hotel.

It was by mirrors that he induced self-hypnosis or—what is that term the doctors use—a dissociative state.

We have no way of knowing over how long all of his drinking took place, but we do know that Sirhan began to feel his drinking and decided it was time for him to go home.

He went to the car three blocks away and suddenly found he was too drunk to drive.

He saw his gun in the back seat and picked it up. He returned to the Ambassador to get some coffee.

All through the theme of the prosecution case is premeditation and planning. We have checked this every way we can.

One thing is that Sirhan was alone. There was no conspiracy here, no helpers here, nobody backing him up, no reward for money. This was his act alone.

You must remember that when Sen. Kennedy was making his speech to his followers in the Embassy Room . . . in was to go to a large overflow crowd in the Ambassador ballroom on the floor below, and the route to be taken would never have taken the senator and his entourage through the pantry.

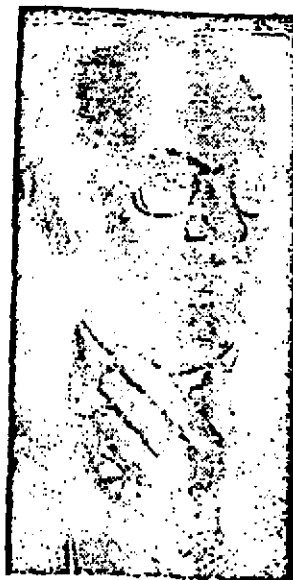
At the last moment, somebody changed his mind. There could not be any possible knowledgeable waiting for the senator, where Sirhan could take a position where he would have a pot-shot at him.

I take this up because it has to do with the inference that Sirhan was lying in wait . . . waiting for a crack at Kennedy. This does not and cannot fit the facts in this case.

This freakishness changes the whole history of our country and possibly of the world.

Earlier yesterday defense counsel Russell E. Parsons began the closing arguments on behalf of Sirhan. Excerpts from his remarks follow:

To Grant B. Cooper, chief counsel for Sirhan Bishara Sirhan in his trial for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, falls the task of summarizing the defense's case. While freely admitting his client's guilt, Cooper yesterday admonished the jury to consider "reasonable doubt" and "diminished capacity" in his final plea in the court of Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker.



RUSSELL PARSONS
Third defense attorney



EMILE Z. BERMAN
Describes six traumas



CHIEF DEFENSE COUNSEL GRANT COOPER
Diminished capacity . . . is the guts of the whole case'



SIRHAN SIRHAN
'Unable to form intent'

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SIRHAN GUILTY, DESERVES LIFE SENTENCE - COOPER

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Chief defense counsel Grant B. Cooper returns to the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial courtroom today to renew his fight for a life sentence for the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Cooper and his associates, Emile Zola Berman and Russell E. Parsons, have stated in their summations that they want mercy tempered with justice for the young Arab.

As Cooper sees it, justice will require Sirhan to spend the rest of his natural life behind bars serving out a sentence for second-degree murder for his June 5, 1968 Ambassador Hotel slaying of Kennedy.

If the lengthy murder trial goes according to schedule Sirhan's jury of seven men and five women should begin their deliberations Wednesday. Cooper is expected to consume all of today and part of Monday with his summation.

He will be followed by Chief

Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn Comp-ger of the gun that killed Sen. Kennedy."

ton who will conclude the case for the jury.

Yesterday, Cooper startled nearly everyone in the armored, eighth-floor, Hall of Justice courtroom except the defendant when he told the jury:

"... Whether Mr. Sirhan likes it or not, he deserves to spend the rest of his life in a penitentiary."

Sirhan, obviously prepared for his lawyer's tactic, remained impassive and showed no emotion.

"We are not here to free a guilty man," the defense lawyer said.

"We tell you he is guilty of having ... killed Sen. Kennedy

... The direct evidence is that Sirhan's finger pulled the trig-

Moreover, Cooper told the jury, that insofar as he was concerned, with the exception of the psychiatric evidence in the case, it was free to accept all the evidence against Sirhan as it was presented by the prosecution.

The jurors could, if they choose, he said, view Sirhan's own testimony as a "tissue of lies."

"This is the point I want you to italicize ... So far as I am concerned in the discussion I am going to have with you and in the application of the law, you may assume that all of the facts are not as the defendant has testified to ... that his is a tissue of lies, and that all the facts with respect to the shooting, and everything except the opinions of the psychologists and psychiatrists, are as they say.

You may assume, and from

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4/11/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensealt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

46-156-7-773

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 14 1969	
FBI-LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
4-14-69

my point of view it would be illogical to suggest this wasn't a willful, deliberate and premeditated murder."

The jury, he said, could assume all this, and still find Sirhan guilty of only second-degree murder. If fact, the defender said, under recent California Supreme Court decisions, a killing could be willful, deliberate and premeditated and be but manslaughter — if the defendant was found to have diminished mental capacity.

This diminished mental capacity, Cooper said, was the central issue for the jurors to decide. Premeditation, deliberation, and malice connected with the Kennedy killing must be shown, beyond a reasonable doubt, to have been "meaningful and mature" on Sirhan's part for the jury to find him guilty of first-degree murder, he said.

If there was reasonable doubt, he said, any such doubt must be resolved on Sirhan's behalf.

Reasonable doubt, he told the jury, is difficult to define. He quoted the advice of a deceased former Superior Court judge:

"... It is like love. You can't

define it, but you know it when you've got it."

Sirhan's past conduct, his meandering notebooks, his threats against Kennedy in the notebooks, all served to show he could not have "meaningfully and maturely premeditated and deliberated" the killing, Cooper said.

Cooper further told them, that it was not necessary that they fully believe that Sirhan suffered diminished capacity. If any reasonable doubt was raised in their minds, he pointed out, that doubt, under California law, must be resolved in Sirhan's favor.

Cooper said he would deal with the psychiatric testimony in greater detail when he continued his address today. He conceded at the outset, however, the testimony of Dr. Bernard L. Diamond, Berkeley psychiatrist who claims Sirhan shot Kennedy while in a self-induced trance, might be hard to swallow. But, he insisted, "he understands this . . ."

Cooper, when he began his remarks, immediately set out to establish a "just us folks" rapport with the jury. He disdained use of the courtroom microphone. He spoke colloquially — usually in a conversational tone,

sometimes dropping his voice to a whisper as though to share a confidence with the jurors.

His delivery contrasted sharply with that of Parsons and Berman. The former, a lawyer of the old school, gave the jury tub-thumping, William Jennings Bryan courtroom oratory, telling them:

"I would like your verdict to spell out in every hamlet on every Arab desert . . . that a man can get justice in America. That is neither life imprisonment (for first-degree murder) nor the death penalty because this case doesn't warrant it. Not for this poor sick wretch, no matter what he did.

"It will take a little courage to return a proper verdict in this case . . . a little courage to see justice done, but it can and must be done."

Berman, New York trial attorney who virtually abandoned his practice to join the Sirhan defense team, added:

"Sirhan is so unaware of his obligations to society he must be held under control.

"But I ask you plain and simple, and I am not a beggar, that in the name of humanity we do not send for the crime of murder in the first degree, a mental cripple."

Berman and Parsons both

told the jury that "traumatic" experiences in Sirhan's life before the shooting had crippled him psychologically.

The first trauma came when he was a child in Jerusalem during the 1948 Arab-Palestine war, Parsons said. He claimed Sirhan, at age 4, had been permanently scarred by the horrors of war.

After the family immigrated to the United States, Berman said, Sirhan suffered other traumas.

The first, he claimed, came in 1957, shortly after the family settled in Pasadena. "Dear ever-lovin' old dad (Bishara Sirhan) departed for Jordan taking the family savings with him. He has not been seen, nor heard of to this day."

Sirhan's traumas continued to a few days before the slaying when he suffered another — Kennedy, whom he loved and respected, announced he was in favor of giving aircraft to Israel for use in its fight against the Arab nations, Berman said.

Since the assassination, Berman told the jury, Sirhan has made no progress toward regaining his mental health; "he's going down hill."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Earlier Life-Penalty Plan Could Be Key to Keep Sirhan Alive

BY RON EINSTOSS

Times Staff Writer

Although their intentions have never been in doubt, prosecutors now have formally asked that the jury return a verdict of first-degree murder against Sirhan Bishara Sirhan.

If they get what they want, the only remaining question will be one of penalty—death or life imprisonment.

That decision would be made by the same jury in a separate penalty trial.

Both the prosecution and the defense at that time will have an opportunity to submit additional evidence and offer arguments.

The prosecution's presentation would focus on any matters which would tend to aggravate the crime.

The defense, on the other hand, would seek to get before the jury anything which might mitigate—or favor—Sirhan's position.

A major factor during the penalty proceedings may be the proposed arrangement early in the trial which would have permitted Sirhan to plead guilty to first-degree murder with life in prison.

If Sirhan is convicted of murder in the first-degree, that might be the best weapon the defense has to save Sirhan's life.

Because of this, defense attorneys Grant B. Cooper, Emile Zola Berman and Russell E. Parsons most likely will attempt to bring the matter to the attention of the jury,

possibly by some one from the district attorney's office—perhaps even Dist. Atty. Evelle J. Younger—to testify about the plea bargaining discussions.

This could present an awkward situation to the prosecution and it already has led to reports that Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton and Dep. Dist. Attys. John E. Howard and David N. Fitts will not "demand" the death penalty.

But the death penalty is seldom demanded anyway. Usually, in proper cases, juries are "urged" to bring in such a verdict.

The prosecution, however, may even find it difficult to go that far because it once was willing to settle for life.

When Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker rejected the plea agreement it opened the way for the jury to hear all the evidence in the case.

And that jury may now decide, without any urging from the prosecution, at least in so many words, that the only penalty for the heinous crime of assassinating a possible President of the United States is death.

If the jury votes the death penalty, it could be reduced to life in prison by Judge Walker. But a verdict of life imprisonment by the jury is binding on the court.

All sentences of death are automatically reviewed by the State Supreme Court.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-3 LA Times
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-11-69
Edition: Home
Author: Ron Einstoss
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-777

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc To Bureau
4/11/69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Defense Pleads for Sentence of Life

Cooper Admits Defendant Killed Kennedy but Calls for Second-Degree Murder Verdict

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

"We are not here to free a guilty man," defense attorney Grant B. Cooper said Thursday of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan. "He is guilty of having killed Sen. Robert F. Kennedy. We are not asking for an acquittal.

"On the facts of this case—whether Mr. Sirhan likes it or not—Mr. Sirhan deserves to spend the rest of his life in the penitentiary."

Cooper, in a detailed explanation of the various aspects of the law that Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker will give the jury to judge the facts by, said that on the basis of both evidence and law, the defense "will ask you to return a verdict of murder in the second-degree."

Such a verdict, Cooper stressed, would still enable the jury to sentence Sirhan to life in prison. "Because of the conduct that brought him to the bar of justice in this case," Cooper said, "I wouldn't want Sirhan Sirhan turned loose on society."

Then he added: "There are two Sirhans. There is a good Sirhan and a bad Sirhan, and the bad Sirhan is a nasty Sirhan. I've learned to love the little, good Sirhan."

Describes Reasonable Doubt

Cooper, carefully unwinding a summation that was expected to consume all of today's session, embarked on his analysis of the applicable law, he said, "not with the hope of turning Sirhan Sirhan loose."

By law, he said, the jury must make a presumption of a defendant's innocence, and in any case where they feel reasonable doubt, they are required by law to return the lesser of two verdicts. "Reasonable doubt," he said, quoting a deceased jurist, "is like love. You can't define it, but you know it when you've got it."

In Sirhan's case, Cooper said, whether he had diminished mental capacity to maturely and meaningfully plan Kennedy's death is the sole issue. And, he added, only circumstantial evidence exists to help jurors determine whether his capacity was diminished.

As to Sirhan's motive, Cooper admitted: "Can there be any question in anyone's mind but that his motive was political?"

But motive, he said, is not one of the elements which must be proven to justify a verdict of murder, whether first or second-degree. The proper elements, he said, are proof of intent to kill, "willfully, deliberately and premeditatedly."

Further, he said, under Sirhan's defense of diminished capacity, it must be proven beyond reasonable doubt that such premeditation was mature and meaningful.

Cooper said the jury could, if it chose, assume that Sirhan's own story was "a tissue of lies," accept the facts as stated by the prosecution and conclude that it would be illegal to pretend Sirhan didn't premeditate Kennedy's death.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-3 LA Times
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-11-69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. William
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 11 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Ben
4/11/69

56-156-21-771

Verdict Could Mean Life

But still, he said, a second-degree verdict could provide life in prison for Sirhan, and could still take account of the defense contention that Sirhan's premeditation was not mature and meaningful.

Because of a diminished capacity to reflect on the consequences of his act, Cooper said, Sirhan wasn't capable of what the law would consider mature and meaningful malice aforethought—another required element in a first-degree murder conviction.

Attorney Russell E. Parsons led off the closing arguments in defense of Sirhan earlier with a ringing, impassioned declaration that neither a death sentence nor life imprisonment would be a just verdict for "this poor, sick wretch."

"I would like your verdict to spell, in every hamlet, on every desert in the Arab republic and in Europe, that a man can get justice in America.

"And justice is not the death penalty or life imprisonment in this case because that isn't warranted—not for this poor, sick wretch who did not know what he did."

"It's going to take a little courage to return a proper verdict in this case," Parsons told the five-woman, seven-man jury, "a little courage to

see that justice is done. But justice must be done, because this trial is going down in the history books."

In a 45-minute discourse dotted with emotional appeals, Parsons said: "I don't believe in the death penalty. I don't believe you can take the life of another man. Only God can do that."

Sirhan, Parsons conceded, took the life of Kennedy, just as Kennedy's brother, President John F. Kennedy, had been assassinated five years before.

"That was a horrible act," Parsons said, then added: "There isn't a man in America who shouldn't say a prayer for the remainder of that family—every night."

Sirhan, who sat smiling through most of Parsons' delivery and seemed especially delighted at the emotional high points, grinned and quickly covered his mouth with his right hand as Parsons mentioned prayers for the Kennedys.

Parsons praised the testimony of psychiatrists and psychologists who diagnosed Sirhan as a paranoid schizophrenic.

Parsons asserted that Sirhan's behavior, both before and since the crime, was not "faking." Even Sirhan's courtroom behavior, Parsons said, shows that he is sick.

"I've come to sort of like the fellow," Parsons said. "You can't be around him without feeling sorry for him. I've sat here and had him reach up and hold my hand, like a baby. One minute he's smart as a whip and the next minute he doesn't know right from wrong."

Parsons was followed by New York attorney Emile Zola Berman, who contended that Sirhan has suffered deep "traumata"—or psychological injuries—since his arrival in 1957 in Pasadena.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

'DEFENDANT DIDN'T ACT IN A RASH MANNER'

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-8 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-10-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: Donald Goodenow
Editor:
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-1770

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

This trial commenced on Jan. 7. We have now passed the three-month anniversary.

We have heard the testimony of some 90 witnesses. But I suggest to you that for the last three we have departed in some measure from the basic premise of this trial—murder.

Murder, and I'll read it, is the unlawful killing of a human being with malice aforethought.

Malice may be either expressed or implied. It is expressed when the killing is done outright. It is implied when the killing results from an action involved with wanton disregard for human life.

I suggest what we are dealing with in this case is expressed malice.

On the fifth day of June last year, Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, in an exultant mood after the triumph of seeking the presidential nomination in California, probably tired, was on his way to unnecessary celebration at some night club when he passed through a kitchen pantry to give the working gentlemen of the press a chance to meet their deadlines.

As he reached the serving table, he paused to receive the congratulations of two witnesses who have testified in this case, Juan Romero and Jesus Perez. The defendant in this case, standing some 12 feet away, at or on a serving tray, stepped from that tray, approached the senator,

drew a .22 pistol from his waistband, reached around Carl Uecker, and fired eight shots.

As you have heard from witnesses, he fired one or two, then paused and then fired more. It is natural these witnesses should be somewhat confused at the interval of shots. Carl Uecker himself believed that he had reacted almost instantly, grabbing the arm of the assailant.

You have heard the view of a ballistics expert that the shot that killed the senator was fired at pointblank range and three other shots.

One passed through his body, one lodged in the cervical area, and both entered the body in the area of the right armpit. This would indicate to me that the senator was still on his feet.

Four shots had been fired before Mr. Uecker entered the action. Thereafter, the scene became chaotic.

We know that the rounds of ammunition were expended, and five other individuals were wounded as a result of this shooting. We know that the defendant was immediately subdued. We know many grappled with him and that they struggled one against another.

The defendant told his feelings to at least two individuals. To Rafer Johnson he said, "I can explain. I can explain."

Later in the police car where he was accompanied by Jesse Unruh, the defendant mumbled:

"I did it for my country." Unruh said he was trying to help and the defendant replied: "It's too late . . . It's too late."

The significance of this reply is something I will leave you to conjure with.

Malice — let's go back to that word. It is expressed when there is manifest intent unlawfully to kill a human being. We have an individual recognizing his target, rapidly approaching the target and firing eight shots.

What could be clearer than that?

What you will be concerned with is whether this individual could know that this was a wrong thing. Malice in this way implies the doing of something not socially acceptable, the doing of something wrong.

You will be concerned with whether or not this defendant at that time was able to appreciate that firing bullets into the head of another individual is a thing not generally approved of in our community. Did he know if that was a good thing to do, a bad thing to do? It is

cc to Bu
4/11/69

no more complicated than that.

The state has asked and will continue to ask that you return a verdict of murder in the first degree.

The theory of murder is that Sirhan Sirhan premeditated and deliberated upon his intended act. That involves intent to kill. The intent to kill is something that the defense will, let us say, concede.

It is the issue of premeditation and deliberation that the defense is primarily concerned. Premeditation and deliberation, as distinguished between first and second-degree murder, mean some kind of decision-making process about the act. It is the weighing of arguments pro and con, rather than acting on rash impulse.

The law envisions the possibility that an individual may harbor malice aforethought, they (the law) know the thing he is doing is wrong but he acts so quickly without making the decision as to how he is going to act, so that there is no premeditation.

The law does not prescribe to you to what extent an individual must weigh and premeditate before a calculated goal to kill is formed.

The law says this will depend on the situation and the individual—that a cold, calculated decision to kill may be arrived at within minutes or seconds depending on the circumstances and the individual.

In this case, the people suggest to you that the cold and calculated decision to take the life of Robert F. Kennedy had been arrived at long in advance of Sirhan's arrival at the Ambassador Hotel.

The facts in the opinion of the prosecution lead logically to the conclusion that this defendant did not act in a rash or impulsive manner at the time he fired the bullet into the brain of Robert F. Kennedy at the Ambassador Hotel.

With respect to his state of mind, we are asked to accept when the defendant tells us he first intended to go to the Ambassador Hotel because of the Rafferty party. Sometime in the past, he and Kathleen Rafferty had been in school together. There is no suggestion that Kathleen Rafferty would have been glad to see Sirhan and one would suppose that some years had passed since they had been at school together.

Sirhan had never been much a hand with the ladies but maybe he was looking for Kathleen Rafferty. If so, he went to the Rafferty party and found himself to be some-

what ill-clad. He felt self-conscious, he didn't feel wanted.

In any event, he left the Rafferty room feeling somewhat rancorous.

Outside the Rafferty room he met two people dressed like himself. Some discussion arose about going into the room at all. Sirhan said in effect, "We vote we're part of the public . . . we have a right to go in there."

He then told of giving a girl a \$20 tip. I wish you could know the time we have spent

trying to find the girl he says he gave the \$20 tip to. Maybe it was just Sirhan's big talk, maybe not. Maybe she just didn't want to come forward. Then there is a possibility she feared someone would take the \$20 away from her.

Do we have the state of Sirhan's mind? Is this the expression of the usual Sirhan? Sirhan in his notebook entries, the Sirhan who wrote the manifesto, the Sirhan disillusioned with the American political system.

Mr. Sirhan is 25 years old. He isn't the only young protester. I view with alarm the protests of the last few years. They alarm me and I wonder what will happen a few years from now when these protesters take our places.

Sirhan's view is shared by many. He is not the only one who is disillusioned. His illusions are shared by many. They are not disillusion—illusions perhaps.

But he has an absolute right to have opinions not shared by the majority. It is all right to entertain ideas that this is not the best government, that this is not the best time, that this is not the best of all possible worlds.

In any event, this is Mr. Sirhan. He felt rejected at the Rafferty party.

He is something of a loner. He doesn't want to stay where he is not wanted.

In the light of that, and if Sirhan hated Robert Kennedy as has been made pretty clear, and if he felt he wasn't wanted, why did he stay there?

But stay there he did.

We had the testimony of Hans Bidstrup (Ambassador Hotel electrician), who said he had quite a social conversation and that Sirhan was particularly interested in a man in uniform and interested in the security surrounding Robert Kennedy.

Curious, isn't it?

Four people testified the defendant had something to drink. This was around 10 o'clock. I suggest it was between 9:30 and 10:30 p.m. when they saw him, and on all occasions the defendant had something to drink in his hand, presumably a Tom Collins.

But he wasn't drunk then, nor was he drunk at the time of the assassination. All the evidence of intoxication we have is that of the defendant himself.

He was observed by Judy Royer at the rear of the Embassy Room near the double doors leading to the pantry. She asked him to leave and he complied.

We can infer from the testimony of Martin Petrush that when he accosted Martin Petrush, the senator had at

ready come down from the sixth floor suite and passed through the pantry to the Embassy Room. The defendant approached and asked: "Will he come back that way?"

We don't know where the defendant went after that—Martin Petrusky didn't know. But there are indications he went near the tray rack in the pantry.

We can infer that there he remained with a gun in his waistband waiting for the senator to return in a direction he knew by reason of his knowing the senator had passed before.

According to the testimony of Judy Royer, in any event, it had been decided that the senator would go to the Colonial Room to give the press a break.

From the point of view of the assassination, it doesn't make any difference whether the senator was going to the Colonial Room first or the Ambassador Room first. In one way or the other, he was going both places.

I suggest it was no fortuitous circumstance that Sirhan waited in a place where at one time or another the senator would pass and become a target.

All the logic points to this—his hatred, the notebooks, his visiting the ranges, his rapid fire, his inquiry at the pantry, the loaded gun in his belt, the mini-mag. ammunition, the conduct of the defendant, his statements after his arrest, the cute way he avoided identifying himself in custody.

Add to this another item—his identity left in the glovebox of his car. He has testified, and Adel Sirhan has testified, that the Sirhan boys are in the habit of not carrying their identifications. This strikes me as inconvenient.

The testimony of Weidner (manager of the Pasadena health food store where Sirhan was employed) is somewhat enlightening on this. At least on payday, Sirhan had a wallet in his pocket. He fished it out and put money in it.

(At this point Sirhan rose in an angry outburst and Judge Walker hastily recessed court.)

At the time we stopped for recess, I was discussing the matter of his identification. As far as his employer was concerned, he had carried his identification with him.

I would suggest that perhaps Sirhan was in the habit of carrying his identification with him, but on this evening, with the idea of attempting to escape after having successfully or unsuccessfully attempted to assassinate the senator, did not have his identification.

This is the sort of precaution which a reasonable assassin would take. I don't place any special importance on it, but it is a curious fact for you to consider.

We have these uncontroversial facts:

His firing on the rifle ranges.
His appearance at the hotel.

On June 2, His gun in his waistband. His inquiry with respect to security. His inquiry if the senator would come this way. The manner of assassination, efficient and certainly effective. The statements of the defendant immediately following the apprehension.

We have his somewhat curious verbosity with the police officers, without his ever asking questions about his custodial setting.

To the police mind, which may be somewhat limited, and to the prosecution mind, which is also probably limited, this suggests deliberate and premeditated murder with malice aforethought.

Now with respect to the defendant's state of mind. His testimony is replete with what I consider to be lies, some of it demonstrable, some not.

Anything in this case which would appear to indicate that this was premeditated or deliberated murder is denied by the defendant, regardless of who said it—even by those who were trying to help him, who advance his best interests in this case.

Harking back to Alvin Clark, who told us that Sirhan said, "I am going to kill that s.o.b.," the defendant branded that a lie. Bernard Diamond said it was a "mistake," moreover.

You can appreciate that statement attributed to him by Alvin Clark was an indication of premeditation.

Sirhan said he went to the Ambassador Hotel June 2. If he was as innocent as he tried to tell us, why didn't he admit this to his own counsel? He admitted it to Diamond finally.

because it was known that he had been identified at that time and place.

He says all witnesses who said he was rapid firing were mistaken. Sirhan said an individual next to him in uniform was engaging in rapid fire—this in the fact of testimony by witnesses who saw Sirhan alone.

I will explain Mr. Sirhan's assertion that these were mistaken because Mr. Sirhan appreciates full well that this evidence of premeditation and deliberation on his part—that he appreciates that it would be logical for an assassin to engage in just this kind of firing procedure.

Why does he say that Miriam Davis is lying or mistaken? Because of the position it puts him in on June 2.

Why does he quarrel with William Blum? Because the inference can be drawn from that testimony that Sirhan wasn't interested in seeing the senator outside on the Palm Terrace but that he wanted to seek a vantage point where the senator might be vulnerable.

I should mention the notebooks. The complete denial, even to the psychologists appointed to assist him, of the notebooks and various sheets of paper—some of that is highly unreasonable, such as his denial of school notes.

But the denial of the political content and to all those references to political figures and to Robert F. Kennedy—he renounces the whole thing. One of the reasons he renounces it is typical of his outburst. It is significant in the makeup of the defendant.

In chambers, addressing the judge, he said he would rather plead guilty than have these notebooks come into evidence.

He said: "These notebooks were taken from my house without permission."

That is not an outburst if you will but consider the content. There is a concept of illegal search and seizure, and this is what the defendant was asking. He was indulging in an intellectual argument—harking to certain battles that have been fought outside your presence.

This was not the outburst of an irrational or illogical individual, but of someone whose sense of justice has been upset. That explains some of the other behavior.

But you will note that he has made sense. He hasn't made sense perhaps in the way you are used to, but he is not divorced from reality. This is one of the key issues in this case.

We believe that the defendant is not divorced from the reality of his position as a defendant in a murder case.

It has been suggested that this defendant exists in a delusional state.

The defendant has always had the hope to get away with this. He knows some people don't like what he has done. This hope is alternated with despair.

We come to the claim of amnesia, one in which he has persisted. This is extremely strong evidence that he is not suffering under a delusional system.

This is a defense mechanism working, and a common occurrence. The more heinous the crime, the more one tries to convince us he is not responsible for the act and the more likely it is he will fall back on the defense of, "Well, I just don't remember."

We will talk about amnesia at greater length at some other time.

To change the subject I want to discuss some of the expert defense witnesses. I advance on this area with some trepidation.

I am sorry the defense started with Dr. (Martin M.) Schep because he may have left a bad taste in your mouth with respect to the whole field of clinical psychology.

Let's take the protocol he submitted. I felt it was disgraceful. Subsequent testimony indicated it was disgraceful.

He destroyed whatever tapes he had (of the interviews with Sirhan). When confronted with this, he said, "Well, if I kept all these tapes I wouldn't have any tapes to use, and I have been involved in six murder trials since then."

I suggest that it is disgraceful.

I was concerned by Dr. Richardson's conclusion of grandiosity in Sirhan's character, as demonstrated by his responses on one TAT card and four or five responses on the Rorschach.

This sort of fragmentary information was all that was offered by Dr. Richardson.

To draw the conclusion that this indicated a paranoid concept of grandiosity does violence to judgment and good reason.

Psychological testing is designed to tell us what an

individual is like at the time he takes the test, to tell us things about his makeup which may or may not be apparent on the surface.

I suggest that these psychological tests do not tell us whether Sirhan in the early morning hours of June 5, 1968, was able to harbor malice aforethought or deliberate or premeditate murder in a meaningful way. I suggest quite the contrary.

I am not going to go through all of Dr. Schorr's report. I want to talk about what Dr. Olinger referred to as plagiarism.

In taking language from Dr. Brussel's book—the things that concerns me about this is what was demonstrated on Dr. Olinger's tenth precaution, the reportorial style of psychology.

Remember his word viper, which he said was an acronym standing for ventilation, instruction, persuasion, entertainment, and recording.

When he borrowed this particular language, Dr. Schorr was concentrating on the "e"—entertainment.

I suggest to you that the conclusion can be drawn that entertainment in a report is inappropriate in a courtroom of a capital case, particularly with respect to the killing of Senator Kennedy.

Dr. Schorr is personally by me consigned to oblivion in my argument.

He was followed by Dr. Richardson. Dr. Richardson's protocol was a far more workmanlike job.

I think Dr. Richardson is a pretty good mechanic, but he also displayed certain limitations.

Dr. Richardson almost invariably responded to my suggestions with "Mr. Fitts, that is not in the literature."

To my way of thinking, a little something more is required in the interpretations of the Horsbachi.

Something significant is what Dr. Olinger said, that the administration of these tests would be influenced somewhat by the relationship of the examiner to the examinee. It suggests to me that Sirhan's degree of cooperation or eagerness to please Dr. Richardson was totally lacking with Dr. Schorr.

This may explain some of the discrepancies which exist between the results obtained by the two.

Four other psychologists testified in this case—Dr. Howard, Dr. Craig, Dr. Seaward and Dr. DeVos. They all said in effect, "me, too."

I just don't see how profes-

The only explanation I have for this is that it is somewhat like the problem of eliciting the aid of other physicians in a malpractice case. They all belong to the same fraternity . . . There is a certain reluctance on the part of even reluctant people to come to court and knock the profession.

Now to the psychiatrists—we have heard from three. Psychology is an art; psychiatry deserves the label of science. But if psychiatry is a science, one is going to expect some kind of agreement which was not reached by the three psychiatrists who were in this courtroom.

Dr. Eric Marcus, who testified for the defense, distinguished himself from the others in that he never expressed a clinical diagnosis of Sirhan, which I find somewhat interesting.

Dr. Marcus said the usual Sirhan . . . is incapable of

malice, of knowing he is doing the wrong thing when he is doing the wrong thing.

It doesn't compare at all with Dr. Diamond's testimony. Dr. Diamond tells us that the usual Sirhan is a harmless individual. Dr. Diamond didn't seem to find this defendant clinically psychotic either.

I have suggested to you that Sirhan lied to us all and with a very logical reason—to avoid the full consequences of the act at the Ambassador Hotel. Anything he can suggest to you that he went to the Ambassador Hotel almost by chance and that the gun arrived fortuitously in his hand is grist for his mill.

Dr. Diamond also is a Johnny-come-lately in this trial. It is quite possible that this defendant in custody had already structured some sort of story which he hoped would exonerate him from the crime he had committed.

Dr. Seymour Pollack, studying the transcript and talking with the family, concluded (Sirhan's condition) could be explained as that of a young man always living in a minority . . . a bit of an introvert, a bit of a failure, a person who fell off a horse . . . not autistic in the way the term has been described.

It is conceded by both sides that Mr. Sirhan is not a well man. The question is how sick is he. The question is what does "mature" mean. The question is what does "meaningful" mean.

"Mature"—old enough to procreate, ripe for picking. Does it mean you must have the global view of the world of a great sage or philosopher? What exactly is "mature"?

What is "meaningful"? How much is the individual required to read into his contemplated act before it becomes meaningful?

No individual after mature and meaningful reflection would commit murder.

Yet murder is commonplace in our society. What are we to do with individuals who commit this?

We deal in a society that is still grappling with the solutions to the problem of crime, still grappling as best it might with what can be described as criminal responsibility.

In terms of evaluating human conduct, we seem to be back just where we are here—with 12 people in a box. Twelve representatives of society judging human conduct as they deem it best for society . . . setting standards. There is nothing better than the jury system. No computer can do better, and nobody is even trying to invent a computer that can.

We admit Sirhan is less than the full man. How much less I don't know. He is the man you have seen in court, the man who testified on the witness stand eagerly . . . with flair, with intelligence somewhat unusual in criminal courts if you accept my word for it.

He is the man who testified) with the ability to anticipate—he could hardly wait for his counsel to ask the next question—with a sense of the theatrical. He deliberately chose to use four-letter words, then looked sheepishly at the judge and said, "Excuse me, your honor." Do you think that man at the counsel table didn't know what he was doing? I am certain that he did.

This man in the early morning hours of June 5 had some conversation with police officers. You have heard about him, what sort of intelligence he had, what sort of person he is. Somewhere on this continuum from 0 to 100 is Sirhan with what you wish to ascribe to him.

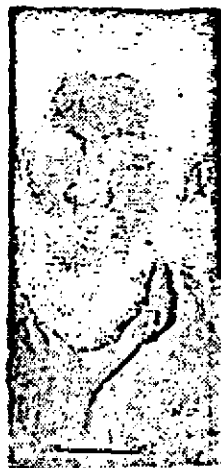
The question is, that given the degree of mental illness or diminished capacity if you will that Sirhan has, he yet had the ability to harbor malice and maturely and meaningfully, whatever it means to you, premeditate and deliberate on what it means to take the life of a fellow human being. That is your job.

Thank you.

COURT RECESSED









—Herald-Examiner Photo

DEPUTY DISTRICT ATTORNEY DAVID FITTS
Tells jury Sirhan acted with malice aforethought

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Staff to Counter State Salvo

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Defense attorneys in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial today will try to counteract a stinging prosecution summation which ridiculed much of the psychiatric defense and called for his conviction for first degree murder.

Russell E. Parsons, lawyer whom Sirhan regards as a father figure, will open the defense summation with an account of the childhood of the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

The defense contends mental scars inflicted on Sirhan when he was a child in his native Palestine laid the groundwork for the mental disintegration which ultimately led to his June 5, 1968, fatal shooting of Sen. Kennedy at the Ambassador Hotel.

Parsons and his associates, Emile Zola Berman and Grant B. Cooper, who will follow him in talking to the jury of seven men and five women, will try to overcome the impression Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts made on the jurors yesterday in a three-hour and 10-minute summation.

In that speech, the jurors heard Sirhan denounced as a "liar," and psychological testimony offered on his behalf dismissed as "entertainment . . . pure entertainment."

Sirhan erupted into a brief temper tantrum early in Fitts' summation when he was de-

scribed as having lied by the prosecutor.

"He's lying, he's lying," Sirhan screamed at the jury as he rose from his chair with clenched fists.

Bailiffs quickly restrained Sirhan and hustled him from the court room as a short recess was declared.

Fitts, in a surprisingly dramatic presentation, lashed into the defense case, calling it "rubbish . . . incredible . . . absurd. . ."

Three weeks of defense testimony sought to paint Sirhan as a seriously ill mental cripple, who killed Sen. Kennedy while in a self-induced trance.

But the reality of Sirhan, Fitts told the jury, "is the man you see in this court . . . the man who testified on the witness stand with a certain dramatic flair. . ."

A man with intelligence somewhat unusual in the criminal courts."

Sirhan has the ability to anticipate, Fitts said, and could "hardly wait for his lawyers to finish a question so that he could answer."

"Sirhan has a sense of the theatrical," said Fitts, ". . . and deliberately chose to use four-letter words . . . then he would smile at the judge and say, 'Excuse me your honor.'"

Turning toward Sirhan, Fitts demanded, "Do you think this man seated at the counsel table did not know what he was doing? I am certain that he did."

The defense contention that Sirhan is mentally ill was not disputed by Fitts.

"We concede he's sick," the prosecutor said.

"How sick? That's a question for you to decide. I'm glad to think he's a bit sick, because I can't imagine anyone in the Ambassador Hotel stepping from a tray rack and firing at Sen. Kennedy and not being sick. If a crime is committed by a normal person, that would be cause for alarm. What's a sick man? — a departure from normal."

Following this, the prosecutor tore into the psychiatric and psychological testimony in the Sirhan case with a slashing scorn and derision.

His first target was San Diego clinical psychologist Dr. Martin M. Schorr, who gave the defendant a battery of psychological tests in November and testified later he found him to "be a paranoid-schizophrenic—a mentally ill person who suffered delusions of persecution and who felt the conflict of two personalities within himself."

Fitts pointed out that newsmen had discovered that Dr. Schorr had copied much of his report on Sirhan word for word from a "casebook" published last year by former New York State Mental Hygiene Commissioner Dr. James Brus-

Beyond that, the prosecutor charged, Dr. Schorr had injected his own personality into his evaluation of Sirhan's psyche.

Reading the San Diego man's evaluation of Sirhan's responses to the Rorschach (ink blot) test, Fitts commented sarcastically, "That's pure Schorrism."

Dr. Schorr's evaluation of Sirhan is "pure entertainment," Fitts said.

He continued:

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-10-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or 56-156
Classification:
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-34-769
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
1 APR 10 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

cc to Bu
4/11/69

"Entertainment is inappropriate in a court room in a capital case . . . particularly in the case of the assassination of Sen. Kennedy.

"I have consigned Dr. Schorr to oblivion in my argument."

The prosecutor said that he had more respect for the evaluation of Dr. O. Roderick Richardson, who also reported Sirhan is mentally ill. But, he insisted, Dr. Richardson is a textbook psychologist where, "a little something more is required."

Dr. Richardson, according to Fitts, "does not take common sense into account."

Fitts said that he was disturbed that four other psychologists had taken the Schorr-Richardson raw data, and come to the conclusion Sirhan was seriously ill.

"They all in effect said, 'Me too,' he complained.

Alluding to Dr. Schorr's testimony, he told the jury, "I just don't see how these psychologists said 'Me too' to that, yet they've 'Me, tooed' the whole shebang."

He ascribed this to the fact that psychologists "all belong to the same fraternity."

He compared their reluctance to counter their colleagues to the reluctance of physicians to testify in malpractice suits.

But, he pointed out, one psychologist — Dr. Leonard Olin — who testified for the prosecution — had examined the Schorr-Richardson data and concluded it did not show serious mental illness in Sirhan.

"There is always somebody who has guts enough . . . to say the profession is ill served," he said.

Turning to psychiatric testimony in the case, he first told the jury that Dr. Eric Marcus, West Los Angeles psychiatrist who examined Sirhan, said he was of diminished mental capacity, but refused to offer a diagnosis of the young Arab's illness.

For the chief of Sirhan's defense battery, Dr. Bernard L. Diamond of Berkeley, Fitts reserved his deepest scorn.

Dr. Diamond testified on the basis of hypno-therapy of Sirhan that the defendant learned to hypnotize himself through the practice of the occult, and was in a self-induced trance when he shot Kennedy.

Fitts recalled that evaluating his own theory Dr. Diamond had testified:

"I agree this is an absurd, preposterous story . . . unlikely and incredible. . . ."

"It is impossible to have the last word with Dr. Diamond. . . . Let him have the last word."

Central question raised by the psychiatric testimony in the case, Fitts told the jurors, is whether Sirhan was mentally responsible for the shooting "in the early hours of June 5."

It is conceded by both sides

that Mr. Sirhan is not a well man," he said. "The question is, 'How sick is he?'"

Psychological tests are valid only in determining the individual's state of mind at the time he takes the test, Fitts said. They can not predict future conduct, or account for past conduct.

The tests, and the psychiatric interviews were aimed at determining whether Sirhan was capable of "meaningfully and maturely" plotting and carrying out the killing of Kennedy, Fitts said. He warned the jurors that in the long run they would have to decide this for themselves as jurors, not psychologists.

He said:

"The question is what does 'mature' mean. The question is what does 'meaningful' mean."

"Mature — old enough to procreate, ripe for picking. Does it mean you must have the global view of the world of the great sage of philosopher?"

"Does it mean as contemplative in judgment as anyone of you on the jury?"

"What exactly is 'mature'?"

"What is 'meaningful'? How much is the individual required to read into a contemplated act before it becomes meaningful? "No individual, after mature and meaningful reflection would commit murder. Yet murder is commonplace in our society."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

State Opens Summary in Sirhan Murder Trial

1st-Degree Verdict Demanded in Spite of Mental Illness

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan is mentally sick, the prosecution conceded Wednesday, but not so sick that he could not plan, coolly, carefully and for a long time to murder Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Opening the summation of the prosecution's case against the 25-year-old defendant, Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts told the jury of five women seven men:

"The state will urge you to return a verdict of murder in the first degree."

In an impressive four-hour summation delivered entirely without notes, Fitts waved aside psychiatric theory and marshaled an imposing chronology leading up to the June 5 shooting of Kennedy on the eve of his victory in California's Democratic presidential primary.

As he piled up the facts one by one, Fitts said they showed a consistent, developing premeditation to murder Kennedy.

Outlines Course of Events

Fitts outlined this story:

On Feb. 5, 1968, Sirhan bought a pistol from a friend of his brother, Munir. The purchase took place on a street corner at night near Sirhan's home. Fitts said Sirhan may or may not have decided by that time to kill Kennedy, but he termed the gun purchase a "surreptitious transaction."

Before and after that time, Sirhan had been writing his political views in his notebooks—views that "were replete with hostility to the United States government" and ultimately took the form of statements that certain political figures must be killed.

On June 1, Sirhan went to a Corona gun range to practice, but was turned away because only large-bore weapons were permitted on the range that day.

Goes to Kennedy Reception

The next night, Sirhan went to the Ambassador for a Kennedy reception because, Sirhan said, he loved and admired Kennedy and wanted to shake his hand.

But at that reception, Sirhan was observed moving away from the crowded areas where Kennedy was, and later was seen in a kitchen area, through which Kennedy passed to avoid mobs. This, said Fitts, could have been merely a "familiarization run," or Sirhan may have planned to shoot Kennedy that night, if the chance arose.

Later, in the pantry area where Kennedy ultimately was shot, Sirhan asked employees if the senator "would be coming back this way"—indicating that Sirhan knew Kennedy had already passed that way once.

As for Kennedy's last-minute change of plan in going to the Colonial Room before the Ambassador Ballroom—which the defense claimed Sirhan couldn't have known about and thus confronted Kennedy by accident—Fitts said it wasn't an accident at all.

Kennedy was scheduled to go to both rooms anyway, using the pantry as his route, and when he did so would have been merely a matter of time. All Sirhan had to do was wait.

Sirhan's lack of identification

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 Los Angeles
Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4-10-69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. William
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angel

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-768

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 10 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
4-10-69

when he was arrested also showed premeditation, Fitts said. Sirhan's wallet was later found in the glove compartment of his car, and Sirhan testified that he never carried his wallet on him.

But Fitts recalled an earlier witness' testimony that on one occasion when Sirhan needed his wallet, he simply pulled it from his hip pocket. Leaving the wallet behind on June 4, Fitts said, was a deliberate plan to avoid identification.

It was at this point that Sirhan, following Fitts' performance with piercing looks, erupted with "He's lying, he's lying, he's lying!"

The Palestinian Arab's voice rose and he began to struggle to his feet. Defense counsel and security officers plopped him back into his chair, quieted him and then ushered him out.

"I'm not going to put up with this —," Sirhan snapped as he strode out.

After cooling off in an adjacent room for 20 minutes, Sirhan was led back in and listened quietly but intently as Fitts continued.

Frank Contempt

Sirhan is expected to have a far harder time reining his temper when coprosecutors John E. Howard and Lynn D. Compton make their arguments. Both are considerably more blunt in expressing their disbelief in Sirhan's intricate psychiatric defense.

For all the relaxed precision of Fitts' summation, he was nonetheless frank in his contempt for defense witness Martin M. Schorr, a San Diego clinical psychologist who diagnosed Sirhan as a paranoid schizophrenic.

Terming the psychiatric testimony of 10 expert witnesses "a quagmire," Fitts told the jury: "Our psychiatric lesson begins in a most peculiar way. Dr. Schorr . . . I'm really sorry the defense started with him, because I'm afraid he may have left a bad taste in your mouths regarding the whole profession."

Letter to Defense Recalled

Fitts said a letter Schorr wrote to defense attorney Russell Parsons last July showed that he was "soliciting to be permitted to assist in selection of the jury." Fitts implied this was an attempt to stack the jury with people sympathetic to a defense of mental illness.

Fitts said Schorr's testimony was "disgraceful" and questioned Schorr's competence on several points, including Schorr's unsuccessful effort to tape his interviews with Sirhan.

Schorr testified that his recording equipment caused the tape to stick and said that he erased the partially garbled interviews so that he could use the tape again.

"In a case of this magnitude," said Fitts, Schorr's failure to produce tape recordings, or a verbatim record, or even to testify from full notes, was "inexplicable and deplorable."

Cites Errors

As to Schorr's interpretation of Sirhan's test responses, Fitts recalled one reference Schorr made to Nathan Hale as "the man without a country." Schorr later corrected himself, saying he had been reminded that Edward Everett Hale was "the man without a country."

Schorr was wrong both times, said Fitts. Edward Everett Hale was the author of a short story of that name, and the character was named Philip Nolan. Schorr's double-barreled error, Fitts said, "tells us a lot about the intellectual acumen he brings to this case."

Fitts also attacked the testimony of Dr. Bernard L. Diamond, UC Berkeley professor of criminology, psychiatry and law, with whom Fitts engaged in sharp courtroom clashes.

'Whole Cloth'

Fitts said Sirhan had been in jail for six months before Diamond entered the case, that Sirhan had "structured his story" of the crime, and that Diamond "bought" Sirhan's story "out of whole cloth."

Recalling Diamond's statement that he "agreed" that Sirhan's defense was "an absurd and preposterous story, unlikely and incredible," Fitts read his own question to Diamond about whom he was agreeing with. Diamond's reply was, "I agree with the world."

His voice dripping contempt and disbelief, Fitts said, "Well, I can't improve on Dr. Diamond—if that's what he thinks of his story. You realize it was impossible to have the last word on Dr. Diamond. So I'll let him have the last word."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Jury Hears Closing Arguments

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Closing defense and prosecution arguments in the Sirhan-Rishara Sirhan murder trial are set to open today when Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts begins summation of the case against the admitted slayer of Robert F. Kennedy before a jury of seven men and five women.

Fitts, number three man of the triumvirate of prosecutors who for the past three months have presented the case against Sirhan, will be followed by all three members of the young Arab's defense battery.

Prosecutors expect Fitts' address to the jury to consume most of today — the 57th day of the trial. When he concludes, if there is a penalty trial, Russell E. Parsons, defense lawyer whom Sirhan is said to be presented by Dep. Dist. Atty. regard almost as a "father figure," will begin the defense summation. Parsons' summation, he says, will take about an hour.

He will be followed by his colleague, Emile Zola Berman, who also is scheduled for a relatively short speech. Chief defense counsel Grant B. Cooper will deliver the defense's major push. It is expected that Cooper will take more than a day to conclude the case for the admitted assassin.

The defense is involved in an all-out attempt to save the life of the man who on June 3, 1968, fatally shot the New York Senator and presidential aspirant at the Ambassador Hotel. Cooper and his associates openly concede they have no chance of acquittal, and but a slim possibility of getting anything less than a first-degree murder verdict.

Howard said that part of the delay was caused by procedural matters and part by a disagreement over proposed instructions to the jury.

Should the jury return a verdict of first-degree murder, the trial will then move to another stage — the so-called penalty phase in which the jury will decide whether Sirhan is sentenced to death or life in prison.

Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton has said that the state will not demand the death penalty for Sirhan. But neither, he said, will it advise the jury to bring in a life sentence. Compton said the jurors will be told that the district attorney's office considers either life or death an "appropriate penalty" for the Kennedy slaying.

Compton will conclude the presentation of the prosecution case, under present plans, when the defense summation is concluded.

Following the arguments on both sides, Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding over the trial, must sum up the law in the case for the jury. Defense and prosecution suggestions to the jurist in how this should be done yesterday forced a halt to opening proceedings in the trial.

Original plans called for Fitts to begin his summation at the afternoon session. However, an in-chambers conference on Judge Walker's instructions called after the 90th and final witness — psychologist Dr. Leonard Olinger — completed his testimony ground the trial to a stop.

Howard said that part of the delay was caused by procedural matters and part by a disagreement over proposed instructions to the jury.

While neither side would comment on the disagreement, there were authoritative reports that the two sides were split as to the fine details of the law of "diminished capacity" in California. The defense of diminished capacity is the core of Sirhan's case.

The law provides, in effect, that if the jury believes that Sirhan lacks the mental capacity to "meaningfully and maturely" premeditate and carry out Sen. Kennedy's killing, he cannot be sentenced to death — even though he admits the slaying. A battery of defense and prosecution psychologists and psychiatrists have said he lacks this capacity. Dr. Olinger and psychiatrist Dr. Seymour Pollack have testified that in their opinion, he does have this capacity. Guided by the law as it is given them by Judge Walker, the jury will make the final decision.

Judge Walker has been at work on his instructions to the jury for the past several weeks. However, each side has the right to offer additional suggestions to the jurist at the close of the case.

Lawyer's summations and Judge Walker's instructions are expected to take the remainder of this week. It is now expected the jury will get the case Monday.

Meanwhile, Sirhan waits. Michael McCowan, chief defense investigator and a close friend of the 25-year-old defendant, reported yesterday that Sirhan is in good spirits.

He believes his attorneys have done "their best for him," McCowan told newsmen, and "hopes for the best."

Parsons added that Sirhan is so optimistic that he looks forward to a prison sentence of not too long duration and to returning to his native Jordan when he has served that sentence.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4-9-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-767
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED

APR 10 1969
FBI — LOS ANGELES

cct to Bureau
4-10-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Questioning of 90th Witness Ends Testimony in Sirhan Trial

Both Sides Rest After Tough Defense Cross-Examination
of Psychologist on Diagnosis of Defendant's Mental State

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

Prosecution and defense rested Tuesday in the murder trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan.

After 10 months in jail and three months of a harrowing and tedious trial, the 25-year-old assassin of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy betrayed not a flicker of interest as defense attorney Grant B. Cooper finished cross-examination of the prosecution's last witness, psychologist Leonard B. Olinger.

He was the 90th witness to testify in one of the longest trials in Los Angeles County history.

Olinger was the last of 10 psychologists and psychiatrists to testify as to Sirhan's mental state when he killed Kennedy. Olinger's opinion differed sharply not only with the eight expert witnesses for the defense but also with the prosecution's star witness, psychiatrist Seymour Pollack.

Defense testimony painted Sirhan as a paranoid psychotic with schizophrenic reaction, unaware of and unable to control his actions when he shot Kennedy last June 5.

Pollack termed Sirhan a paranoid personality with a borderline schizophrenia but held that his mental illness did not reduce his capacity to maturely and meaningfully premeditate and carry out murder.

Olinger, while agreeing with Pollack that Sirhan was not a victim of diminished capacity in his planning of Kennedy's death, diagnosed Sirhan as a "pseudo-neurotic schizophrenic"—which he said is not a recognized clinical label for real psychosis but a more descriptive term for a condition much less

serious than even Pollack had found.

Olinger flushed frequently under a blistering cross-examination by Cooper, who sought to draw an admission that Olinger solicited his way into the case only last month.

Olinger said he telephoned the prosecution shortly after psychologist Martin M. Schorr began testimony. Olinger said he disagreed with inferences in Schorr's testimony that he had read in the newspapers.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 LA Times
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-9-69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Willie
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angel

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED

1 APR 9 1969

FBI — LOS ANGELES

cct Bureau
4-9-69

Olinger's own testimony Monday about the care psychologists must take in interpreting clinical tests, Cooper asked if Olinger hadn't violated his own precautions in forming attitudes about the Sirhan case on the basis of newspaper accounts. Olinger said he hadn't.

Citing Olinger's testimony that Schorr and other psychologists, knowing whose tests they were evaluating, might have interpreted the tests in a way that matched their preconceived notions about Sirhan, Cooper then asked Olinger if he hadn't also known in advance whose tests he was interpreting and whether he hadn't been slightly influenced by that knowledge.

"Some," said Olinger.

Cooper also launched an oblique attack on Olinger's professional qualifications as compared to those of whom, Cooper noted, were professors of psychiatry at USC and UC Berkeley. Olinger is a part-time instructor in abnormal psychology in USC's extension division.

Cooper asked repeatedly why Olinger had phoned the prosecution rather than the defense, and Olinger replied, "I believed I could be of help."

"Not to the defense," Cooper interjected.

"Not particularly to the defense," Olinger said.

"To the prosecution?" asked Cooper.

"Not particularly to the prosecution," said Olinger.

"Then whom did you believe you could help?" Cooper asked.

"I thought I could help justice," Olinger replied.

"In giving information to the prosecution?" asked Cooper.

"In this case, yes," Olinger said.

Bias Charged

Cooper reiterated his belief that Olinger had offered his services to only one side without having seen any of Sirhan's clinical tests and that in forming his opinions on the basis of publicity, Olinger was guilty of the same bias and distortion Olinger had laid to defense witnesses.

Olinger's appearance was the capsule of more than a month's obscure, technical psychiatric jargon, in which both the defense and the prosecution waged a hot war of psychiatric attrition.

The defense sought to command the jury's respect for their case by stunning them with expert witnesses of both solid and/or glittering reputation and with no fewer than six clinical psychologists who corroborated and confirmed and corroborated yet again the findings of the others.

The prosecution chose, with its two experts, to try to deflate the defense theories with sober, logical outlines of verifiable fact. In cross-examination of defense experts they inched painstakingly, sometimes maddeningly, over and over the same tiny technical points.

Weak Spots Sought

The stated aim was to find and enlarge weak spots in the ornate psychiatric facade erected by the defense.

But the more likely aim appeared to be to thoroughly sicken the jury on all psychiatric testimony, pushing jurors from confusion through boredom and to such exasperation that they might wave aside all expert testimony and weigh the case solely on these facts:

That Sirhan hated Zionism and its allies, wrote of his intention to kill Kennedy, did so and isn't sorry.

As the prosecution prepared its final arguments, Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn Compton confirmed what has been common knowledge since early February—that the prosecution will not press for the death penalty for Sirhan. Nor will they ask the jury not to impose it.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Posters in Arab Nations Depict Sirhan as Hero

Above Picture Are Words 'A Commando,
Not Assassin'; Many in English, French

BY WILLIAM TUOHY

Times Staff Writer

BEIRUT—The Palestine Liberation Organization has begun distributing posters depicting Sirhan B. Sirhan—who is undergoing trial for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy—as a heroic Arab commando.

Several hundred thousand posters are reportedly being distributed in Arab countries, according to the PLO, while others have been printed in English and French for use in Europe.

A sample poster was recently carried on Page 1 in a Beirut Arabic-language newspaper. It carries a large picture of Sirhan, and in front of him is a drawing of a Palestinian guerrilla with a rifle.

Above the picture are the words: "Sirhan Bishara Sirhan: A commando not an assassin."

The poster adds that "Zionist quarters in America" were trying to distort the motive for Sirhan's action in slaying Sen. Kennedy.

Significant Development

The circulation of the posters—adopting Sirhan as a member of the Palestinian cause—is the most significant development in Arab reaction to the Sirhan trial, sources here say.

The trial has been widely reported in the Arab press and followed closely.

However, because of a decision by Arab governments to adopt a hands-off

policy on the Sirhan case, very little editorial comment has been made about the trial.

One of the few occasions when Arab editorialists complained came when psychiatric testimony at the trial suggested that Sirhan had killed Kennedy while mentally deranged.

"Sirhan is not a madman," argued one editor.

Indeed, the latest move by the PLO to establish Sirhan as a commando hero suggests that the Arabs consider that Sirhan is sane, and merely is behaving like a Palestinian patriot.

Position on Sanity

"There has been an awful lot of testimony at the trial in Los Angeles about Sirhan's sanity," says one veteran Arab affairs specialist here, "but if you go into one of those Palestinian refugee camps in Jordan, you will find a lot of people with the same mental makeup as Sirhan."

The commandos hope, in their widely distributed posters, to capitalize on the extremist view that Sirhan was acting rationally on behalf of the Palestinian guerrillas—to wipe out a hated enemy.

One Cairo paper suggested bringing Sirhan's defense lawyers to the Middle East so that "they can know what the Palestinian question really is."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-23 LA Times
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-9-69

Edition: Home

Author: William Tuohy

Editor: Nick B. Willin

Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Ang

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-715

SEARCHED INDEXED

SERIALIZED FILED

1 APR 9 1969

FBI - LOS ANGELES

ccto Bureau
4-9-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

State Will Not Ask Death For Sirhan

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Prosecutors in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial will not demand the death penalty for the admitted assassin of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

The state's decision was disclosed yesterday by Chief Deputy Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton as the case against the 25-year-old Jordanian immigrant neared its end.

Compton explained that on the basis of prosecution and defense evidence, much of it psychological in nature, the prosecution had decided it would not seek death in San Quentin's gas chamber for Sirhan.

However, the busy chief prosecutor emphasized the prosecution will not be a party to seeking leniency for Sirhan. His plan, he disclosed, is to tell the jury that in the opinion of the district attorney's office, either death, or life imprisonment is an "appropriate penalty" in the Sirhan case.

It is now expected that the Sirhan case will go to the jury either Friday or next Monday. The prosecution expects the seven men and five women to bring in a verdict of first degree murder. Defense attorneys hope for a lesser degree, but privately concede that first degree will be the decision. The issue of the death penalty would then arise in the next phase of the case... the so-called penalty trial.

If all goes according to schedule, the defense may begin its summation to the jury this afternoon.

When court resumes this morning, prosecution clinical psychologist Dr. Leonard Olinger will be back in the witness box.

Dr. Olinger, University of Southern California lecturer and psychologist in private practice, believes Sirhan is not seriously mentally ill. So concerned did he become by claims of defense alienists that the young Arab does suffer serious mental impairment, he volunteered his services to Deputy Dist. Atty. John Howard.

As Dr. Olinger sees Sirhan: He is... relatively intact... hardly impaired, gifted in certain imaginative ways, capable of seeing the overview, proceeding in a highly organized method, giving a harmonious kind of performance.

"... There is an indication that there is some measure of control over emotions, good ability to make judgments, even if these do not correspond to the judgments of other people, remarkably little distortion of the material or of the individual's perception of the outside world. ... Despite his fundamental differences in political views, he holds to them on the basis of ideas, notions, and value systems that are important to him. ... There are some indices of character disorder. Most indices are of neurosis... especially hysteria and obsessive compulsion. There are few indices of schizophrenia — (divided personality)."

Asked to pin a specific label on Sirhan, Dr. Olinger summed up, "He would be a borderline schizophrenia with principally neurotic features... suffering from pseudo-neurotic schizophrenia."

Howard then asked the psychologist if on June 5, 1968, when Sirhan admittedly shot Kennedy at the Ambassador Hotel,

he had the capability to "meaningfully and maturely premeditate and carry out the killing."

Dr. Olinger replied:

"The (psychological) tests strongly suggest that he could."

Dr. Olinger treated with scorn the evaluation that defense psychologist Dr. Martin M. Schan and his court-appointed colleague Dr. O. Roderick Richardson gave to a battery of psychological tests given Sirhan.

Their test scoring lacked "integrity," he testified.

Looking at the same tests, the psychologist said, he found Sirhan, "well within the range of normal."

He added that it was his belief that neither Dr. Schorr nor Dr. Richardson had given sufficient weight to the fact that Sirhan has been jailed for several months and faces a capital murder charge in evaluating his tests.

Sirhan has not seen the sun, nor the outdoors since early last June when he was transferred from the central county jail to an isolation cell in the Hall of Justice.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-8-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Gooden
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Ange.

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-764

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 APR 9 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

167/2

cc to Bureau
4-9-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Not as Sick as Painted, Witness Claims

Jurors Struggle With Psychiatric Terms as USC Expert Testifies

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Like students in a classroom, jurors in Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's murder trial struggled Monday with the language of psychiatry as a 10th and final expert witness testified that Robert F. Kennedy's killer is not as sick as he has been painted.

Dr. Leonard B. Olinger, instructor in abnormal psychology at USC, disagreed with two previous clinical psychologists' diagnosis of Sirhan as a paranoid psychotic with schizophrenic reaction.

Olinger said he believed that Dr. Martin M. Schorr and Dr. O. Roderick Richardson, knowing they were testing the man who killed Kennedy, approached Sirhan with preconceived notions of what they should find, and subsequently interpreted test data in light of their expectations.

After his own analysis of the data only last month, Olinger testified, Sirhan appeared to him to be suffering "pseudo-neurotic schizophrenia"—a form of mental disturbance far less serious and more nearly normal than Schorr and Richardson and six other defense psychologists and psychiatrists diagnosed.

Affirmative Answers Cited

In disputing Schorr's diagnosis, Olinger said Sirhan was not showing paranoid tendencies but common sense when he gave affirmative answers to these true-false statements:

"I know who is responsible for my trouble."

"I am sure I am being talked about."

"I have been in trouble with the law."

"I have enemies who wish to harm me."

"I tend to be on guard around people who are friendlier than I expect them to be."

"I feel uneasy indoors."

As Sirhan had been jailed since June 5, Olinger said, his positive answers to all these indicated that he "had good contact with reality" and that his suspicions weren't paranoid but all too true.

Facial Expressions Vary

However, the effect of Olinger's testimony on the jury, while difficult to determine exactly, was hardly galvanizing. For more than a month they have listened to such psychiatric verbal shorthand as "C-prime response," "small animal movement," "inanimate movement," "large human movement," "pure form response," "large M and small fm," "large F and little c" and "TH column."

It is debatable how efficiently the jurors have been able to translate such arbitrary terms into their meaningful emotional equivalents. But the mere effort has exacted a toll that was apparent Monday as they listened to still more of the same with faces that ranged a gamut of expression from boredom to stupefaction.

Olinger enunciated what he termed the 10 basic precautions to be observed in administering psychological tests—two of which, he made clear, he felt Schorr and

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 LA Times
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-8-69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Willis
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angel

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-763
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
8
FBI - LOS ANGELES

cc to Bureau
4/8/69

Richardson had violated.

These were "the law of parsimony, or Occam's Razor"—giving the simplest, most factual interpretation of data—and the "Procrustean Fallacy." This last derives from Greek mythology, in which the robber Procrustes thrust his victims into a bed and then stretched the short ones to fit the bed or lopped off the tall ones at the head or knees.

Ripples of amusement alternated with mutters of confusion in the courtroom as testimony translated into talk of how this or that interpretation was "fitted for a Procrustean bed."

Sirhan, meanwhile, seemed frankly disinter-

ested for most of the day.

Defense Attorney Grant B. Cooper began cross-examination by asking Olinger how he had been engaged by the prosecution.

Agreed to Testify

"I suggested myself to them," Olinger said, disclosing that he phoned Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn Compton last month, shortly after Schorr began testifying, and offered consultation.

Compton told reporters later that Olinger had not wanted to testify, but later agreed after he had examined the defense consultants' test results.

Cooper then asked Olinger whether an instructor or a professor held higher academic rank at USC.

Olinger said professors were of higher rank.

Then Cooper asked Olinger if he was aware that Dr. Georgene Seward of USC and Dr. George DeVos of UC Berkeley—both clinical psychologists and of professorial rank—had concurred in Schorr's and Richardson's diagnosis of Sirhan as a paranoid schizophrenic.

Olinger replied that he had not been.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Case Last Expert On Stand

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy moves into what could be its final week today with but one more prosecution witness to be heard.

Defense attorneys say they have but five minutes more testimony to put before the jury of seven men and five women.

It is expected the jury will begin deliberations on the fate of the young Arab by Friday. At issue will be the degree of penalty to be fixed for his admitted slaying of Kennedy last June 5 at the Ambassador Hotel.

Defense lawyers hope that the jury will bring in a verdict of second degree murder, but they concede that they expect a first degree verdict.

If this happens, the jury will then have to decide what penalty Sirhan must pay: Death in San Quentin's gas chamber, or a life sentence—probably served at the Adult Authority's hospital facility at Vacaville. A suite—really an isolation cell complex—is already being readied for Sirhan there.

Should the jury find for the death penalty, there is a strong possibility that Sirhan would wait out his appeal time at Vacaville, rather than on San Quentin's death row. It is also probable that it would be many years before a capital sentence could be carried out—if in fact it ever could be carried out.

The batting order for this week's proceedings as lawyers for both sides see it is this:

Prosecution psychologist Dr. Leonard Orlinger of USC will take the stand when court opens today. It is expected he will be asked by the prosecutors to discredit the Rorschach, or ink-blot tests, used by defense psychologists in their determination that Sirhan is a split personality with delusions of persecution. There is no agreement in the psychology discipline as to the value of the Rorschach test.

Dep. Dist. Atty. John Howard says that Dr. Orlinger will be his last witness. Chief defense attorney Grant B. Cooper indicated, when court recessed for the Easter holiday last week, that his rebuttal will take "less than five minutes." He did not elaborate.

Both sides, beginning with the defense will then sum up their cases for the jury. It will then become Judge Herbert V. Walker's turn to instruct the jury as to the law it is to consider in reaching its verdict.

Once the case goes to the jury there is no way of predicting how long reaching a verdict will take, or what that verdict will be. The jurors have four courses open to them:

- They can acquit Sirhan.
- They can find him guilty of manslaughter.
- They can bring in a verdict of second degree murder.
- They can decree murder in the first degree.

Should the jury do the latter, it then must decide if the 25-year-old Jordanian immigrant should live or die. This decision would come at the end of a second trial—called the penalty phase—at which Sirhan's lawyers can indicate why he should live, and the prosecution, if it so chooses, could say why Sirhan should be executed.

If jury deliberations are short, a decision in the Sirhan case could come this week.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 4-7-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angel

☐ Being Investigated

cc to Bureau
4-8-69

56-156-21-767
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
APR 8 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SIRHAN FELT 'BUGGED'

Tried to Avoid Trial

By MYRNA OLIVER
Herald Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan tried several times to avoid his almost-concluded murder trial by attempting to plead guilty to the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, a prosecution psychiatrist has said.

"In his interviews with me, he said he was through with the whole damned thing, that he was tired of the psychiatrists bugging him, that he wanted to plead guilty," Dr. Seymour Pollack, prosecution psychiatrist, said yesterday, concluding five days of testimony.

Dr. Pollack attempted to offset the testimony of two defense psychiatrists and six psychologists who said Sirhan was mentally incompetent to premeditate and carry out the murder of Kennedy June 5 in the Embassy Room pantry of the Ambassador Hotel.

Dr. Pollack maintains that, although Sirhan is mentally ill, he is still responsible for his act of shooting Kennedy.

Under long rapid-fire cross-examination by chief defense counsel Grant B. Cooper, Dr. Pollack steadfastly maintained that Sirhan's courtroom outbursts, in which he again stated his wish to plead guilty, were

not "normal" but were not serious indications of mental illness.

"It is my opinion that during none of these episodes . . . is there the kind or degree of inappropriateness present in psychotic behavior," the psychiatrist said.

Inappropriateness, the jury of seven men and five women heard, means laughing during a very solemn or sad event or other such incongruous behavior. Other psychiatrists had testified that Sirhan's lack of concern and his joviality after his arrest June 5, indicated an extreme mental disorder.

Dr. Pollack said that he considered Sirhan's outbursts in court and in Judge Herbert V. Walker's chambers "genuine" and that the young Arab defendant "wasn't doing it for effect, wasn't dramatizing . . . wasn't putting on a show for me."

He said he believed Sirhan "Felt what he said" but that it wasn't an "inappropriate" type of behavior.

In answer to a question by Cooper about one of Sirhan's outbursts in which he said he had premeditated Kennedy's assassination "with 20 years of malice aforethought," the psychiatrist replied: "In my opin-

ion Sirhan had not premeditated and deliberated for 20 years prior to the assassination."

He maintains, however, that Sirhan, now 25, did wilfully premeditate Kennedy's killing.

Sirhan's fate moved closer to jury deliberation with the conclusion of Dr. Pollack's testimony at noon yesterday, prior to the Easter recess. The Prosecution plans to introduce only one additional witness, USC psychologist Dr. Leonard Ollinger, and defense attorneys anticipate "less than five minutes" of sur-rebuttal Monday.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-4 Herald Examiner
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-5-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: Myrna Oliver
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-763

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Buw
4/16/69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan's Volatile Moods Blamed on 'Tantrums'

Tired of 'Being Bugged,'
Wanted to Plead Guilty,
Psychiatrist Tells Court

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Prosecution psychiatrist Seymour Pollack said Friday that Sirhan Bishara Sirhan told him several times that "he was through with the whole damned thing. He was through with psychiatrists bugging him and he wanted out. He wanted to plead guilty."

Pollack said these incidents, like similar outbursts after his murder trial began, were "temper tantrums in a paranoid individual." Pollack said he did not believe Sirhan was faking the tantrums.

In final cross-examination, defense attorney Grant B. Cooper asked Pollack if he felt Sirhan had shown inappropriate responses for a man in his circumstances — overreacting, smiling at serious moments and paying little attention as the possibility of a death penalty was discussed.

Pollack said he had not seen "the degree of inappropriate response we see in a psychotic person," but said Sirhan's responses were more impulsive and volatile than those of a normal person on trial for his life. "I suspect he wishes he could control himself better," Pollack said.

'Gotten . . . to Like Sirhan'

Pollack said he had seen quite a lot of Sirhan since the killing of Robert F. Kennedy last June and confided, "I have actually gotten somewhat to like Sirhan. He may still think I'm an a.o.b."

Cooper asked if Pollack ~~still~~ believed that although Sirhan is mentally ill, his illness was not so severe as to diminish his mental capacity to maturely and meaningfully premeditate Kennedy's death.

Pollack replied that he did believe it "with reasonable medical certainty."

Cooper asked if he believed it "beyond reasonable doubt"—a condition on which a first degree murder conviction must be based.

Pollack said he regarded "beyond reasonable doubt" as a moral judgment which he, as a doctor, did not feel qualified to make. "Reasonable medical certainty," he said, is a medical judgment which does not equate with the moral concept.

Under redirect examination by Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard, Pollack read at length from the transcript of a Feb. 2 meeting between psychiatrists and psychologists for both the defense and prosecution.

Agreed to Change Plea

It was after this meeting, at which there was general agreement that Sirhan was mentally ill to some degree, that the defense and prosecution agreed to change Sirhan's plea to guilty, with an understanding that he would be sentenced to life in prison.

However, the agreement fell through and the plea remained not guilty.

The transcript of the meeting revealed a sharp dispute between Pollack and defense psychiatrist Bernard L. Diamond, who expressed irritation at Pollack for not revealing his conclusions about Sirhan's mental state.

On Thursday, Pollack had contended that Diamond had given him to understand he could have no further interviews with Sirhan after his last interview on Feb. 1.

But the transcript showed that it was Pollack who first suggested that it would be of little further value for him to see Sirhan again. On Thursday, Pollack had testified that if he had had more than 25 hours with Sirhan, he might have seen clearer evidence of Sirhan's alleged psychotic symptoms.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 LA Times
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-5-69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Donald Goode
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-760

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

CC: [unclear] H [unclear]

Diamond, on Feb. 2, told Pollack, "I do not feel, Seymour, that you have played fair." Diamond said Pollack had "evaded" and "quibbled" while defense psychiatrists and psychologists had made full disclosures, and said Pollack had "misused the conference" by holding back his opinions.

Pollack insisted, at that meeting and in his testimony this week, that at that time he had not come to any conclusions.

But he confirmed that two days after the meeting, on Feb. 4, he dictated an 18-page diagnosis in a confidential report to the district attorney's office.

At that time, Pollack confirmed Thursday, he had not thought the case would come to trial. But after Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker ordered the trial to proceed before a jury, Pollack wrote another report on March 21.

Judge Walker adjourned the trial at noon Friday until Monday morning. It appeared the case would go to the jury late next week, probably on Friday.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Film on Robert Kennedy Set

• A new documentary movie based on the life and times of the late Sen. Robert F. Kennedy will be produced for ABC's Movie of the Week airing in the fall. The project will be produced by David L. Wolper and directed by Nel Sturges.

• The 41st Awards program of the Academy of Motion Picture Arts and Sciences (April 14) is set for worldwide transmission via satellite for the first time, according to academy president Gregory Peck.

• The 1968-69 Tony Awards, honoring outstanding achievement on the Broadway stage, will be covered in a special, "Broadway '69—the Tony Awards," over NBC April 20. Yves Montand, Patty Duke, Dustin Hoffman and Bobby Morse have been signed as presenters.

• Bill Burrud's Animal World will begin a summer replacement run (in place of the Queen and I) on the CBS network beginning May 8.

• Paul Orr has been signed to produce the new syndicated Allan Ludden's Gallery, now in production at KTTV. Orr formerly pro-

duced the Joey Bishop show.

• Tammy Grimes has been cast in the lead role of Universal's World Premiere movie-for-TV, "The Other Man." She joins Roy Thinnes, Joan Hackett and Arthur Hill. The film will air on NBC.

Richard Caffey will produce Harold Robbins' The Survivors, ABC's new fall series starring Lana Turner, George Hamilton and Kevin McCarthy. Prior to his new assignment, Caffey was producer for Combat! and Garrison's Gorillas. Gordon Oliver is executive producer.

• Former TV newscaster Alex Dreier has been signed for his second guest appearance in It Takes a Thief. Dreier again appears as a "heavy" in the episode, "Mad in Japan."

• Edie Adams will be cohost with Vincent Price for Channel 9's 4th annual "Academy Awards Special" on April 13. Film clips

will highlight the nominees for best picture, best actor and actress, best supporting actor and actress. Part of the show includes the movie "To Catch a Thief," starring Cary Grant and Grace Kelly.

• The "Up, Down and Even" episode of NBC's Ironside has been made available through numerous requests to police organizations, church groups and high schools. The segment deals with the problem of drugs and high school students. It is scheduled for rerun in September.

• An all-new two-hour production of "David Copperfield" will be taped in England for release on NBC in the fall. It will star Ralph Richardson, Lawrence Olivier, Michael Redgrave and Edith Evans. Robin Phillips plays Copperfield.

• Patricia Smith has been signed as a regular on the new Debbie Reynolds

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

Part II Los Angeles
Page 3 Times

Date: 4/5/69
Edition: Home
Author:
Editor: Donald Gooden
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification:
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

cc to Bureau
4/7/69

56-156-2-739

SEARCHED
SERIALIZED
INDEXED
FILED

1

APR 10 1969

FBI - LOS ANGELES

comedy series, premiering
on NBC in the fall.

• Harold J. Stone will be
a featured regular in
NBC's new season series,
My World and Welcome to
It. Sheldon Leonard will
produce the series based
on the writings of humor-
ist James Thurber.

• ~~James~~ Schmerer has
been singled by David Dor-

tort to produce High Cha-
parral for NBC.

• Pearl Bailey will star in
her own special for ABC,
due in the fall. She recent-
ly co-starred with Carol
Channing in an ABC sa-
lute to the Broadway thea-
ter.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sharif Sirhan Disturbance Trial May 21

Sharif Sirhan, 37, brother of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, will be tried by jury in Pasadena Municipal Court May 21 on a charge of disturbing the peace.

The brother of Sen. Robert Kennedy's admitted slayer was arrested March 27 at St. Luke's Hospital, Pasadena, following a disturbance there.

His trial date was set yesterday.

Sharif had reportedly become upset with hospital staff after another brother, Saidalla, 35, had been admitted with a broken leg and skull fracture following an auto accident.

Sharif was released yesterday on a \$125 bond.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-3 Herald Examiner
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-4-69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goode
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-3-758

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
4/5/69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Doubted Sirhan Would Be Tried, Doctor Testifies

Psychiatrist in Diagnoses
Clash Cites Agreement by
Both Sides on Life Term

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

Prosecution psychiatrist Seymour Pollack, flushed and at times almost shouting, admitted Thursday that when he wrote his first diagnosis of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, he thought Sirhan would never be tried for the killing of Robert F. Kennedy.

In a confidential Feb. 5 report to Dist. Atty. Evelle J. Younger, Pollack described the Palestinian Arab as a "psychotic . . . suffering from a borderline schizophrenia with paranoid and hysterical features."

That was after a Feb. 2 meeting between Pollack and psychiatric and psychological consultants to the defense agreed that Sirhan was mentally ill. On the basis of that meeting, the defense and prosecution agreed to a plea of guilty to first-degree murder with life imprisonment.

But after Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker rejected the agreement and ordered the trial to proceed before a jury, defense attorney Grant B. Cooper charged Thursday, Pollack wrote another report, in which Sirhan's mental illness was described much less boldly.

In a 30-page report dated March 21, after the trial was already 2½ months along, Pollack termed Sirhan "a developing paranoid personality."

Almost a Shouting Match

In a rapid-fire exchange that nearly escalated to a shouting match, Cooper asked Pollack if he hadn't believed on Feb. 5 that Sirhan would never come to trial.

"I was led to believe that, yes," said Pollack.

Cooper then asked if he hadn't also believed that the Feb. 5 report thus would never have reached the hands of defense attorneys.

Pollack denied this, saying he knew it would have been entered in testimony if the case had come to trial.

Cooper then asked why Pollack's March 21 report did not term Sirhan a psychotic.

Pollack said he had intended that report only to discuss Sirhan's motive in killing Kennedy, not his mental state when he did it.

"But," Cooper snapped, "didn't you use this, practically read it into the record as the basis of your direct testimony?"

Pollack replied that he was concerned in that report only with the legal question of motivation.

At one point Pollack insisted, "I have said all along (in direct testimony) that I considered the defendant a borderline schizophrenic."

Stands by Diagnoses

Cooper challenged Pollack, insisting he had never used that term on direct examination by the prosecution, and Pollack agreed he may not have.

Pollack insisted that he stood by the diagnoses in both his first and second reports and insisted that they were not conflicting.

He denied implications that he had sought to minimize his earlier findings, in which agreement with defense arguments on Sirhan's mental condition seemed more apparent.

There were several heated exchanges as Cooper and Pollack parried for points in what essentially was a semantic argument. Pollack explained time and again that psychiatric "labels" in court cases are often misleading.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state)

Part I, P. 3
—L.A. Times
Los Angeles

Date: 4-4-69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. W.
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los An

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-75
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES

cc file
4/4/69
sum.

Cooper charged that it was Pollack himself who applied the label of "paranoid personality" to Sirhan.

Pollack admitted he had used the label, but explained that different psychiatrists' interpretations of Sirhan's symptoms often were merely a matter of degree.

Mental illness, Pollack said in effect cannot be precisely measured and it is society's business, not psychiatrists', to determine when a mentally ill defendant's illness is a mitigating factor in his guilt.

Cooper returned to his previous statement of Pollack's that if he had had more than 25 hours with Sirhan he might have unearthed more definite signs of psychosis, but that on the basis of that limited time, he had not found strong symptoms.

Citing Sirhan's alleged delusions of persecution and his fantasies of destruction and death, mostly to Jews, Cooper asked if Pollack might not have seen these delusions if he had spent more time on the case.

Pollack, obviously flustered, admitted "If this is a criticism, I accept the criticism."

Noting that several psychological tests had unearthed such delusionary thinking, Cooper asked if perhaps the tests hadn't got farther beneath Sirhan's surface than Pollack had.

Pollack, his voice rising to a shout, said they might have, but only "as they applied to psychological material, not as they applied to reality."

He explained that tests showed what Sirhan's inner reality was like, but that he judged Sirhan's mental state on the basis of his outward behavior.

Cooper then read from Pollack's Feb. 5 report:

"He (Sirhan) has been successful in hiding his psychotic symptoms from public view and able to avoid revealing such symptoms to psychiatrists in clinical interviews. During my clinical interviews with him, I detected none in the initial encounters; in later interviews with him, however, I believe that he revealed a degree of paranoid thinking with accompanying emotional responses that led me to suspect that there were psychotic characteristics in his personality . . ."

Question of Delusion

At one point Pollack said Sirhan believed it was good and right for him to kill Kennedy because of Kennedy's support for Israel.

Cooper asked if Sirhan's belief that it was good to kill Kennedy wasn't delusional thinking. Pollack said it wasn't.

Cooper then asked, with barely masked incredulity, if Pollack meant that Sirhan was not deluded in thinking it was good.

"Yes," said Pollack, then, "No, no, no, no, no!" as spectators chuckled.

Pollack said Sirhan believed it was good to kill the senator because of the kind of person Sirhan thought Kennedy was. And because of this view, Pollack added, Sirhan didn't believe he should get more than a couple of years in prison for killing such a person.

Cooper seized on this point, asking if Pollack felt this belief of Sirhan—that he should get only a couple years for killing a U.S. senator—was mature or meaningful.

Here the questioning bogged down in a lengthy dispute over the common-sense usages of "mature" and "meaningful" and the legal definitions of the terms.

Pollack insisted that the concept of mature or meaningful acts relates to the specific act intended, whether it be murder or "flying to the moon."

One key point in much of Pollack's testimony was his contention that Sirhan had shown no outward symptoms of psychosis. Sirhan's notebook writings of his intent to kill Kennedy, his mystical experiments with Rosicrucianism and his violently anti-Zionist political views, Pollack said, were not by themselves, considered separately, symptomatic of psychosis.

Cooper made it obvious that he felt these matters should not be dismissed one by one as unsymptomatic, but considered together, in light of psychological tests to which Pollack said he also gave less weight than eyewitness descriptions of Sirhan's outward behavior.

With obvious anger, Cooper asked Pollack, "Could the killing of Sen. Kennedy be considered a symptom of paranoid schizophrenia?"

After a long pause, Pollack said, "Yes, it could." He began to amplify his answer but Cooper cut him short.

Testimony ended Thursday on a dramatic high point as Cooper declaimed from Pollack's Feb. 5 report: ". . . I believe that Sirhan's mental illness was related to his act of assassination in that his paranoid convictions went beyond those of a normal personality in the average citizen."

"This mental illness should be considered a substantial mitigating factor on the issue of penalty."

Cooper skipped one portion for brief questioning of Pollack, then went back, minutes before adjournment, to read the omitted portion:

"Should a conviction of murder of the first-degree be obtained, I hope that Sirhan is able to avoid the death penalty and is sent for treatment to the California Medical Facility at Vacaville."

Pollack acknowledged that, "as you know, I am strongly opposed to capital punishment for moral and ethical reasons."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Expert Retreats On Sirhan Views

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan should not suffer death for his admitted slaying of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, in the opinion of prosecution psychiatrist Dr. Seymour Pollack.

The psychiatrist's plea for a life sentence for the young Arab came yesterday at the close of his fourth day in the witness box at Sirhan's murder trial.

Dr. Pollack, who begins his third day of withering cross-examination by chief defense attorney Grant B. Cooper, told Sirhan's jury of seven men and five women that, in his view, mental treatment was the proper penalty for Sirhan.

He voiced his opinion after reversing himself and conceding under Cooper's prodding that Sirhan suffered from "substantial mental illness." Earlier he had discounted the defendant's mental disorder as "minimal."

Cooper then questioned him about a Feb. 5 confidential report he had made to Dist. Atty. Evelle J. Younger, in which he stated, "this mental illness

should be considered a substantial mitigating factor on the issue of penalty."

Q.—Do you mean that it would reduce it from first to second degree murder?

A.—No.

Q.—Even though it is very difficult to weigh these things, it wouldn't have any significance to you as far as second or first degree?

A.—As a psychiatrist I am in a position of trying to evaluate as far as possible the mental state of the person accused of a capital crime. I happen to be very strongly opposed to capital punishment. The prosecution knew it. Yet it is my duty to evaluate this case competently. . . . my firm and strong conviction and belief about capital punishment should not influence my decision. . . . I hope he wouldn't be given capital punishment.

The agreement of prosecution psychiatrist and defense attorney that Sirhan should not go to the gas chamber for fatality

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles,
Calif.

Date: 4-4-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angel
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-756
SEARCHED
SERIALIZED
INDEXED
FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES

cc to Bureau
4/16/69

shooting Kennedy June 5, 1963 at the Ambassador Hotel was one of the few points of concord the two men reached in a day's dogged cross-examination.

Throughout the rest of the day Cooper bore in hard in an attempt to discredit Dr. Pollack's earlier testimony that Sirhan's mental illness did not lessen his responsibility for Kennedy's death.

He wrung from Dr. Pollack the concession that his client had a "substantial" rather than "minimal" mental illness.

He forced Dr. Pollack to admit that when he reported on Sirhan's mental state to Younger he believed the young Arab's trial would not go forward, but that he would be permitted to plead guilty and be given a life sentence.

But Cooper was unable to shake the psychiatrist from his conviction that despite mental illness, Sirhan was capable of premeditating and did premeditate Kennedy's death.

Moreover, Dr. Pollack continued to insist that had Sirhan escaped capture after the Kennedy slaying, he would have attempted further political assassinations. The psychiatrist repeated his earlier testimony that former President Lyndon B. Johnson and former U.N. Ambassador Arthur Goldberg would have been likely Sirhan targets.

The best Cooper could do was to induce Dr. Pollack to agree

that Sirhan's mental capacity was less than 50 per cent of normal.

The two men frequently became angry during their courtroom duel and several times Cooper's probing left Dr. Pollack red-faced and stammering. Cooper's voice raised so loud that one of his associates, Emile Zola Berman, remonstrated with him.

Sirhan appeared to thoroughly enjoy the exchanges between the two. He smiled frequently and paid more attention to cross-examination of Dr. Pollack than he has to most of his trial proceedings.

A new picture of Sirhan in the days immediately following Kennedy's fatal shooting also emerged yesterday. Cooper read into the record the report of Dr. Marcus Crahan, County Jail physician who examined the defendant June 6 and 7.

Dr. Crahan wrote: "(My) interviews revealed an unconcerned young male ... entirely pleased with himself ... showing no remorse, no regret."

He said he found Sirhan, whom defense psychiatrists insist was suffering from acute mental illness at the time, "alert, wary, impassive, unconcerned and well directed."

At this time, according to Crahan, Sirhan believed that Kennedy still lived ... that the shots had not been fatal.

Then an attorney visited the young Arab and told him of Kennedy's death. After this, according to Dr. Crahan:

"Sirhan appeared exhausted and complained he had had no sleep ... His attorney had no doubt told him his victim had expired. This may have accounted for his exhaustion ..."

Sirhan, Dr. Pollack testified, told him he believed he should receive a sentence of "a couple of years" for Kennedy's murder.

"He felt that was all he deserved, if anything," the psychiatrist said.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Psychiatrist's Testimony Sends Sirhan Into Rage

Blowup Follows Witness' Claim That Amnesia Is Attempt to Avoid Serious Consequences

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, on trial for murder, flew into a rage Tuesday when a prosecution psychiatrist in effect called him a liar.

The blowup occurred as Dr. Seymour Pollack testified that he didn't believe Sirhan really couldn't remember writing in his notebook of his intent to kill Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Pollack said he regarded Sirhan's claimed amnesia as "an attempt to avoid the serious consequences that could result if the notebook was attributed as evidence of his premeditation to murder Kennedy."

Though Pollack did not use the word "lie," Sirhan quickly grasped the import of Pollack's testimony and jumped to his feet, shouting, "Your honor, sir . . . !"

Four husky deputies jammed the tiny Palestinian Arab back into his chair as Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker warned: "You settle down or I'll do what I told you I'd do."

(The judge told Sirhan at an outburst in February that he would have him gagged and tied in the courtroom if the outbursts continued.)

Taken From Room

But Sirhan didn't settle down. Eyes burning with anger, he snapped to defense attorney Russell Parsons, "I told the truth and I don't like him to call me a ——— liar."

Judge Walker hastily called a recess and ordered the jury to retire as the four burly deputies ushered the seething defendant out of the room, his arms held tightly at his sides. As he strode quickly out of the court, Sirhan muttered, "That son of a bitch."

During the 15-minute recess—in which Parsons calmed the ruffled defendant—Sirhan's mother, Mary, 55, and brother, Adel, 30, sat anxiously waiting to see if Sirhan would be bound and gagged upon his reappearance.

"He doesn't lie," Mrs. Sirhan insisted. "From the time he is a small boy, I always teach him not to lie, and he never does. The poor boy . . ."

The trial resumed with Parsons conveying Sirhan's apology to Judge Walker, who accepted, "but only under the distinct understanding that what I told him before I'd do, I'll do."

Pollack then reiterated his belief that Sirhan wasn't telling the truth about his alleged amnesia regarding the notebook writing.

In earlier testimony Tuesday,

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 Los Angeles
Los Angeles, Cali

Date: 4/2/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Willi.
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angel

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-755

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 APR 2 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

*celebration
4-2-69*

Pollack said he didn't believe that Sirhan was suffering psychotic delusions when he shot Sen. Kennedy last June 5.

He said he thinks Sirhan is "a developing paranoid personality," but his diagnosis stopped far short of the testimony of seven defense psychiatrists and psychologists who unanimously diagnosed Sirhan as a paranoid schizophrenic.

Pollack said he felt Sirhan's mental illness fell under the classification described as "psychosis, non-psychotic." He described this as a condition in which a person may exhibit psychotic tendencies without being psychotic in a clinical sense.

He drew an analogy between psychosis and polio, saying that while many persons have had polio, only a small percentage among them have suffered paralysis.

Laxness in Application Seen

Pollack indicated that he believes the psychiatric profession in America has perhaps been too lax in its application of the term "psychotic" to people "who even exhibit suspicious tendencies, even when there are minimal signs of psychosis." In Europe, he said, the profession is stricter in its use of the term.

Although he said Sirhan showed paranoid tendencies, Pollack said he found no evidence of paranoid delusions or of organic brain damage—which the defense has never claimed—nor had he found evidence of "peculiarity" in Sirhan's sexual fantasies or of "bizarre thinking" in his attitudes toward President Johnson, former U.N. Ambassador Arthur Goldberg, or Sen. Kennedy.

In his notebook, Sirhan had written over and over about two girls he had known slightly, and he also wrote of his desire to assassinate President Johnson and Goldberg as well as Kennedy.

Pollack said Sirhan's feelings toward these people were not delusory, but based on political disillusionment and a resentment of what he believed was hypocritical in American policy toward the Palestinian Arabs and the Israelis.

He said he thinks Sirhan planned to kill Kennedy because he wanted to "focus the attention of the world on the plight of the Arab, particularly the Palestinian Arab."

Sirhan, Pollack said, regarded Kennedy as a sellout to American Zionists whose votes he needed, and thus believed Kennedy, or anyone who agreed with him was, in effect, no better than a murderer of Arabs.

With this attitude toward Kennedy in mind, Pollack said, Sirhan didn't believe he should be punished for killing such a person, because the killing was politically motivated and justified, in Sirhan's view.

With this attitude toward Kennedy in mind, Pollack said, Sirhan didn't believe he should be punished for killing such a person, because the killing was politically motivated and justified, in Sirhan's view.

"I don't believe Sirhan expected to be caught," Pollack said.

Pollack said Sirhan has shown no remorse for killing Kennedy but that Sirhan has had "some conflict" about the idea of killing another human be-

ing. It is his belief that Kennedy betrayed the Arabs, Pollack indicated, that enables him to feel no remorse for his act.

Pollack conceded that Sirhan's claimed amnesia could also be a retrograde amnesia rather than a deliberate lie. Retrograde amnesia, he said, is a form of amnesia that develops after an event, when a person cannot bear to face knowledge of what has happened.

Pollard said he also believes Sirhan's account of his activities up to the time of the killing, with one exception. "I believe," said Pollack, "that he went to the Ambassador Hotel with the conscious intention of killing Sen. Kennedy."

The psychiatrist also conceded that "it is probable that Sirhan had a

few drinks" the night of June 4, at political victory parties at the hotel. The defense claims Sirhan's shooting of Kennedy was done in a dissociative trance partly induced by drunkenness.

Pollack said he thinks the possibility that Sirhan might have been in a dissociative state or self-induced hypnotic trance when he shot Kennedy is "extremely remote." He said Sirhan "killed Kennedy because he hated him for what he stood for" and because Sirhan wanted to call attention to the plight of his people.

In answer to questions by Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard, Pollack said he believes Sirhan was not suffering diminished mental capacity at the time of the shooting, but was quite able to harbor malice aforethought, form the intent to kill and reflect on the consequences.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan's 'Illness' Report Disputed

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

The prosecution psychiatrist's testimony was in direct contradiction to that of a battery of defense psychiatrists who spent weeks on the stand in an attempt to prove that Sirhan is a "minimal mental illness" did dissociated paranoid schizophrenic who in a "minimal mental illness" did not prevent his premeditating Kennedy without really knowing what he was doing.

Defense lawyer Emile Zola defendant sent Sirhan into an angry tirade half-way through yesterday's proceedings. Deputy Sheriff's subdued the young Arab when he leaped to his feet in a rage and shouted obscenities June 5 were asked.

Judge Herbert V. Walker, who presides, abruptly recessed court while defense figures scolded their client. Sirhan, through Atty. Russell V. Parsons, later apologized to Walker and the jury. But the jurist warned him that if there was another outburst he would be bound and gagged in the courtroom.

Sirhan's rage came when Dr. Pollack disputed Sirhan's claim that he has no memory of writing threats against Kennedy and plans for the assassination in a set of diaries seized at his home on East Howard Street, Pasadena.

"He can't call me a liar," Sirhan bellowed. Seized and led from the courtroom where his trial takes place, Sirhan shouted obscenities at Pollack and court attendants.

Dr. Pollack, when court resumed, repeated his opinion that "Sirhan's denial of recall of his written notes . . . (is) his attempt to avoid the serious consequences that would result . . . that would be attributed to these writings of planning and premeditation.

Defense attorneys in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial were set today to challenge a prosecution psychiatrist who claims that the young Arab is a "minimal mental illness" did not prevent his premeditating the killing of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Dr. Pollack's picture of the defendant sent Sirhan into an angry tirade half-way through yesterday's proceedings. Deputy Sheriff's subdued the young Arab when he leaped to his feet in a rage and shouted obscenities June 5 were asked.

Judge Herbert V. Walker, who presides, abruptly recessed court while defense figures scolded their client. Sirhan, through Atty. Russell V. Parsons, later apologized to Walker and the jury. But the jurist warned him that if there was another outburst he would be bound and gagged in the courtroom.

Sirhan's rage came when Dr. Pollack disputed Sirhan's claim that he has no memory of writing threats against Kennedy and plans for the assassination in a set of diaries seized at his home on East Howard Street, Pasadena.

"He can't call me a liar," Sirhan bellowed. Seized and led from the courtroom where his trial takes place, Sirhan shouted obscenities at Pollack and court attendants.

Dr. Pollack, when court resumed, repeated his opinion that "Sirhan's denial of recall of his written notes . . . (is) his attempt to avoid the serious consequences that would result . . . that would be attributed to these writings of planning and premeditation.

"That was my opinion of his reason for the blanket denial."

Sirhan did not have a genuine amnesia, Dr. Pollack insisted.

Dr. Pollack also disclosed that he had hypnotized Sirhan as part of his examination. Defense psychiatrist Dr. Bernard L. Diamond last week told of Sirhan's hypnotic experiences with Sirhan and swore that he had learned that the defendant hyp-

notized himself frequently and was in a self-induced trance when he shot Kennedy.

However, Dr. Pollack said he found that Sirhan "blocked" an-

plained, he meant Sirhan, "give very very little. If anything spontaneously . . .

"He often would not answer direct questions. . . he would ap-

pear to fall asleep if questions about Kennedy or the night of June 5 were asked.

"I interpreted this as evi-

dence of his blocking that Sir-

han while hypnotized was still thinking, still reasoning like all

people can under hypnosis. What he was saying by not

answering was that he didn't want to talk about it."

Under questioning by Dep.

Atty. John Howard, Dr. Pollack gave the opinion that

Sirhan did not suffer from diminished capacity. When Ken-

edy was shot, the psychiatrist said, his admitted slayer had

the capability to "meaningfully and maturely premeditate" the

shooting.

The defense suffered a major blow in Dr. Pollack's testimony.

The defense contends that Sir-

han's mental capability is so badly impaired that he lacked

the ability either to premeditate Kennedy's fatal shooting or to

comprehend the gravity of his act.

If the jury of seven men and

five women credit the defense theory, Sirhan probably will be

spared the death penalty. If the jurors believe Pollack, the dimi-

nutive Jordanian immigrant could face the gas chamber.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald Examiner
Los Angeles, Ca

Date: 4-2-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Gooden
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-704
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
1 APR 3 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

Cc to Bureau
4-3-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Isolated Cells Ready for Sirhan at Vacaville Medical Facility

BY JOHN KENDALL

Times Staff Writer

If and when Sirhan Bishara Sirhan reaches the California Medical Facility for prisoners at Vacaville, the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy will be isolated in a tight little world all his own.

He will sleep, eat, bathe and receive visitors in three cells secured by heavy screens from other sections of the facility's maximum security cellblock.

He will be under the direct supervision of a guard 24 hours a day and his meals will be prepared individually, probably by a guard.

Prison officials are afraid the little 25-year-old Palestinian Arab might be killed if he were to mingle with other prisoners.

"We have unconfirmed grapevine reports that there are inmates that would want to kill him," said Phil Guthrie, information officer for the State Department of Corrections in Sacramento.

"Probably we have never had a more notorious case, if we get him. We have an obligation to keep people in but we have an equal obligation to protect them."

Sirhan's trial, under way since January, is expected to last at least another week. A penalty trial will follow if he is convicted of first-degree murder.

Anticipating Sirhan's eventual arrival, prison officials have ordered preparation of quarters on the third tier of one end of the maximum security cell block.

Guthrie said Sirhan would live in one 6-by 9-foot cell containing a bed, sink, toilet, writing stand and perhaps a couple of shelves.

The cell next to it, containing chairs, a table and possibly a television set, will be a visiting area where Sirhan, denied the usual facilities, will receive relatives or attorneys.

A shower will be installed in a third cell, across a corridor. Sirhan's food will be prepared in a small alcove.

Guthrie said officials had not decided whether to connect the living and visiting cells or to let the prisoner use the present doors.

"We can operate it any way that seems humane, and suitable when we see how Sirhan reacts to his surroundings," Guthrie said.

If the jury decrees that Sirhan must die for Kennedy's murder, the usual procedure would be to transfer him to San Quentin, but Guthrie said prison officials would ask that he be sent to Vacaville.

If Sirhan ends up in the special quarters being prepared for him, it may be his home for years.

"We think he would have to be held under tight security for a long time," Guthrie said. "We hope that it would be

possible, in time, to take him out of this confinement and put him in suitable facilities."

He disputed reports that Sirhan was to receive red carpet treatment.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 Los Angeles
Los Angeles, Calif

Date: 4/2/69
Edition: Home
Author: John Dendall
Editor: Nick B. Willie
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-9-753
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
1 APR 2 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

*celebration
4-2-69*

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Was Sirhan Capable Of Plotting Murder?

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Dr. Seymour Pollack, prosecution psychiatrist in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial, today is expected to tell the young Arab's jury that despite his mental illness Sirhan was capable of plotting the killing of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Dr. Pollack, set to take the stand for his second day of testimony, believes Sirhan suffers delusions of persecution, but refuses to label him a schizophrenic—a split personality.

A squad of defense psychiatrists and psychologists, led by Dr. Bernard L. Diamond of Berkeley, have testified that their examination leads them to believe that Sirhan is a paranoid schizophrenic who could

not "meaningly and maturely" have premeditated Kennedy's June 5, 1968, slaying. They also claim that the defendant's mental state has deteriorated since the time he admittedly shot Kennedy at the Ambassador Hotel.

Dr. Pollack testified Friday—prior to a three-day weekend recess—he had spent approximately 200 hours on the Sirhan case, including participating in several interviews and two hypnosis sessions with Dr. Diamond.

On the basis of this study, Dr. Pollack said that Kennedy was shot by Sirhan for "essentially political reasons." These, not his paranoia, were the motivating force for the young Arab, the psychiatrist believes.

According to Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts, Dr. Pollack may be the last rebuttal witness called by the prosecution. Fitts said that decision will be made today. It is expected that direct examination of Dr. Pollack will consume most of today with cross-examination by defense attorney Grant B. Cooper taking most of the following day.

Should Pollack be the last witness, the case could easily conclude this week. The defense is not expected to present a lengthy sur-rebuttal case.

End of rebuttal and sur-rebuttal leaves only the concluding statements and instructions to the jury from Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker, who presides over the trial.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-3 Herald Examiner
Los Angeles, Cal

Date: 4-1-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Gooden
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-752

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 APR 2 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

CCT to Bureau
4-2-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

'SUITE' LIFE FOR SIRHAN

By Associated Press

A three - cell suite is being built for Sirhan Bishara Sirhan at a state medical facility in case he is convicted of murdering Sen. Robert F. Kennedy and sentenced to life imprisonment, a state official said Sunday.

Sirhan's large quarters, now being walled off, will have a kitchen - dining room, a bedroom, a living room and a lavatory with shower, said Philip D. Guthrie of the California Adult Authority.

The cell, which Guthrie said would protect the occupant from other prisoners, is at the California Medical Facility at Vacaville, near Sacramento.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles

Date: 3/31/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title:

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

*cc to Bureau
4-1-69*

56-156-2-751

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 APR 3 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

17

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

3-Cell Ward, TV Readied At Vacaville

Sirhan is on trial, accused of first degree murder in the assassination of Kennedy last June 5. If the jury convicts him of that charge, it will choose between death and life imprisonment as the penalty.

If given a life sentence, Sirhan would be sent to the medical facility for "indefinite confinement—many months or even years," a standard procedure for prisoners with mental problems, Guthrie said.

"We'll need some reading of his frame of mind and we'll also want to assess the reaction of other inmates."

Guthrie added that the California Adult Authority is asking the legislature for special legislation so Sirhan could be held at Vacaville if he receives the death penalty instead of being sent, as state law requires, to Death Row at San Quentin Prison. He attributed the request to "questions brought up about Sirhan's mental condition" and Sirhan's "notoriety."

The three cells each are about 10 by 15 feet, Guthrie said.

One would be converted into a kitchen, equipped with a stainless steel stove and oven, where uniformed personnel would cook Sirhan's meals. This, Guthrie said, would "eliminate the risk of someone trying to poison his food."

The second cell would be a living room, equipped with a television set, where Sirhan could receive visitors.

The third cell would be Sirhan's bedroom.

The bathroom will be off the kitchen.

The cost of imprisoning Sirhan and keeping a 24-hour watch on him, would far outstrip the \$2,800 yearly spent on average prisoners.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Ca

Date: 3/31/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Gooden
Title:

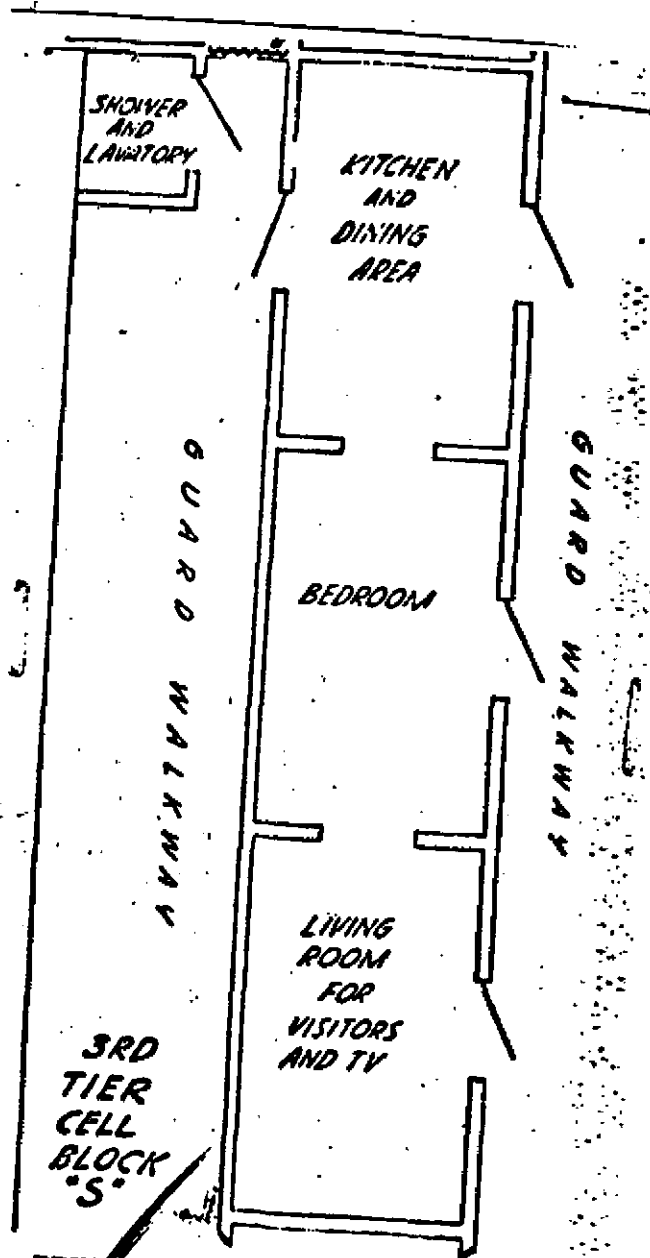
Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-750

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 1 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
4-1-69



PRIVATE QUARTERS AWAIT SIRILAN
Sketch shows apartment-like cell arrangement.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sharif Sirhan Free on Bond In Assault

Sharif Sirhan, brother of Sirhan Sirhan the admitted assassin of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy— is free on bond today after being arrested and booked for assaulting hospital attendants.

Sharif was booked on simple assault and disturbing the peace during a visit he made to his brother, Saidallah, 36, who suffered a fractured skull and broken leg when hit by a car while crossing a Pasadena street Thursday.

Attendants said Sharif beat hospital personnel, tried pulling the covers from Saidallah's bed and disturbed patients in the intensive care ward of St. Luke's Hospital in Pasadena.

Officers said the incident occurred after Sharif demanded to know his brother's condition and was unsatisfied by attendants' answers.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)
A-4 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles,
California

Date: 3/29/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor:
Title:

Character:
or
Classification:
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-746

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SIRHAN TRIAL COST PLACED AT \$858,595

Costs of the Sirhan trial are estimated to be \$858,595 thus far, according to Supervisor Kenneth Hahn.

"This undoubtedly is the most expensive trial in the history of Los Angeles, and will cost more than \$1 million before completion," Hahn prophesied.

Hahn said costs to the county currently stand at \$499,767 and police costs are estimated at more than \$300,000 since Sirhan's arrest June 5.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-5 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Cal

Date: 3/29/69

Edition: Night Final

Author:

Editor: Donald Goodenow

Title:

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: LOS Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-748

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 1 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

*c. to Bureau
4-1-69*

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SIRHAN'S MOTIVE POLITICS; UCLA EXPERT TESTIFIES

By MYRNA OLIVER

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Politics—not mental illness—drove Sirhan Bishara Sirhan to shoot Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, a prosecution psychiatrist believes.

Dr. Seymour Pollack, USC psychiatrist, took the stand yesterday at Sirhan's murder trial in rebuttal to testimony of defense psychologists and psychiatrists that Sirhan is so mentally ill he is incapable of "maturely and meaningfully premeditating murder."

"I consider Sirhan to be mentally disturbed," conceded Dr. Pollack, who said he spent about 40 hours interviewing Sirhan and his family and close to 200 hours reviewing all materials about the defendant, "about 10 times" the normal amount of time spent in criminal psychiatric investigation.

"But I believe his assassination of Senator Kennedy was motivated by political reasons and not highly emotionally charged."

Dr. Pollack said he believed Sirhan to have a "paranoid personality," in which a person suffers from delusions of persecution and obsessions.

He disagreed with his defense contemporaries, however, that

Sirhan developed his mental illness at an early age. Despite the fact that Sirhan witnessed the horrors of the 1948 Arab-Israeli war as a child in Jerusalem, the doctor said, he "incurred less, rather than more, emotional disturbance" than did many other Arabs. Sirhan's mother protected him, the psychiatrist explained, and, "except for the fact he was a frightened child, there was no other evidence of peculiar behavior."

Sirhan arrived in the United States at the age of 12, he said, as "a hopeful, idealistic, well-behaved young man."

"I found no evidence of paranoia in Sirhan during his childhood and teen years," he said.

Dr. Pollack will continue his evaluation of Sirhan when court reconvenes Tuesday after a day of mourning for General Eisenhower. He indicated the paranoia began to develop in Sirhan's early 20's, triggered by the death of his sister, Ayda, and the arrest of his brother, Sharif, who was charged with tampering with an auto.

Deputy District Attorney David N. Fitts, indicated yesterday Dr. Pollack may be the final

rebuttal witness called by the state.

Prior to the psychiatrist's testimony, prosecution attorneys called handwriting expert Lawrence W. Sloan to discredit defense claims that Sirhan wrote threats on Kennedy's life while in a state of self-hypnosis.

Sloan said, after comparing the written threats in Sirhan's diaries and "automatic writing" which Sirhan did in his cell after being hypnotized by defense psychiatrist Dr. Bernard L. Diamond, that Sirhan was not "under a state of hypnosis" when he scribbled, "RFK must die, die, die."

District Attorney's Investigator, George W. Murphy, Los Angeles Police Dept. Sgt. Adolph B. Melendres and LAPD Sgt. Frank J. Patchett, who spent several hours with Sirhan after his arrest, were also called to testify that the defendant was sober when he shot Kennedy.

Sirhan's attorneys, in trying to prove he was in a state of diminished capacity at the time of the shooting, have said he was self-hypnotized and at least partially drunk.

"I detected no odor of alcohol," said Melendres, who first met Sirhan minutes after his arrest for the June 5 Ambassador Hotel shooting. "His demeanor was that of a sober man."

Presiding Judge Herbert V. Walker, announcing Monday recess, said:

"Certainly this man (General Eisenhower) was one of the greatest Americans of our generation. He certainly deserves all the respect we can afford him."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/29/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: Myrna Oliver
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-747

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 1 1969	
FBI — LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
4-1-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Judge Bars Films

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Films taken of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy's Ambassador Hotel victory celebration minutes before he was fatally shot by Sirhan Bishara Sirhan will not be shown to the jury in the young Arab's murder trial.

This was the edict handed down yesterday by the trial's presiding Judge — Herbert V. Walker.

Judge Walker found the 12-minute film, with which the prosecution hoped to open its rebuttal today, "inflammatory." He also heeded a defense objection that there had been no evidence during the "case in chief" that Sirhan was in the Ambassador's Embassy Ballroom when Kennedy made his California presidential primary victory speech midnight June 5. Sirhan admittedly shot the New York senator in a pantry off the Embassy Ballroom as Kennedy walked from the podium following his speech.

Rejecting the plea of Dep. Dist. Atty. John Howard that the film be shown, the jurist said:

"I recollect no evidence . . . that this defendant heard any part of that speech. The evidence is not clear that he was

even in the room. None of the psychiatrists has testified that that speech, or any portion of that speech, was a triggering device that set him off in this so-called state."

Moreover, Walker continued, California law "permits the court to exclude evidence where it is felt that the probative value is exceeded by the inflammatory value."

"The court is not unmindful of the content of that speech. Here was a young man, who had just made a great victory. He was very happy, very gay. The contrast of that and what has happened in this court . . . would permit me to exclude this. . . . Permission is denied."

Judge Walker's denial came immediately following the conclusion of the defense case in chief.

At 3:45 p.m. chief defense counsel Grant B. Cooper told the jurist, "the defendant rests."

Last witness for Sirhan was Dr. George deVos, Berkeley psycho-anthropologist who testified that Sirhan, despite his pretensions of Arab nationalism, thought like an American.

In all, 29 defense witnesses — including Sirhan himself — testified for the young Arab. When court adjourned yesterday 86 witnesses had been heard by the jury. Nearly 8000 pages of testimony have been taken in the case which has so far cost Los

Angeles County almost \$400,000.

Focus of the defense case has been the testimony of a team of psychiatrists. Dr. Bernard J. Diamond, foremost of these, said yesterday that "voodoo thinking and black magic" were elements of the Kennedy slaying for which he has testified the young Arab "programmed himself like a computer" through self-hypnosis.

Recapping his examination of Sirhan for the jury Dr. Diamond said:

"I was prepared for the usual case of the paranoid-fanatic with dreams of glory. I was not prepared for what I found when I first saw Sirhan — the astonishing instance of correspondence course hypnosis, trances and Rosicrucian black magic."

"That this primitive voodoo thinking could bring about the death of Sen. Kennedy and to affect the world is the ultimate preposterous absurdity. It is too illogical even for the theatre of the absurd."

Pressed further by defense lawyer Emile Zola Berman, Dr. Diamond said that the thing that struck him most forcefully about Sirhan's case was:

" . . . Its unlikely nature . . . the sequence of events . . . this mail order, correspondence course self-hypnosis . . . this innocuous superstition, which could, in this case, result in a tragic crime . . . affecting the destiny of this country and the entire world."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/28/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Gooden
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Ange.

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-7446

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 1 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau #1-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Defense Rests, Admits Account of Slaying Is 'Absurd'

Jury Hears for First Time Transcript of Chamber Session
in Which Defendant Accused Judge of 'Railroading' Him

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

The defense for Sirhan Bishara Psychiatrist Bernard L. Diamond resting its case Thursday, conceded that Sirhan's story of hanging its hopes on an admittedly killing Kennedy "raises the gravest 'absurd' story of how the Palestinian problems of credibility" and reads an Arab came to kill Sen. Robert F. Kennedy like a script that would never be acceptable in a Class B motion picture.

But, Diamond made it clear, he believes it. Diamond, in brief redirect examination by defense attorney Emile Zola Berman, admitted he had termed his psychiatric findings on Sirhan as "an absurd and preposterous story, unlikely and incredible." "In my opinion," Diamond said, "this is the ultimate absurdity—too illogical even for the theater of the absurd."

Diamond said that when he entered the Sirhan case, he had no idea he would find evidence of "voodoo thinking" or "mail-order mysticism" and self-hypnosis involved in the slaying of a U.S. presidential candidate.

Defense Strenuously Objects

Howard argued that the film would show that Kennedy's speech contained nothing that could be construed as a "triggering mechanism" for the dissociative emotional state in which the defense claims Sirhan killed Kennedy.

After strenuous objection from Cooper that the film was immaterial, Judge Walker concurred, on two grounds: (1) that no one ever claimed Kennedy had said anything that night that precipitated Sirhan's alleged trance or even claimed that Sirhan had actually heard the speech, and (2) a film of the happy, victorious senator could have an inflammatory effect on the jury outweighing the film's possible value.

Affect Destiny of World

The absurdity, he said, was that such superstitious elements could, through the killing of Sen. Kennedy, "affect the destiny of this country and the entire world."

As Diamond concluded this statement, Howard asked, "Did you just read something?"

"Yes," said Diamond.

"When did you write it?"

"Late last night," Diamond said, "about midnight."

The prosecution has clearly shown, without expressing it verbally, its disaffection for Diamond's vivid, eloquently worded expressions on Sirhan's mental illness, which Diamond has read in court from prepared statements.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-3 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/28/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick D. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-743

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 28 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-28-69

Shortly after Diamond, a full professor of law, criminology and psychiatry at UC Berkeley, was excused from the stand, it was read into the record that he served as the star defense psychiatric witness without fee.

USC psychology Prof. Georgene Seward was then called by the defense to testify on her evaluation of two batteries of psychological tests administered by two previous defense witnesses, clinical psycholo-

gists Martin M. Schorr and D. Roderick Richardson.

Dr. Seward said she agreed with both Schorr and Richardson that five different tests combined to portray Sirhan as a paranoid schizophrenic.

At one point Dr. Seward said Sirhan's reaction to one test indicated the possibility of "latent homosexual tendencies."

At that, Sirhan glared at the doctor, leaned over to defense attorney Russell Parsons and snapped, "What kind of a son of bitch do they think I am?"

Howard, cross-examining Dr. Seward, attempted to draw from her, as the prosecution has doggedly tried to do with six previous psychiatric experts, admissions that Sirhan's responses to the tests

could be construed as normal for a person in his circumstances, rather than psychotic.

But, as with the prior witnesses, Dr. Seward would concede that one question or another might be open to different interpretations, but that the main direction of all the tests, taken together, pointed to "a clear case of schizophrenic reaction, paranoid type."

At one point she said that "any good clinician" would never diagnose mental illness on the basis of only one question or even one test, but on the total picture.

Howard chuckled and said, "Yes, but a poor lawyer has to go through these tests one at a time."

Dr. Seward admitted that three of the tests administered to Sirhan have been criticized within the profession, but she defended their use. One test, the Bender-Gestalt, was designed only to indicate organic brain damage, and since Sirhan was found to have none, its results were not that significant to the issues in the trial, she said.

Another test, the well-known Rorschach, or "inkblot" test, is not properly described as a "test," she testified, but as a diagnostic method of laying bare a subject's subconscious way of thinking and perceiving the world.

She said criticism of the Rorschach test has come largely from people who expect it to give quantitative answers which they can break down into evenly divided percentage categories. She said the critics have also complained that it offers no standard of comparison for one subject to another, but added that that was not the Rorschach test's purpose.

The final defense witness was psychologist and cultural anthropologist George DeVos of UC Berkeley, who testified that he also examined Schorr's and Richardson's tests and arrived at the same diagnosis of paranoid schizophrenia without knowing they had, too.

Like Dr. Seward, Dr. DeVos admitted that the Rorschach test has been the subject of some criticism, but said he didn't doubt its validity and added that he had never seen a case of anyone successfully faking interpretations of the inkblots.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Psychiatric Terms Target of Attack by Sirhan Defense

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Psychiatric terminology and the value of psychological testing came under attack Wednesday in the murder trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, as the defense launched what it promises will be a harrowing cross-examination of Dr. Seymour Pollack, star psychiatry witness for the prosecution.

Pollack, in his third day on the witness stand, testified that he did not believe, as the defense contends, that Sirhan was in a dissociative state or hypnotic trance when he shot and killed Sen. Robert F. Kennedy last June 5.

While agreeing that Sirhan is mentally ill, Pollack steadfastly avoided terming him a paranoid schizophrenic, as seven previous psychiatrists and psychologists have called the Palestinian Arab defendant.

Witness' Face Reddens

But as defense attorney Grant B. Cooper warmed to his cross-examination, Pollack's face reddened and his voice rose as he admitted, after repeated questioning, that if he had more time to examine Sirhan, he "probably" would have found signs of more severe mental illness than he testified to.

Cooper's chief weapon in attempting to undermine Pollack's testimony was a report written last Feb. 5 by Pollack himself. The report used psychiatric terms much stronger than those in a later report, which he used on the stand.

In the trial, Pollack testified repeatedly that Sirhan was a "paranoid personality" but that he was not psychotic.

Cooper, however, quoted several sections of Pollack's earlier report in which he described Sirhan as a psychotic.

Explains His Testimony

Pollack, testifying in a high, rapid voice, explained that he meant Sirhan was not "clinically psychotic" and that the difference between "psychotic" and "clinically psychotic" was a matter of degree. He said his language in the earlier reports may not have been precise.

Pollack also testified that he relied on the testimony of witnesses who saw Sirhan around the time of the shooting in coming to his conclusion that Sirhan was not in a psychotic state at the time. "They would have described a

crazy-looking, crazy-acting Sirhan," said Pollack, "if the witnesses are to be believed."

Cooper then asked if Pollack had found "these inferences worthy of more consideration than inferences you drew from psychological data" which diagnosed Sirhan as a paranoid schizophrenic.

"Yes," Pollack answered, then added that he gave the psychological tests "a great deal of weight." He said he "didn't discard

the test data or conclusions, but said he "couldn't give them as much weight" as witnesses' testimony.

Cooper then read excerpts from Pollack's later report, in which he told the prosecution that "ma-

jority of psychiatrists regard

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

[-3 Los Angeles T.
Los Angeles, Calif

Date: 4/3/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-51744

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
APR 3 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

c to Bureau
4-3-69

psychological testing as "unreliable" and have "a negative attitude" toward such tests.

Cooper asked Pollack if, after a meeting with defense psychologists and psychiatrists last Feb. 2, he hadn't admitted he was satisfied with the test results except that he might prefer even one more test. Pollack admitted he had.

Cooper then asked if Pollack himself had a negative attitude toward psychological tests, or was merely mentioning that others did. Pollack said his attitude was a positive one.

Pollack admitted that it was he who asked for the evaluations of two clinical psychologists called as witnesses by the defense. The two, Dr. Georgere Seward and Dr. George DeVoe, both examined two separate series of psychological tests and each concluded that Sirhan was a psychotic paranoid schizophrenic.

Pollack also conceded that he had also used the terms "paranoid," "psychotic" and "schizophrenic" in describing Sirhan in his Feb. 5 report.

Pollack testified that he had spent about 25 hours with Sirhan between last June and Feb. 1, and admitted that he later wrote that longer sessions would "probably" uncover more serious signs of psychosis.

"This defendant is on trial for his life," Cooper interrupted. "If you felt it was probable you would find signs of psychosis, don't you think you

should have asked for more time with him?"

Pollack, obviously angry, replied that the chief defense psychiatrist, Dr. Bernard L. Diamond, had become "angry and resent-

ful" at Pollack's reluctance to divulge his conclusions at the Feb. 2 meeting and that he therefore had not sought further meetings with the defendant.



WITNESS—Dr. Seymour Pollack, left, with prosecuting attorney Lynn Compton, answers questions on

his testimony in Sirhan trial, in which he doubted assassin of Sen. Kennedy was in hypnotic trance.
Times photo by Fitzgerald W. B. Tracy

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

DEFENSE OF SIRHAN NEARS FINAL PHASE

Defense lawyers in the Sirhan-Sirhan murder trial will rest their case today, according to Grant B. Cooper, chief of the defense team.

Cooper, following a adjournment of yesterday's trial session, disclosed that he hoped to complete testimony of final witnesses for the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy by noon. His comments came at the end of prosecution cross-examination of Dr. Bernard I. Diamond, star of the Sirhan psychiatric lineup.

Cooper's associate, Emile Zola Berman, will open redirect examination of Dr. Diamond today.

The remaining two witnesses, according to Michael McCowan, chief defense investigator, will be psychologists Dr. Georgiana Sewant, UCLA, and Dr. George deVos, UC Berkeley. Both of these were originally retained by the prosecution, according to McCowan, but the defense believes their testimony is so valuable to the young Arab that it has subpoenaed them.

Diamond, on the stand yesterday, described his Berkeley colleague as the most distinguished psycho-anthropologist in America. A psycho-anthropologist studies the mental make-up of an individual in relation to his culture.

Dr. deVos was asked to examine Sirhan to determine if his being an Arab would affect the validity of the results of psychological tests he was given because the tests were designed for Americans.

Reportedly, deVos found that Sirhan, who claims that part of his motive for assassinating Kennedy was Arab patriotism, thinks like an American, i.e. a Middle Easterner.

Cross-examination of Dr. Diamond by Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts ended anti-climactically yesterday afternoon, with the two men squabbling over the meaning of some of the writings seized at Sirhan's home on Pasadena's East Howard St. June 6, 1968—the day following the shooting.

Sirhan, who had become angry during Fitts' morning cross-examination, paid little attention to the afternoon session of his trial. He spent his time reading an Arabic newspaper and barely glanced up as the

battle for his life swirled about.

In the morning he had thumped the table with his fist and muttered obscenities at Fitts as the latter questioned the truth of some of his testimony in his own defense.

Fitts repeatedly questioned Dr. Diamond about Sirhan's labeling of several witnesses as "liars," those whom Sirhan claimed wrongly indicating he premeditated the shooting.

The prosecutor asked Dr. Diamond if Sirhan was in a "disoriented state" when he told Pasadena garbage man Alvin Clark that he planned to kill Kennedy. Clark testified that Sirhan made his threat in early April, 1968—shortly after the assassination of Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr.

Of Sirhan's reputed statement to Clark, Dr. Diamond said: "I don't believe he said that."

1968—the day the prosecution contends Sirhan stalked out the Ambassador Hotel preparatory to shooting Kennedy early the morning of June 5.

Q.—On June 2, Sirhan wasn't committable?

A.—I, for one, would certainly have recommended his commitment.

Q.—But he hadn't done anything wrong at that time?

A.—No, but I would have been very alarmed by his notebooks and his psychic experiments. For a paranoid to use self-hypnosis and write such things in his notebooks is a warning signal that no psychiatrist could ignore.

"Sirhan was a very dangerous individual," Dr. Diamond concluded.

Fitts and Diamond duelled late in the cross-examination over Sirhan's condition when he scribbled on the back of an envelope, "Robert F. Kennedy must be disposed of like his brother was... Reactionary."

Diamond conceded that this writing was not the automatic product of self-hypnosis as he alleges were the threats against Kennedy in Sirhan's diaries. However, he insisted that from a psychiatric point of view, the envelope jotting was of little value.

Dr. Diamond also rejected Fitts' contention that Sirhan "was having fun-and-games with you under hypnosis."

Fitts' claim referred to Sirhan's mention under hypnosis of the "polka-dot girl" of the case, a woman falsely identified as a companion of the young Arab the night he shot Kennedy.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald Examiner
Los Angeles
Calif.

Date: 3-27-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-743
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
1 MAR 28 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

October 3-28-69



—UPI Telephoto

In The Herald-Examiner story of the Sirhan Sirhan trial on March 10, 1969, we erroneously identified the above picture of Sal-dallah Sirhan, a brother of Sirhan Sirhan, as that of Sharif Sirhan, another brother of Sirhan Sirhan. The Herald-Examiner regrets the error.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SIRHAN 'TRANCE' FACES STATE ATTACK

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Prosecutors in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial girded today to try to discredit defense psychiatric testimony conceded by an expert medical witness to be both "unlikely and incredible."

The testimony is that of Berkeley criminologist Dr. Bernard L. Diamond. It purports to show that the admitted slayer of Robert F. Kennedy was in a self-induced hypnotic trance when he fatally shot the New York senator June 5, 1968 at the Ambassador Hotel.

Assessing his lengthy evaluation of Sirhan for the jury of eight men and four women, Dr. Diamond said: "I agree that this is an absurd and preposterous story, unlikely and incredible."

Nevertheless, the famed alienist insisted, "These are the psychiatric findings in this case."

"They are absurd, preposterous, unlikely and incredible because the crime itself was a tragically absurd and preposterous event, unlikely and incredible," he testified. "But I am satisfied that this is how Sirhan Bishara Sirhan came to kill Sen. Robert F. Kennedy. . . ."

Chief Deputy Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton, is far from satisfied with the expert testimony.

He flatly refuses to believe Diamond when the psychiatrist says Sirhan was "subject to bizarre dissociated trances in some of which he programmed himself to be the instrument of assassination."

Compton, blunt, burly former UCLA football player, retains his belief that Sirhan is guilty of

first-degree murder in the Kennedy slaying.

He rejects Dr. Diamond's thesis that the killing happened when Sirhan was "in an almost accidentally induced twilight state" . . . that the young Arab "actually executed the crime knowing next to nothing what was happening."

But Compton, and his associates Dep. Dist. Attys. John Howard and David N. Fitts, were unprepared to attack Dr. Diamond's story when court convened yesterday. They were from Superior Court Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding over the trial, a 24-hour reprieve in which to study the psychiatrist's testimony before beginning cross-examination.

Part of the reason for this delay was the mechanics of the Sirhan trial. Unlike the other psychiatrists and psychologists in the case, Dr. Diamond prepared no written report.

The official record of Dr. Diamond's testimony was not available to the prosecution until 10 p.m. Monday from the office court reporter.

But Compton and his partners could not have been unaware of the findings the Berkeley psychiatrist had prepared. Dr. Seymour Pollack, prosecution psychiatrist, was present in Sirhan's isolated Hall of Justice jail cell for part of Dr. Diamond's examination. Furthermore, before he began testifying, the Berkeley man permitted Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts to read his notes—the same notes he read to the jury.

Dr. Diamond put Sirhan under hypnosis in several of the jail cell interviews. Feb. 1, while Dr. Pollack looked on, he induced Sirhan to engage in automatic writing. The young Arab reproduced writings similar to his diaries in which he wrote of his plans to assassinate Kennedy.

In another hypnosis session, also carried out in Dr. Pollack's presence, Sirhan reenacted the Kennedy slaying. Based on these and other examinations, and on more than 100 hours study of the findings of other alienists who examined Sirhan, Dr. Diamond said he came to believe of his patient:

"With absolutely no knowledge or awareness of what was actually happening, in his Rosicrucian and occult experiments, he was gradually programming himself, exactly like a computer is programmed by its magnetic tape, programming himself for the coming assassination," he related.

"In his unconscious mind

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles

Date: 3-27-69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt.

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-742

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 27 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

there existed a plan for the total fulfillment of his sick, paranoid hatred of Kennedy and all who might want to help the Jews. In his conscious mind there was no awareness of such a plan or that he, Sirhan, was to be the instrument of assassination."

The prosecution admits that Dr. Diamond, a world-famous forensic alienist and psychoanalyst, consultant to governors and presidents as well as murder defense teams, is an impressive witness.

Sirhan's usually poker-faced jurors were obviously fascinated in the two days Dr. Diamond was on the stand. Defense attorney Emile Zola Berman actually asked his witness very few questions. He made a few general inquiries and then sat back as the psychiatrist, school-masterlike, lectured the court and jury on the intricacies of the mind of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan.

The prosecutors tried, but were unable to sustain any serious objections to the Diamond testimony. Their biggest victory came when Judge Walker stopped the psychiatrist from explaining to the jury why they might find his story difficult to credit.

Compton will be "looking" for chinks in Dr. Diamond's armor when the cross-examination gets going. He will adopt the same strategy that Fitts used on another defense psychiatrist — Dr. Eric Marcus.

Fitts kept Marcus on the stand for two days and finally wrung from the West Los Angeles psychiatrist an admission that it was possible that Sirhan did premeditate Kennedy's killing, even though the premeditation could not have been "mature and meaningful."

Dr. Diamond has told Sirhan's jurors Sirhan is not the cold-blooded killer Compton and Fitts see. Rather, the alienist says:

"I see Sirhan as small and helpless, pitifully ill, with a demented, psychotic rage, out of control of his own consciousness and his own actions. . . ."

The basic issue of the Sirhan case — the degree of mental responsibility of the defendant — is four-square before the court in today's trial session.

Compton hopes that Dr. Diamond's diagnosis is so "absurd, preposterous, unlikely and incredible," that he will be able to demolish it in cross-examination.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan in Trance on Assassination Night, Psychiatrist Insists

BY LINDA MATHEWS
Times Staff Writer

Under sharp cross-examination, a defense witness for Sirhan B. Sirhan maintained Wednesday that the Palestinian Arab was in a "dissociative state"—a sort of self-induced trance—the night he shot Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts repeatedly asked Dr. Bernard L. Diamond, a UC psychiatrist, what evidence he had to support his contention that Sirhan had had similar experiences previously.

"There is no one thing," Diamond said. "I'm satisfied from the descriptions offered by other members of his family, from his own descriptions, and from what I observed when I had him under hypnosis that he had been in that state before."

Statements Questioned

In this state, Diamond testified previously, Sirhan would have been disoriented and incapable of planning his own actions.

Fitts suggested to Diamond that Sirhan's mother, Mrs. Mary Sirhan, and his brother, Munir, might have told defense investigators and psychiatrists "what they wanted to hear" about Sirhan's mental state, believing it would work to his benefit.

"Did you take into consideration (when you interviewed them) the Sirhan family's willingness to be helpful generally . . . to look for excuses for his behavior?" Fitts asked.

Diamond said that, to the contrary, he often found the Sirhans unwilling to discuss many elements of their history, particularly anything related to Sirhan's father.

Fitts pressed the same point. "Didn't you get the impression that the (Mrs. Sirhan) was laying it on a little bit when she discussed the horrors of war and the effects of the war on her son?" the prosecutor persisted.

Diamond protested that suggestion.

"It is impossible to magnify the horrors of war," he retorted. "I definitely do not think Mrs. Sirhan was 'laying it on.'"

At this point, the 25-year-old defendant glanced anxiously at his mother and brother, who were sitting in second-row seats in the courtroom.

Transcript Shown

The prosecuting attorneys then produced the transcript of a conference between Diamond and five other psychiatrists and psychologists in defense attorney Grant Cooper's office Feb. 2.

Fitts asked Diamond to read an underlined section of the transcript, in which the witness was quoted as saying that "the whole Sirhan family alternated between the grossest kind of evasion and deception and a kind of suggestible state of telling you what you want to know."

"Didn't you make that statement?" the prosecutor asked Diamond.

Diamond agreed that he had but said the statement had been read out of context.

The Sirhans were evasive, he said, "only about a particular kind of information and certain events."

"If they were evasive and deceptive about one thing, might they not be evasive and deceptive about others?" Fitts demanded.

"The answer to that would be obvious, Mr. Fitts, if you would only allow me to tell you what they were deceptive about," Diamond snapped.

Tart Exchange

After much wrangling about whether Diamond should be able to explain that one matter, he managed to say that they were only evasive when discussing the head of the family, Bishara Sirhan.

In another tart exchange, Fitts charged that Diamond was dodging his questions about what triggered the shooting at the Ambassador.

Fitts drew the concession that Diamond believed that Sirhan in his normal state, even though he was a paranoid schizophrenic, would have been harmless had he not gone into a dissociative state.

But Diamond insisted that "is it just not that simple."

Childhood Events

"To explain this crime," he said, "you have to go back to Jerusalem in 1948, when Sirhan was a child, and study the whole series of events since then."

Fitts said he accepted that all those occurrences had shaped Sirhan but asked again whether the actual shooting had not been triggered by a dissociative state brought on by drinking and by mirrors and bright lights in the hotel.

The doctor again refused to accept this and said, "I won't let you put words in my mouth and say I said what I didn't say."

"Doctor, I don't know why you're dodging me," Fitts said.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 Los Angeles
Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3-27-69
Edition: Home
Author: Linda Mathews
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-747

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 27 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-27-69

Planned Strategy

The prosecution was expected to attack the contention of Diamond and other psychiatrists called by the defense that Sirhan was incapable of premeditative murder.

One strategy, it is thought, will include introducing a film of Sen. Kennedy's victory speech to rebut claims that Sirhan became enraged by the senator's advocacy of more arms for Israel.

"It would be important to the jury to see that Sen. Kennedy did nothing that night to rekindle the flame," Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton told reporters. "That was an innocuous speech."

Diamond admitted that Sirhan lied on the witness stand when he denied prosecution witnesses' testimony that he practiced rapid firing with his pistol at a San Gabriel gun range last June 4. Diamond said Sirhan lied because he feared the truth might

reveal the depth of his emotional illness.

Fitts, through several questions, sought to elicit from Diamond an admission that Sirhan had "concocted" his story of the assassination to put himself in a favorable light.

But at that suggestion, Diamond smiled and said that if Sirhan had concocted his story, it was a story "that couldn't possibly help him. He was willing to admit he killed Sen. Kennedy, hated him and carried out the assassination to prevent him from becoming President and keeping the bombers from Israel."

Fitts then quoted from Diamond's summation of his own testimony, where Diamond said, "I agree that this is an absurd, preposterous story, unlikely and incredible." Fitts asked Diamond who he "agreed" with.

Diamond smiled again and replied, "I agree with the public and the world."

Defense attorneys indicated they would conduct a brief redirect examination of Diamond today, call two final defense witnesses—two cultural anthropologists from Berkeley — and probably rest their case this afternoon.



WITNESS FOR SIRHAN—Dr. Bernard L. Diamond, UC psychiatrist.
Times photo

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan 'Programmed' Self To Kill RFK, Psychiatrist Says

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan through self-hypnosis—programmed himself "like a computer" to assassinate Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

This is the conclusion of Dr. Bernard L. Diamond, Berkeley criminologist and star of the psychiatric team testifying for the young Arab at his murder trial in the Hall of Justice.

Dr. Diamond climaxed two days of testimony yesterday by reading his opinion to Sirhan's jury of eight men and four women. He said:

"Without actual knowledge of what was happening, he gradually programmed himself for the coming assassination . . . like a computer programs itself with magnetic tapes."

Dr. Diamond maintained that the programming took place in Sirhan's unconscious mind "the act of a sick paranoid."

"In his conscious mind, there was no awareness of such a plan or that he, Sirhan, would be the instrument by which it would happen."

Sirhan was a mail-order hypnotist, Dr. Diamond found. He learned the tricks of self-mesmerized him by the Rosicrucian Order, mystic lodge of which he was a member.

The lights and mirrors, said Dr. Diamond, the noise and tension of the Ambassador Hotel the night of June 4 mesmerized the young Arab so that "he became confused." Minutes later, shortly after midnight June

5, he fired the shot that took Kennedy's life.

Sirhan, in Dr. Diamond's analysis:

"Through chance, circumstances and a succession of relatively unrelated events, he found himself in the situation which resulted in the assassination."

"He had not consciously planned to be in that situation."

"But he was confused, bewildered and partially intoxicated."

"The mirrors, the flashing lights and general confusion were like pressing the button that starts the computer."

Just like in his experiments.

"Only this time it was very real. This time there was no pencil in his hand . . . only a loaded gun."

With a pencil, Dr. Diamond testified, Sirhan while hypnotized in his isolated Hall of Justice jail cell, engaged in "automatic writing," which closely paralleled the diaries seized at his home on Pasadena's East Howard St.

From this hypnotism session, Dr. Diamond said he learned that the young Arab made the entries threatening Kennedy's life while he was self-hypnotized. He made similar writings during the jail cell session.

Dr. Diamond said:

"I asked him to write about Kennedy."

Dr. Diamond said, " . . . he wrote Robert F. Kennedy over and over again."

"I told him, 'tell us more.'"

After a time, Dr. Diamond said, Sirhan, still hypnotized, wrote:

"Robert F. Kennedy, Robert F. Kennedy, RFK, RFK, RFK, Robert F. Kennedy must die, Robert F. Kennedy must die, Robert F. Kennedy must die, Robert F. Kennedy must die, Robert F. Kennedy must die, Robert F. Kennedy must die, Robert F. Kennedy must die, Robert F. Kennedy must die."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/25/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Gooden
Title: Kennalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-A-740
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
MAR 26 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

Cite Bureau
3-26-69

The hypnosis session took place Feb. 1 in the presence of Dr. Seymour Pollack, prosecution psychiatrist, Dr. Diamond said.

Sirhan would not answer the question, "Who killed Kennedy?"

His only reply—"I don't know."

In hypnosis Sirhan fought the idea that Kennedy was dead.

Asked, "Is Kennedy dead?" he replied, "No, no, no!"

"Is Kennedy alive?" ... "Yes, yes, yes."

Sirhan wrote that he had no help in killing Kennedy and received no money for the assassination, Dr. Diamond said.

Groaning in agony in his hypnotic state, Sirhan then told Dr. Diamond that he had written his diaries while under self-hypnosis. When he awoke he had no conscious memory of the writing he had done, even though Dr. Diamond had given him a post-hypnotic suggestion demanding that he remember.

Sirhan always denied that he had been hypnotized ... although Diamond "put him under" several times. Finally, to convince him, the psychiatrist hypnotized him and told him he would act like a monkey and climb the bars of the his cell when he woke up.

Sirhan did, but still did not believe he was hypnotized. He claimed he was just exercising, even though he had mimicked a monkey for his deputy sheriff guards.

Sirhan was invariably hostile to him throughout six hypnotic sessions and other interviews, the psychiatrist said; and still disputes the findings.

"Sirhan does not agree with me. Sirhan prefers to deny his mental illness ... his trances.

He does this successfully through his loss of memory. I doubt that he believes it was truly his writing that threatened firing the gun he was in a the assassination of Kennedy.

"Sirhan rather believes that he is a fanatical martyr ...

that he has saved his people and become a great hero. He is willing to die in the gas chamber for this.

"I see him as a small person ... acting in a demented psychotic rage ... subject to bizarre trances ... pitifully ill.

"In an almost accidentally induced twilight state, he executed the crime knowing next to nothing about what happened. This is how Sirhan came to kill Kennedy on the night of June 5, 1968."

Sirhan resists violently any suggestion that he is mentally ill, Dr. Diamond reported, but he fears mental illness, and he fears that he has learned to do with his experiments with the occult.

"He practiced his Rosicrucian lessons diligently until he became frightened ... His experience with these experiments convinced Sirhan he was losing his mind and going insane ... He concluded he was crazy and feared to let anyone know what was happening ... He was afraid of being locked up.

"Meanwhile, he was using every opportunity to shoot his gun ... as if every shot would make up for his impotence and failure."

Using his tricks of self-hypnosis, Sirhan after Kennedy pledged to give bombers to Israel if he became president, ... willed him to die so that the bombers would not go to Israel.

"It is as if one imagines something and thinks if I thought this hard enough it will happen."

Defense attorney Emile Zola Berman asked Dr. Diamond if he had an opinion about Sirhan's mental state at the precise moment of the shooting.

"Yes," answered the psychiatrist. "At the precise moment of firing the gun he was in a highly abnormal psychotic state ... a blind primitive reflex rage reaction ..."



DR. BERNARD DIAMOND, LEFT, INVESTIGATOR MIKE MCCOY, RIGHT

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan's Reenactment of Slaying Described

Psychiatrist Tells How Suspect Recalled Night of Assassination While Under Hypnosis

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's own memory of the killing of Robert F. Kennedy came vividly to life Monday for the first time in public, as psychiatrist Bernard L. Diamond revealed Sirhan's reenactment of the slaying under hypnosis.

The courtroom was spellbound as Dr. Diamond described Sirhan's drunken, circuitous route to a meeting Diamond said Sirhan never expected.

Diamond said he put Sirhan under hypnosis last Jan. 26 for the second of six times and then took him step by step through the night of last June 4 and 5.

Both the Palestinian Arab defendant and newsmen who listened to Sirhan's testimony of amnesia about the killing sat in an electric silence as Diamond's narrative went back 10 months:

Just past midnight on June 5, Sirhan was standing, drunk and confused, in the pantry of the Ambassador when Sen. Kennedy and his followers burst through the far door — "rushing at me," Sirhan thought.

Sudden Change of Mind

Suddenly Sirhan thought he'd like to shake hands with Sen. Kennedy, who in seconds was almost upon him, almost in physical contact.

Instead, Sirhan whipped a pistol from his belt, shouted "You son of a bitch!" and shot Sen. Kennedy almost point-blank in the head.

As Sirhan shouted these words in his hypnotic reliving of the scene, both Diamond and Dr. Seymour Pollack jumped, startled. Sirhan's face was contorted with a violent rage, Diamond said.

Then Sirhan was silent for a few moments when suddenly he began to choke. "He was gasping for breath and actually turned a little blue," said Diamond. "I became fearful myself."

But then Sirhan dropped into a deep hypnotic sleep, and after he had rested and was awakened, he had no recollection whatever of the scene he had just enacted, Diamond said.

Post-Hypnosis Falls

Diamond, a psychiatrist and psychoanalyst who is also a full professor of law, criminology and psychiatry at UC Berkeley, said that despite his post-hypnotic suggestion to Sirhan that his amnesia would be wiped out after hypnosis, Sirhan still cannot remember the killing except when in hypnotic trance.

The hypnotic trance is a psychiatric reproduction of the dissociative state the defense contends Sirhan was suffering when he killed Sen. Kennedy.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

E-3 Los Angeles "in
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/25/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Wick W. Williams
Title: Kenseit

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-739

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 25 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-25-69

Diamond testified that what a subject says under hypnosis may not be the truth but a remembered fantasy about what happens during an alleged period of amnesia.

A person is also capable of deliberate lies under hypnosis, Diamond said, but not of concealing things he doesn't know the importance of. Hypnosis overcomes unconscious resistance and evasions, he said.

The psychiatrist's diagnosis of Sirhan as a paranoid schizophrenic agrees with the opinion of five previous defense psychiatrists or psychologists who said it was perfectly consistent with Sirhan's paranoia that after hypnosis Sirhan became suspicious that "somebody had done something to him."

Sirhan Denied It Worked

Diamond said Sirhan at first denied that hypnosis had worked and bragged privately to defense investigator Michael McCowan that he had tricked Diamond while in a feigned trance.

To prove hypnosis didn't work on him Sirhan told McCowan he would raise the middle finger of one hand in an obscene gesture, to prove he wasn't "under."

Tipped off, Diamond said he watched the next time and saw Sirhan making an effort to give McCowan his little signal "but under hypnosis, he couldn't budge it."

Another time, Diamond said, he gave Sirhan the post-hypnotic suggestion that his arm would be paralyzed after he came around. Sirhan didn't notice this, he said, until he reached for a cigaret and became alarmed when he couldn't move his arm or feel anything.

Restores Use of Arm

Diamond said he restored the use of his arm by putting him back under and removing the suggestion.

Diamond said that Sirhan, under hypnosis, denied that anyone put him up to shooting Sen. Kennedy, paid him for it, advised him about how to do it or knew in advance that he would.

"Were you the only person involved," Diamond asked.

"Yes," said Sirhan.

"Why did you shoot Sen. Kennedy?" Diamond asked.

"The bombers," Sirhan replied.

On the witness stand, Sirhan said earlier that his former love for Sen. Kennedy turned to hate when he learned that Sen. Kennedy advocated giving 50 jet bombers to Israel after the six-day Arab-Israeli war of June, 1967.

Diamond testified that the first time he hypnotized Sirhan, he was surprised at Sirhan's reaction.

He asked Sirhan what he hoped to do for his Arab people and how he felt about the Jews, and to each question, he said, Sirhan would break into convulsive rage, fists clenched, arms rigid, face contorted, sobbing hysterically with tears running down his face.

Diamond said that Sirhan normally appeared to him as supercilious, smart-alecky and profane, but that under hypnosis and questioned about Arabs or Jews, he showed "his first real emotional depth." He reacted that way, Diamond said, only to those two questions.

Tells of Night's Events

For the hours leading up to the shooting of Sen. Kennedy, Diamond said, Sirhan filled in this picture under hypnosis:

After having four Tom Collinses at various political victory parties at the Ambassador June 4, Sirhan went back to his car to go home, but felt "dizzy, drunk, sickish-tired." He opened the car door, saw his pistol on the back seat and thought, "The Jews will steal my gun." He tucked his gun under his belt and returned to the hotel for some coffee to sober up on.

He wandered around the hotel until he found a coffee bar in an alcove between the Embassy Room, where Sen. Kennedy was speaking, and the Colonial Room, where the senator headed after his speech.

The alcove was walled with mirrors, and Sirhan became confused with the brightly lighted chandeliers reflecting in the mirrors, and the crowds of people, multiplied by the dozen in the floor-to-ceiling looking-glass.

He had several cups of coffee with a girl—described as brunette and beautiful—and Diamond said Sirhan "was absolutely consistent in denying that there was any thought of doing anything with his gun."

Diamond discounted the possibility that Sirhan might be faking mental illness, saying that among paranoid schizophrenics like Sirhan, their chief wish is to "fake sanity, rather than insanity," because they don't want to be thought of as psychotic.

The psychiatrist cited one previously undisclosed family scene which, he said, contributed heavily to Sirhan's mental deterioration. In the summer of 1957, Sirhan's father, Bishara, and brother, Adel, were digging an irrigation ditch around a tree, while Sirhan skipped around in the mud.

After warning Sirhan to stop, Bishara started to beat the boy but was stopped by Adel. Bishara, Diamond said, stormed into the house and told his wife, Mary, that she must choose between him or the children, because he demanded to be master of his house. She chose the children, Diamond said, whereupon Bishara took the family savings, returned to Jordan and has not been in touch with his family since.

Diamond said he once considered using sodium pentathol—"truth serum"—on Sirhan instead of hypnosis.

Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker, it was learned, ruled this out after learning that in rare cases a subject could die from its effects. Judge Walker felt that the death of Sirhan, a Palestinian Arab, from a dosage of sodium pentathol administered by Jewish doctors—Diamond, psychologist Eric Marcuse and psychiatrist Seymour Pollack—would create endless political controversy.

Diamond said that under hypnosis Feb. 1 he also had Sirhan write down answers to questions, and that in this disassociated state the writing "astounded" him because it was extremely similar to his notebook writing.

He said Sirhan was in a very light trance when he began, but soon "slipped automatically into a hypnotic state," and then wrote pages of repetitious words and phrases, including "Robert Kennedy is

going to die," over and over.

Asked who killed Sen. Kennedy, Sirhan wrote, "I don't know." Asked if Kennedy were dead, he wrote, "No, no, no, no . . ." Asked if he were alive, Sirhan wrote, "Yes, yes, yes, yes, yes . . ." Diamond said this represented Sirhan's subconscious wish.

Sirhan admitted under hypnosis that he was doing "crazy writing," said he was doing it for "practice" in "mind control." Sirhan said he was hypnotized by "the mirror, my mirror, my mirror," when he wrote in his notebooks in his room, and said he was taught by "AMORC."

The letters stand for the Ancient and Mystical Order of the Rosae Crucis, or Rosicrucians, to which Sirhan belonged.

Diamond said he was puzzled by Sirhan's deep sleep and reluctance to talk during hypnosis until he learned from Sirhan himself that he had undergone self-hypnosis many times without realizing it.

Diamond capped his testimony with a comprehensive summary of his view of Sirhan's emotional deterioration:

"The combination of events which led to the assassination of Robert F. Kennedy by Sirhan, I think, started with Sirhan Sirhan's exposure to violence and death in Jerusalem in 1948, and it continued with his immigration to the United States, the development of his mental illness in which his whole personality altered and he became preoccupied with revolution, violence, destruction, paranoid fantasies of glory, power and becoming the savior of his people.

"As his delusional fantasies grew bolder, his fanatical hatred and fear of the Jews increased with each radio and television broadcast concerning the tension in the Middle East, while in real life, Sirhan was withdrawing into a ruminative, brooding, isolated sense of failure and insignificance. To improve his mind and to gain control, he hoped, over his personal destiny, he read mystical books and subscribed to and studied the Rosicrucian correspondence courses in self-hypnosis and mind power.

"He practiced his lessons diligently to the point where he became frightened by his own magical, supernatural powers of concentration. He actually believed that he could stop the bombers from reaching Israel and thereby save the Arabs, simply by willing the death of all who would help the Jews.

"His experiments in inducing the magical trances worked better than he realized—they worked so well that they frightened Sirhan and convinced him that he was losing his mind, that he was going insane. Repeatedly, he would practice his lessons doing all that his correspondence courses prescribed, looking in the mirror, thinking thoughts of love and peace, only to emerge from his trance—a trance that he did not really believe had actually happened—to find his notebook filled with incoherent threats of violence and assassination.

"He knew it was his writing, but he had no knowledge or recollection of writing them. He concluded he was crazy and he feared to let anyone know what was happening. He thought they would lock him away in a mental hospital.

"He sought the remedy in his books on mysticism and the occult, and he daydreamed of the power of his gun, taking every opportunity on many different days to shoot it, firing hundreds and hundreds of shots as if each shot would somehow make up for his ever growing sense of helplessness, impotence and fear of loss of self-control.

"With absolutely no knowledge or awareness of what was actually happening in his Rosicrucian and occult experiments, he was gradually programming himself, exactly like a computer is programmed by its magnetic tape, programming himself for the coming assassination. In his unconscious mind there existed a plan for the total fulfillment of his sick, paranoid hatred of Kennedy and all who might want to help the Jews. In his conscious mind there was no awareness of such a plan or that he, Sirhan, was to be the instrument of assassination.

"It is my opinion that through chance, circumstances, and a succession or unrelated events, Sirhan found himself in the physical situation in which the assassination occurred. I am satisfied that he had not consciously planned to be in that situation. I am satisfied that if he had been fully conscious and in his usual mental state he would have been quite harmless.

"But he was confused, bewildered and partially intoxicated. The mirrors in the hotel lobby, the flashing lights, the general confusion—this was like pressing the button which starts the computer.

"I agree that this is an absurd and preposterous story, unlikely and incredible. I doubt that Sirhan himself agrees with me as to how everything happened.

"Sirhan would rather believe that he is the fanatical martyr who by his noble act of self-sacrifice has saved his people and become a great hero. He claims to be ready to die in the gas chamber for the glory of the Arab people.

"However, I see Sirhan as small and helpless, pitifully ill, with a demented, psychotic rage, out of control of his own consciousness and his own actions, subject to bizarre dissociated trances in some of which he programmed himself to be the instrument of assassination, and then in an almost accidentally induced twilight state he actually executed the crime, knowing next to nothing as to what was happening."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Diamond: Sirhan Mind Numb

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Criminologist Bernard L. Diamond takes the witness box today in the Sirhan-Bishara Sirhan murder trial to tell the jury of eight men and four women that Sirhan was self-hypnotized when he shot Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Diamond, professor of law, criminology and medicine at the University of California at Berkeley and one of the nation's most distinguished psychiatrists, is expected to tell the Sirhan jury that the defendant mesmerized himself peering at mirrors in the Ambassador Hotel before he gunned down the Presidential aspirant early June 5, 1968.

Defense counsel have said they will offer the excuse of self-hypnosis, and the prosecution is openly concerned about the effect the new defense theory will have on the jury.

Friday, chief defense attorney Grant B. Cooper laid the groundwork for the self-hypnosis defense when he put his top investigator, Michael McCowan, on the stand to detail for the jury the number and positions of floor and ceiling mirrors in the Venetian and Embassy Rooms of the Ambassador. It is in these two rooms that Sirhan spent his time prior to his admitted killing of Kennedy.

McCowan, in his testimony, also positioned the chandeliers in the two rooms. He positioned the overhead lights in relation to the mirrors. He pointed out that while the chandeliers are electrically illuminated, the bulbs in them are "candle-like."

Earlier testimony in the case indicated that Sirhan, in his delving into the occult, did weird experiments in which he believed that he caused candlelight to change color by psychic power.

Dr. Diamond spent 25 hours examining Sirhan in his insulated jail cell in the Hall of Justice.

Reportedly, part of this examination involved placing the defendant under hypnosis.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif

Date: 3/24/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodeno
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-739

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 25 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-25-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

The second of five persons shot with Sen. Robert F. Kennedy in the Ambassador last June filed suit in Superior court against Sirhan B. Sirhan. Mrs. Elizabeth Young Evans, 43, of 16032 Placerita Canyon Road, Saugus, asked \$351,500 damages, charging she suffered a head wound, shock, pain and mental anguish during the shooting.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-A-1
Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/23/69
Edition: Final
Author:
Editor: Wick P. Williams
Title: Rensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-737

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

1088

cc to Bureau
3-24-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Alcohol Turned Sirhan Into 'Beast', Court Told

Psychiatrist Testifies That Defendant Had to Be Restrained After Drinking for Tests

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

A psychiatrist said Friday that Sirhan Bishara Sirhan was deliberately made drunk in his cell last year for medical tests, but had to be physically restrained because the alcohol turned him into "a wild beast."

Dr. Eric H. Marcus said Sirhan was given six ounces of gin in Tom Collinses, downing four in 18 minutes, "and you might say he went berserk."

While drunk, Sirhan would not talk about his fatal shooting of Robert F. Kennedy last June, but spoke of Kennedy as if he were still alive, Marcus testified.

He said Sirhan mumbled that "20 years is long enough for the Jews," that Kennedy "didn't have to help them, and 'The bastard (Kennedy) isn't worth the bullets,' when asked if he killed him.

Marcus said Sirhan was very polite when sober, but when drunk yelled "Get that bastard out of here" as Marcus, a Jew, started to enter the cell. But later, Marcus said, Sirhan mistook him for a brother and "asked me to take him home." Marcus said he had the impression Sirhan thought he was at the Ambassador and wanted to be driven home.

Appeared Nervous, Agitated

The defense, which called Marcus to testify, contends that Sirhan was intoxicated the morning of June 5, when he shot Kennedy.

Marcus said Sirhan appeared extremely nervous and agitated when drunk in his cell and at one point grabbed for his own throat, thinking he was choking.

Marcus said Sirhan was given the alcohol to test his brain waves under the influence of alcohol.

Earlier, Marcus conceded Sirhan might be lying or "malingering" in claiming he doesn't remember killing Kennedy.

But, Marcus added, he doesn't believe so.

It was also brought out Friday for the first time that Sirhan may have begun vaguely planning an assassination as early as 1962 or 1963, when he was a junior or senior at John Muir High School in Pasadena.

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper offered into evidence two of Sirhan's high school history texts.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 Los Angeles T
Los Angeles, Calif

Date: 3/22/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick P. Willie
Title: Kenseit

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-736

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-24-69

In the first, where the assassination of William McKinley is described as the third slaying of a U.S. president, Sirhan wrote in the margin: "Many more will come."

In the second book, a European history text, Sirhan underlined passages describing the 1914 assassination of Austrian Archduke Francis Ferdinand—the act which triggered World War I. It was the only underlining in the entire text.

Under cross-examination by Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts, Marcus said Sirhan had told him at some point during four psychiatric interviews stretching from June through October of 1968 that he couldn't remember the hours immediately before and after the shooting of Kennedy.

"You don't believe it, do you?" asked Fitts.

Marcus paused thoughtfully, then said, "Yes, I believe it."

Marcus said Sirhan might have developed a retrograde amnesia, which results "when a person does something that causes so much anxiety that it is blocked out of a person's mind . . . In my experience, I have hardly ever seen a murderer who remembers what he's done. I think it's a bona fide amnesia, not malingering."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan 'Drawn Like a Magnet' To RFK, Says Noted Criminologist

By MYRNA OLIVER
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan was "drawn like a magnet" to Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, whom he admittedly shot to death June 5, a noted criminologist has testified.

Dr. Bernard L. Diamond, associate dean of the School of Criminology at University of California at Berkeley, said yesterday at Sirhan's murder trial that after eight examination sessions with the Arab defendant he diagnosed him as mentally ill and suffering from schizophrenia.

Defense attorneys have paraded six psychiatric experts before the jury of eight men and four women in an attempt to prove that Sirhan was of diminished mental capacity and incapable of committing premeditated murder.

Dr. Diamond, a full professor in law, medicine and criminology, said Sirhan told him on their first meeting:

"To Kennedy I was drawn like a magnet. I loved him. I hated him."

He said Sirhan "frequently expressed a great love for Kennedy."

The criminologist said he came to accept the contradictory conversation as typical of Sirhan.

Dr. Diamond, who said he saw psychological test results showing Sirhan mentally ill before he met the defendant, recounted what Sirhan told him about the night of June 4-5.

"The story he related to me on the initial interview is essentially the story which he told on the witness stand," he said, with the same "conspicuous omission" of events of the shooting

or memory of writing in diaries that he wanted to assassinate Kennedy.

Sirhan testified and told the psychiatrist that he went to Wilshire Boulevard June 4 in search of a "Jew parade" he had read about in a Los Angeles newspaper, not realizing he was a day early for the event.

Sirhan said he became angrier and angrier when he did not find the parade.

"In my opinion he showed what was a very characteristic response of Sirhan," said the doctor, "that when things are not exactly as he has anticipated or planned, he gets confused. He gets angry."

The doctor said Sirhan told him he had no memory of the shooting but did remember being taken to the police station and being questioned by officers. In his court testimony,

Sirhan said he remembered little about the police interview.

Dr. Diamond said he asked Sirhan why he had been unwilling to give the officers his name. "He gave me the kind of answer I have come to expect of Sirhan: 'It would be held against me. The officer told me it would.'"

Sirhan had asked officers to repeat his constitutional rights including that he had the right to remain silent.

Dr. Diamond said Sirhan recognized the writing in the notebooks as his own but did not remember doing the writing.

Asked by defense counsel Elmie Zola Berman if he believed Sirhan, Dr. Diamond said:

"I would prefer to say he had no recognition that the notebooks were his, that there was no meaningful association in his mind, so that the letters, the words, the sentences, the threats existed as isolated entities. No connection was made between them. He couldn't tell me whether he agreed with them or not."

One diary notation had said: "Robert F. Kennedy must be assassinated by June 5."

In his initial interview with Sirhan Dec. 23, 1968, Dr. Diamond said he picked up "quite subtle evidence of his mental illness."

He said Sirhan suffered from schizophrenia, or a dual personality, although he showed none of the "gross and obvious signs such as delusions . . . peculiar mannerisms . . . violence . . . babbling."

Four psychologists and one other psychiatrist, Dr. Eric H. Marcus, have testified that Sirhan suffers from paranoia and schizophrenia and lacks the mental capacity to "maturely and meaningfully" premeditate murder.

Earlier yesterday, Dr. Marcus, under inclusive cross-examination by Assistant District Attorney David N. Fitts, admitted Sirhan did have the capacity to premeditate and to have malice but only when it did not involve his areas of obsession such as the Arab Israeli conflict.

Sirhan, however, he said, "had the capability to form the specific intent to kill and specifically to kill Senator Kennedy."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif

Date: 3/22/69
Edition: 8 Star
Author: Myrna Oliver
Editor: Donald Goodenough
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

96-156-31-735

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-24-69
W

Sirhan could plot assassination, Dr. Marcus said, but not do it "maturely and meaningfully," two necessary elements of first-degree murder.

The defendant "quite possibly" lied to the court and to him about not knowing the events of the shooting, Dr. Marcus testified.

He said if Sirhan had been suffering from any type of amnesia, he would have—coming out of it in the police station—demanded to know where he was and why he was there. Sirhan never asked the reason he was being held, according to police officers' testimony.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

\$350,000 Suit Names Sirhan

Mrs. Elizabeth Young Evans, 43, has filed a \$351,000 Superior Court damage suit against Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, charging that she was shot during Sirhan's assassination attack on Sen. Robert F. Kennedy in June.

Mrs. Evans, who lives at 16032 Placerita Canyon Road, Saugus, also named 50 "John Does" in her complaint, charging she was shot in the head by a stray bullet during the Ambassador Hotel fracas.

The 50 Does include "unknown" persons who may have conspired with Sirhan in the fatal shooting. Also named as Doe defendants are the manufacturers and sellers of the pistol used in the assassination.

The lawsuit, filed by attorney Daniel F. Smith, claims the manufacturers and sellers are liable for damages because they "took no care to prevent the weapon from reaching dangerous persons such as Sirhan."

Mrs. Evans' suit is the second filed by a bystander to the assassination.

Irwin Stroll, 17, of 6089 Horner St., Los Angeles, filed a \$1 million assault and battery claim against Sirhan Feb. 2. Stroll, a Kennedy campaign worker, said he was shot in the leg during the attack.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-4 Herald-Examiner;
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/22/69
Edition: 8 Star
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodeno
Title: Kensealt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-734

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-24-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Trial Pace Picks Up Tempo

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy moved toward a speedy climax today with the defense calling its star psychiatric witness—Berkeley criminologist Dr. Bernard Diamond. Dr. Diamond is on tap for this afternoon's session of the trial. He will follow Dr. Eric Marcus,

West Los Angeles psychiatrist appointed for Sirhan by Superior Court Judge Arthur Allerton at the time of the young Arab's indictment in June of last year.

Explaining the defense strategy switch, which saw it sharply reduce the number of witnesses it will call, chief defense lawyer Grant B. Cooper said:

"We might as well wind it up. We're in good shape so why prolong it."

Cooper foresaw that the defense could conclude its case by the end of next week. Only 24 hours earlier he had forecast a timetable which would have lasted at least two weeks. One psychiatrist, Dr. George Abbe

of Norwalk State Hospital, who had been scheduled to testify yesterday, will not be called at all, said Cooper.

An anthropologist, Dr. George deVogel, a psychologist, Dr. Georgiana Seward of University of Southern California, and chief defense investigator Michael McCowan will be the last witnesses called, according to Cooper.

The defense also apparently has abandoned its plans to call a prosecution psychiatrist—Dr. Sheldon Pollack. Earlier, Ron Allen, another defense investigator had claimed Pollack would be called by Sirhan's attorneys because his evaluation of the defendant agreed with those of defense alienists.

However, some question of this arose yesterday. During Cooper's examination of Dr. Marcus, it was brought out that while Dr. Pollack does agree that the young Arab defendant is mentally ill, he also contends that Sirhan's illness bears no

(Continued on Page A-2, Col. 1)

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/21/69
Edition: 8 Star
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title:

Character:
or
Classification:
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

44-1574-733

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Doctors Disagree on Sirhan

(Continued from Page A-1)

relation to his admitted slaying of Sen. Kennedy last June 5. Dr. Marcus testified he disagrees with this conclusion.

As Dr. Marcus sees Sirhan,

"he started to show signs of mental illness at the very latest at the time following his horse accident."

In 1968 Sirhan, working as an exercise boy at Granja Vista del Rio Ranch, outside Corona, suffered a head injury when he was thrown from a horse. He suffered no brain damage, however, according to Dr. Marcus.

"His adjustment and mental state have deteriorated since then in a slow and insidious way."

The psychiatrist said he had made a detailed study of diaries Sirhan kept in which he wrote of his plans to kill Kennedy. Of these Dr. Marcus said:

"In his notebooks some of the erratic, irrational ramblings are typical of diaries and letters that insane people have written who have threatened the president, or who are now hospitalized or incarcerated at Atascadero."

"I have a package of letters of (written by) insane murderers at Atascadero. Sirhan's writings are quite similar, particularly to the threatening letters written to presidents."

Claiming he had made a study of assassinations, Dr. Marcus differentiated between "political assassinations" and "assassinations of politicians."

He classified Sirhan's killing of Kennedy as the latter and said:

"These are lone events by isolated individuals who are almost always found to be very seriously mentally ill. This is true of each one since the threatened assassination of Andrew Jackson. Letters threatening the president are written by these individuals."

Dr. Marcus defined "political assassination" as those carried out by groups. . . "the activity of several people committed to assassination. The best example is the attempted assassination

by Puerto Ricans of President Truman."

Dr. Marcus insisted that Sirhan is "mentally ill" but avoided putting a label on the illness. He explained that "as a psychiatrist" he avoided specific terms for mental illness.

The defense has claimed that Sirhan's killing of Kennedy came in part from his feelings of intense Arab nationalism. But Dr. Marcus testified that tests had shown that Sirhan thought as an American, not an Arab. He said these conclusions agreed with those of Dr. Voost.

Continuing his description of the defendant, Dr. Marcus said:

"A person such as Sirhan has two personalities existing in him at the same time—a sick personality and a healthy personality. These are not in watertight compartments. One may take over, or the other, or both at the same time."

"A lot depends on how much stress the person is under at the time. That is where we get the word schizophrenia which means divided or two."

Sirhan's mental illness "goes way back," Dr. Marcus maintained. "The fall from the horse was the last straw—at that point he went downhill."

Dr. Marcus differentiated Sirhan's condition from that of a man who sometimes acts in a disordered way because of anger or neurosis. In cases such as Sirhan's, he said, it is "as if the brain were a telephone switchboard and the wires were crossed . . . not a disturbance of mood or temper, but a disturbance with the way you can think."

Dr. Marcus' testimony followed that of three clinical psychologists called by the defense yesterday.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Premeditation of Sirhan Termed Not Meaningful

Psychologist, Psychiatrist Agree He Planned Slaying but Not in Mature Sense

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

A clinical psychologist and a psychiatrist both testified Thursday that Sirhan Bishara Sirhan premeditated the killing of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, but not in the "mature and meaningful" way that must be proved to justify a death sentence for first-degree murder.

Psychologist O. Roderick Richardson said Sirhan's plan to kill Kennedy "would be premeditation of the sort when a mental patient in a locked ward plans to steal the keys from the night nurse and escape through the kitchen window."

Psychiatrist Eric H. Marcus conceded that Sirhan was capable of planning the slaying, forming an intent to commit murder and harboring malice aforethought. But, Marcus added, such plans arose from Sirhan's paranoid view of himself as "a savior of society," and in this context could not constitute mature and meaningful premeditation.

Trial Moves Along Fast

Sirhan's murder trial, now in its 11th week, moved forward rapidly Thursday as Richardson, testifying for the third day, was excused and followed on the stand by two more clinical psychologists, both of whom were excused with little or no cross-examination.

Dr. Stephen J. Howard and Dr. William Crain testified that they examined the raw data from five psychological tests Richardson administered to Sirhan and, evaluating the tests independently, reached the same diagnosis as Richardson: that Sirhan is a paranoid schizophrenic and was in a state of diminished mental capacity when he shot Kennedy.

It was with the testimony of Marcus that it was revealed for the first time in open court that the prosecution's psychiatric consultant, Dr. Seymour Pollack, also considers Sirhan a paranoid schizophrenic.

Mental Illness and Crime

But, Marcus testified, Pollack also maintains that there is no relationship between Sirhan's mental illness and the crime.

Marcus said he found Sirhan suffering from delusions of persecution, particularly political persecution, and said "I fail to see the logic" of contending there is no relationship between Sirhan's delusions and his "committing a crime directly related" to his political views.

Marcus also admitted, under questioning by defense attorney Grant B. Cooper, that he and all other psychological and psychiatric experts in the case, including Pollack, had met on Feb. 2 in Cooper's office to compare their findings.

It was after that meeting, when all reports for both sides turned out to be in substantial agreement, that

the prosecution and defense agreed to submit a change of plea, from innocent to guilty, with the understanding that Sirhan would receive a life sentence.

Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker was willing to accept the plea change, but insisted that the jury determine the penalty. Sirhan was unwilling to risk the death penalty at that time, so the agreement fell through.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-3 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/21/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Wick B. Williams
Title: Kinsalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-732

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 21 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-21-69

The defense went on with its original plea and the prosecution was committed to try the case and attempt to dilute the effect of psychiatric testimony that is corroborated by its own experts.

In cross-examination of Richardson, Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts asked if Sirhan might have slain Kennedy because he wanted to be regarded as a hero to the Palestinian Arab cause.

'Not Grandstanding'

Richardson said Sirhan "was not grandstanding." He conceded that some people could have seen themselves in a hero's role in the Arab-Israeli conflict and decided to kill on a rational basis, but not Sirhan. Richardson said Sirhan's tests showed that his decisions are not made on a rational basis but a psychotic one.

Marcus testified that Sirhan's mental illness apparently became noticeable only after he was thrown from a horse in September, 1966. Sirhan, who had ambitions to become a jockey, quit his job as an exercise boy at a Corona race horse ranch soon after the fall.

Marcus said Sirhan did not suffer any brain damage from the fall, but said the fall "was the last straw. His career aspirations were finished and from then on he started going visibly downhill."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan's Mental Illness Severe, Witness Says

Psychologist Describes Suspect's Condition as Approaching Incurability

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Clinical psychologist O. Roderick Richardson described Sirhan Bishara Sirhan Wednesday as a paranoid schizophrenic whose mental illness was "about as severe as you can get without being unchangeable."

Dr. Richardson testified that when he administered psychological tests to Sirhan last July, the accused slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy was then "getting worse. He was a very ill person who was descending further into mental illness." Richardson also said he felt Sirhan had been acutely ill "for a year or two" before the June 5 slaying.

But Sirhan had not then passed the point of no return, Richardson said. He was close to being incurable, but still capable of either improvement or regression.

Richardson said he felt Sirhan's condition had worsened by November, when he was tested by Dr. Martin M. Schorr, clinical psychologist who, after six days on the stand, admitted he lifted from a psychiatrist's book the language he used in describing Sirhan as a paranoid schizophrenic.

Scoring Method Differs

On the whole, Richardson's conclusions tended to support those of Schorr, though Richardson admitted under cross examination by Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Pitts that he scores tests differently from Schorr and would not have made certain conclusions that Schorr did.

In describing Sirhan's paranoia, Richardson said he found Sirhan to be "blaming, suspicious, wordy, power-oriented, judgmental and moralistic" in his relationship with other people.

He said Sirhan showed signs of delusions of omnipotence and grandeur and wishes to associate himself with symbols of prestige and status. Sirhan also felt himself the victim of unidentified influences, Richardson testified.

Richardson said Sirhan had a superior intelligence and likened him to "a good engine out of tune" because of erratic functioning in his daily emotional life.

He said the Palestinian Arab defendant regards himself "as a soldier or representative of his nation" and as such, goes beyond what normal, healthy people would regard as their duty to uphold the laws of this country.

Because of this concept of himself, Sirhan could not meaningfully and maturely premeditate murder, Richardson testified.

Anxiety Shown

Richardson testified that Sirhan's reactions to the Thematic Apperception Test revealed depressive, suicidal, hostile tendencies heightened by anxiety over anything suggesting sex.

One reaction, to a picture of a man and woman in a bedroom, "suggests a sexual problem," Richardson said. Sirhan interpreted the picture as showing a man after he had either raped or strangled the woman. "This emphasis on aggression and hostility in connection with sex," Richardson said, "makes the sexual topic a frightening one" for Sirhan.

Throughout Richardson's testimony, Sirhan sat calmly at the defense table, rummaging delightedly through more than a dozen birthday cards or telegrams. He became 25 Wednesday, and his mother, Mary, and brothers, Adel and Munir, each sent him two cards apiece. Members of his defense team also sent him cards, and Sirhan told one, "Thank you for remembering, sir."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-3 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/20/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 20 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-20-69

56-156-2-731

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Experts: Tests Show Sirhan Mentally Ill

By MYRNA OLIVER

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Defense counsel for Sirhan Bishara Sirhan today added more experts to its list of psychiatrists to verify their evaluation of tests which they claim show Sirhan to be mentally ill.

Prosecution has questioned defense evaluation of the mental tests of the admitted assassin of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Resuming witness stand today was Dr. O. Roderick Richardson, Los Angeles clinical psychiatrist, who yesterday warned off an attempt by Asst. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts, on cross-examination, to discredit defense interpretations of Sirhan's psychological test results.

Dr. Richardson is second on the growing list of experts the defense intends to call to prove that Sirhan lacked the mental capacity to plot the murder of Kennedy.

Sirhan's defenders had originally said they would ask three psychologists and three psychiatrists to testify about the defendant's mental difficulties. Dr. Martin M. Schorr, clinical psychologist from San Diego, preceded Dr. Richardson to the stand.

Chief defense counsel Grant B. Cooper said yesterday, however, he will call four more psychologists and the three psychiatrists.

Two psychologists expected to testify today, he said, will further verify Dr. Richardson's evaluations of test results. The doc-

tors, Dr. Stephen D. Howland and Dr. William Craft, San Fernando Child Guidance Clinic, were asked to evaluate Dr. Richardson's raw test data separately as a cross-check on his work.

Prosecuting attorneys kept Dr. Schorr on the stand for three days, taking potshots at his interpretation of Sirhan's answers to Rorschach ink blot, Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory, Thematic Apperception Test and other examinations.

Both Dr. Schorr and Dr. Richardson have said Sirhan is a paranoid-schizophrenic who is incapable of maturely premeditating murder or of having made, two elements in first degree murder.

In questioning both Dr. Schorr and Dr. Richardson, the prosecutors have tried to get each psychologist to criticize the other's conclusions. Neither doctor has discredited the other, claiming that slightly different handling of test results is explained by their use of different but equally acceptable scoring systems.

Dr. Richardson further pointed out that Sirhan deteriorated in his mental capacity from the time he tested him July 29 until Dr. Schorr tested him Nov. 25, 1963. This deterioration, he said, explains slightly different results for the same tests given four months apart.

Yesterday, Dr. Richardson testified that Sirhan's deterioration has been going on for several years and that he was probably "in better shape" immediately after the assassination of Kennedy than at the time he tested him.

"Prior to the assassination, Mr. Sirhan was in a gathering paranoid rage," he told the jury of eight men and four women.

"The assassination serves as a release of a lot of pent up paranoid feeling. That helped him gain equilibrium temporarily," he added. "At this time, he would be better than after three months in jail. The longer he is isolated, the more it would deepen his psychosis."

Asked by Fitts if imprisonment would not cause Sirhan to give "abnormal" answers to test problems even though he was actually "normal," Dr. Richardson insisted:

"Everyone who goes to prison doesn't look psychotic on the Rorschach. He evidenced pathology of long standing schizophrenia."

Dr. Richardson, who spent three hours testing Sirhan in his cell, as though he were showtivity or suspicion toward him, which Fitts indicated might have influenced Sirhan's responses to the psychologist and his tests.

"He ushered me into his cell, as though he were showing me to his home," he

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif

Date: 3/20/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: Myrna Oliver
Editor: Donald Goodeno
Title: Kinsalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-730
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
1 MAR 21 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

cctaburman
3-21-69

said, "and excusing the fact that we would have to be observed, apologizing for the lack of privacy, for not offering me something. I thought it showed certain courteousness and gentility. . . but it is not necessarily unusual behavior for the paranoid."

Fitts also sought to show that Sirhan's psychotic response of disapproval to a Thematic Apperception Test picture showing a girl carrying books with an older couple merely reflected his ethnic background. Sirhan said he didn't like the picture because a man should have the books rather than the girl.

Fitts' implication that Sirhan's answer stemmed from his Arab culture in which, he said, men are educated but not women touched off a minor courtroom disruption.

Arab defense lawyer Issa Nakhleh leaped up from the defense table shouting, "Not so, not so." Arabs, he insisted, are educating their women as well as men.

Judge Herbert V. Walker, who presides over the trial, called Cooper into his chambers when court recessed to admonish him to keep his associate quiet.

Cooper told reporters later that Nakhleh, who has remained in Los Angeles to help quiet the volatile Sirhan and speaks often with him in Arabic about his defense strategy, planned to leave the city Saturday. The decision has nothing to do with the incident.

Sirhan sat calmly and attentively through Dr. Richardson's testimony, yesterday quietly observing his 25th birthday.

Mrs. Mary Sirhan, his mother, and two of his brothers, Adel and Munir, were in court but were not permitted to see Sirhan privately or to give him birthday gifts.

"We were told we could see him," she said, "but now we don't get to see him. They don't tell us why. They just say, 'Not today.'"

"It's sad."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan "Slump" Described

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan celebrated his 25th birthday at his murder trial today, listening to psychologists assess him as a man of diminished mental capacity.

Dr. Orville Roderick Richardson, Los Angeles clinical psychologist, resumed the witness stand today after describing Sirhan, admitted assassin of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, as a paranoid-schizophrenic.

Dr. Richardson yesterday told the court of Judge Herbert V. Walker that Sirhan has a "bright-normal to superior intellectual endowment" but that he is in a process of mind deterioration that shows up often as loss of judgment.

The private practitioner of psychology offered conclusions about Sirhan that closely paralleled those made by Dr. Martin M. Schorr, first in a series of psychiatric experts called to testify on Sirhan's behalf. The defense hopes, through the doctors' testimony, to show that Sirhan was of a "diminished capacity" when he shot Kennedy and was unable to plan or carry out premeditated murder.

Dr. Schorr earlier testified that Sirhan was a paranoid-psychotic with schizophrenic tendencies, incapable of murdering anyone with premeditation and malice.

Dr. Richardson, following Dr.

Schorr to the stand, said Sirhan "appeared to be in somewhat worse shape when Dr. Schorr tested him than when I tested him."

Dr. Richardson's tests of the defendant were made July 20, 1968, about six weeks after Kennedy was slain at the Ambassador Hotel. Dr. Schorr examined Sirhan Nov. 25-26, 1968.

Deterioration in Sirhan's thinking processes during the intervening for months, Dr. Richardson said, showed up in the defendant's responses on the Bender-Gestalt test, in which a subject copies various designs presented to him.

The two psychologists told the court their findings to almost the same battery of psychological examinations: The Rorschach, in which a subject evaluates ink blots; the Wechsler Adult Intelligence Scale, which measures intelligence; the Bender-Gestalt; the Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory, a series of true-false questions; and the Thematic Apperception Test, in which a subject tells a story about a series of pictures.

Dr. Richardson, arriving at generally the same conclusions as Dr. Schorr, emphasized that he made his evaluation on the basis of "content and sequence analysis" or what the answers said rather than on the quantitative or statistical results used by Dr. Schorr.

Earlier yesterday, Dr. Schorr, concluding six days of testimony, admitted under cross-examination that he copied several passages used in his report on Sirhan from "A Casebook of a Crime Psychiatrist" by Dr. James A. Brussel.

He said he copied the material because he wanted "to use language that was alive and vivid to state what I had so lamely stated in my earlier report."

The borrowed phrasing, he said, was used only to illustrate his findings from testing Sirhan and in no way influenced his evaluation of the defendant. He said he knew nothing about the

cases Dr. Brussel was describing, but liked the way the author described paranoid characteristics.

Pressed by Assistant District Attorney John E. Howard, Dr. Schorr said he often copies phrases from technical books and that, "When I use language to describe what I have already written, I don't quote it (indicate by quotation marks). I don't claim authorship for these."

Among passages read to the court showing similarity and often identical sentences and paragraphs in Brussel's book and Dr. Schorr's report was one in which the psychologist said Sirhan shot Kennedy as a substitute for his father. Sirhan, the report indicated, suffered from an Oedipus complex and that his mother "failed" him.

"Where had Mrs. Sirhan failed the boy?" Howard asked.

"The mother constantly protected him . . . and she still does now," said Dr. Schorr in a long explanation. "But no mother in the world could protect a paranoid with this developing mechanism from everything."

"I indexed it (her 'failure') at the moment when this whole hour's discourse about Kennedy came up on a TV show. Sirhan allegedly exploded into a rage and this time the mother couldn't protect him. She was trying to calm him down but this didn't help."

"Finding the man (Kennedy), he does what he wanted to do to his father when the father deserted his own land 10 years earlier."

Mrs. Mary Sirhan, the defendant's mother, and his brother, Adel, said they didn't expect to be allowed to bring a birthday gift to Sirhan.

"Hey, you will be an old man tomorrow," Adel teased his brother across the courtroom rail yesterday during a break in proceedings.

Sirhan, who generally ignored Dr. Schorr's testimony but smiled attentively during Dr. Richardson's comments, laughed.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/19/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodeno
Title: Kessalt

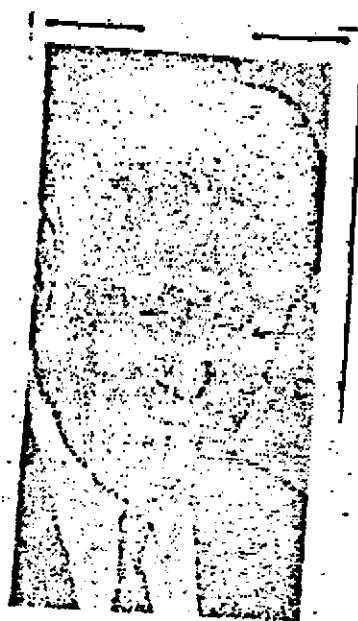
Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angel.

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-31-729

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 20 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cote bureau
3-20-69



—Herald-Examiner Photo

DR. O. R. RICHARDSON
Defense psychologist

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Expert's Testimony On Sirhan Assailed

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's murder trial jurors were expected to hear passages from a book on criminal psychiatry today as the state sought to prove a defense psychologist pre-judged Sirhan's mental condition and used the book as a source for part of his testimony.

Until now, the eight men and four women jurors have been excluded from court sessions while defense and prosecution attorneys argued over the admissibility of passages from the book "A Case Book of a Crime Psychiatrist" by Dr. James A. Brussel of New York.

The controversy grew from testimony by Dr. Martin Schorr who examined Sirhan and has described him as a paranoid in defense efforts to prove Sirhan's limited mental capacity on the night he killed Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

The prosecution claims Schorr drew part of his testimony from Dr. Brussel's book and that Schorr made his judgment about Sirhan's mental capacity even before examining the admitted assassin.

Sirhan has admitted killing Kennedy, but his attorneys are trying to save him from execution by proving diminished capacity.

On the stand since March 10, Schorr has steadfastly maintained he reached no conclusion about Sirhan's mental state before examining him in November.

Chief prosecutor Lynn D.

Compton said evidence would be presented showing Schorr's testimony paralleled two chapters from the Brussel book.

Yesterday's afternoon session was taken up with arguments about admissibility of certain passages in the book which the state alleges Schorr used in his testimony.

Schorr said last week he thought Sirhan—an Arab immigrant who bore a grudge against Kennedy because of the senator's support of Israel—was a paranoid psychotic with indications of a split personality.

A letter from Schorr to associate defense counsel Russell Parsons was read into the record. It reported Sirhan hated his father and transferred this hatred to Kennedy.

The wording of the letter written in December of last year was similar to Brussel's language in the psychiatrist-author's description of a 1957 murder case in New York.

Associate prosecutor John Howard pressed Schorr on the possibility the psychologist may have pre-judged Sirhan.

Letter from Schorr to Parson, dated July 10—before Schorr interviewed Sirhan—said in part:

"Most murders committed by basically passive nonviolent personalities are psychotic discharges of previously undiagnosed subtle but real schizophrenia."

However, Schorr insisted he did not reach any conclusions about the defendant's mental state until after he examined Sirhan.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/18/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kenealt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 19 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

56-156-2-728

talk about the Ambassador?" aware that I killed Mr. Kennedy.
You said, "Look, Mr. Jordan, I must act right for a moment . . . I have the right to remain silent . . . this is a basic American jurisprudence . . ."

Remember?

A — No, Sir, I don't remember that.

Q — They asked if you at least wanted to give them your name?

A — I thought they had the name.

Q — John Doe?

A — John Doe.

Q — You told them that was your name?

A — They gave me this name. They forced me. They told me to sign that name.

Q — Didn't they say to sign your name?

A — They said write down John Doe.

Q — You said you were willing to fight for the Arab cause?

A — Palestinian Arabs.

Q — Would killing Robert Kennedy aid the Arab cause?

A — Sir, I am not even

Q — You know he is dead.

Q — Would the killing of Kennedy help the Arab cause?

A — I am in no position to say that.

Q — Are you glad he is dead?

A — No, Sir, I am not.

Q — Are you sorry?

A — No, I am not sorry, but I am not proud.

Q — You're not sorry?

A — No, because I have no exact knowledge of having shot him . . . but I am not proud.

Q — Did you not say "I killed Robert Kennedy willfully, premeditatedly and with 20 years of malice aforethought"?

A — Yes, Sir, I did.

Q — Are you willing to die for the Arab cause?

A — When did I say I was willing to fight for the Arab cause?

Q — This morning. Are you willing to fight for the Arab cause?

A — Yes.

Q — Are you willing to die for it?

A — Yes.



TWO PROSECUTORS IN SIRHAN TRIAL ARRIVE AT COURTROOM
They are David N. Fitts, deputy district attorney, and Lynn D. Compton, chief prosecutor

Herold-Examiner Photo

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Profanity and Fatal Shot Told at Sirhan Trial

Witness Says He Heard
Voice Swear at Kennedy
but Gives No Identification

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

In the early moments of June 5, Richard Lubie heard a voice swear at Sen. Robert F. Kennedy and then heard the gunshot that took Kennedy's life.

Lubie, testifying Friday at the murder trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, said he jumped for cover. Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper, who called Lubie as a witness, didn't even ask if he could identify Sirhan as the man who said, "Kennedy, you son of a bitch," and fired the shot.

Lubie was the last, and briefest, of a puzzling string of defense witnesses whose testimony appeared to strengthen the prosecution case.

One, electrician Hans Peter Bidstrub, testified that Sirhan, drink in hand, asked him as early as 10 p.m. if Kennedy was staying at the Ambassador, on what floor and in what room, if Kennedy was in the hotel then and whether Kennedy had bodyguards.

Bidstrub said he talked for about 15 minutes with Sirhan at one political party the night of June 4, and that his first impression was that Sirhan was "half drunk and very talkative." Bidstrub said he himself is a nondrinker.

Changing Plans

Earlier this week, Sirhan testified that he arrived at the Ambassador June 4 through a series of haphazard changed plans, without knowing Kennedy would be there, after a day of target practice with his pistol. He said he got drunk on at least three gin highballs, talked with Bidstrub and others and later blacked out—still without knowing, apparently, that Kennedy would definitely be there that night.

Bidstrub's testimony tended to corroborate the defense claim that Sirhan had been drinking that night, and three other witnesses said they also saw Sirhan with a glass in his hand.

Bidstrub's recollection of the assassination night and of his later interviews with law enforcement officials and defense counsel appeared hazy, so much so that he could not definitely recall his former statements when confronted with them Friday.

At one point Cooper asked Bidstrub if he remembered telling Cooper that Sirhan "showed no more interest in Kennedy than in any other Democrat." Bidstrub said he didn't remember.

Enrique Rabago and Humphrey Cordero, friends from Buena Park, testified that they talked with Sirhan around 10 p.m. also. They each said he had a drink in his hand, but did not appear particularly intoxicated to them.

Rabago asked Sirhan, he said, if he thought Kennedy would win the California Democratic presidential primary, and Sirhan said yes.

But then, Rabago said, Sirhan added: "Don't worry if Sen. Kennedy doesn't win. That son of a bitch is a millionaire. Even if he wins, he's not going to do anything for you, for me or for the poor people."

Rabago said he had regarded Sirhan as "educated and arrogant."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/7/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Wick B. Williams
Title: Kinsalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

Oct 10 1969
3-10-69

56-156-21-712

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 10 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Court Tantrum By Sirhan Bared to Jury

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, his duel with his prosecutors over and his testimony completed, became a spectator today as friends and former employers testified in his defense at his murder trial.

The four-day ordeal of testimony for the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy ended yesterday as spectacularly as it had begun. Chief Deputy Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton disclosed to the jury that Sirhan had thrown a courtroom tantrum while they were excluded from the trial.

This disclosure came after Sirhan had repeated his claims that he could not remember shooting Kennedy, and in fact had no recollection of the fatal events until he was arraigned

on charges of assault with a deadly weapon with intent to commit murder.

Reflecting on the shooting, Sirhan said he was not glad Kennedy was dead, but neither was he sorry.

"I have no exact knowledge that I killed him," he explained. Then, in almost an undertone, he added, "But, I am not proud."

The eight men and four women who will decide Sirhan's fate learned that a week ago he had engaged in one of his notorious rages and came near to firing his lawyers, pleading guilty to first-degree murder and demanding execution.

Compton sought only from the young Arab an admission he had told Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding over his trial:

"I killed Robert Kennedy, willfully, premeditatedly and with 20 years malice aforethought."

Sirhan's chief defense counsel, Grant B. Cooper, objected sharply to the question because it involved testimony taken in court outside the jury's hearing. But after hasty conference at the bench, Cooper smilingly relented. His reasons soon became clear.

As soon as Compton had completed his cross-examina-

tion, the defense lawyer paid the

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/7/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-74-711

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 10 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

CCT
3-10-69

whole story of Sirhan's temper outburst before the jury.

His strategy was to show that the impulsive temper of the 24-year old Jordanian immigrant often leads him into situations where he acts with no thought for consequences. When court recessed for the day, Cooper believed he had succeeded.

Compton's cross-examination of Sirhan sometimes became an acrimonious duel between the two.

Sirhan once called his prosecutor "stupid," and Compton laughed in open derision at some of the young Arab's claimed lapses of memory about not only the events surrounding Kennedy's murder, but also about the facts of his disagreement with his attorneys over defense strategy.

That, disagreement, Cooper disclosed on redirect examination, centered around a wish by the lawyers to summon two former love interests of Sirhan as witnesses in his defense.

At Sirhan's demand the two girls, Gwendolyn Gum and Peggy Ostercamp, will not be called. But 10 other witnesses, whom Sirhan originally objected to, will testify—and with the defendant's permission, Cooper said.

Under cross-examination, Sirhan, deadly serious, maintained he was willing to die for the Arab cause.

Except for a few brisk exchanges, Compton's cross-examination was surprisingly mild-mannered. The burly chief prosecutor seemed hesitant and almost deferential in the less than two hours he held Sirhan on the stand.

Most violent exchange between the two came when Compton pressed Sirhan on why he, an avowed advocate of peaceful non-violence, had abandoned his precepts and turned to assassination.

Sirhan replied that he had not abandoned non-violence, but he made it clear his belief had its limits. He warned Compton:

"If you try to kill me now . . . you go first, sir. When it comes to self-preservation, I come first, not you."

Compton changed his line of questioning.

The prosecutor asked few questions about claims by Sirhan that when he shot Kennedy he was drunk.

Sirhan, describing the night of the shooting, said he had several drinks at the Ambassador Hotel headquarters of senatorial rivals Max Baer and Alan Cranston. He became drunk he said, and decided to go home.

But, he continued, when he reached his car he decided he was too drunk to drive.

He decided to return to the hotel in search of coffee with which to sober up.

His loaded gun was in the back seat of the car, he said, and he has no memory of taking it with him.

He met a girl near a coffee urn in the hotel and recalls talking with her.

Of the shooting itself?

"I don't remember."

Moreover, Sirhan swore, he has no memory of ever being in the pantry off the Ambassador's Embassy ballroom.

His first conscious memory after talking with the girl, whom he remembers as dark-haired and beautiful, is being choked by his captors after the shooting, he said.

He dimly remembers being taken to Rampart Police Station, but does not recall that he was taken by police, nor that former Assembly Speaker Jesse Unruh accompanied him, he added.

In both direct and cross-examination, Sirhan claimed that several prosecution witnesses against him had "lied."

He denied emphatically that he had ever told Pasadena refuse collector Calvin Clark that he planned to shoot Kennedy.

Clark, who admitted under oath he hates Sirhan, swore to their conversation earlier in the trial. He said it took place in Sirhan's backyard shortly after the assassination of Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr.

Compton sought again and again to attack Sirhan's claims of lapses of memory. When the young Arab insisted he could not recall taking his gun to the Ambassador, the chief prosecutor asked him about statements he made to Dr. Seymour Pollack, psychiatrist for the prosecution, that he had taken his gun "because he was afraid some Jews might steal it."

Sirhan explained that he had made his statement to the state psychiatrist, and one of his own, Dr. Bernard Diamond, while under hypnosis and had no memory of it.

Ironically, should the prosecution not call Dr. Pollack, the defense will.

"He is important to our case," a defense spokesman said yesterday. "His findings agree with ours."

The spokesman disclosed that in addition to Dr. Pollack and Dr. Diamond, the defense will call Los Angeles County

psychiatrist Dr. Marcus Crahan, who also examined Sirhan.

Other members of the defense battery of alienists include psychologist Dr. Martin Shop of San Diego, a consultant in the Jack Ruby trial; psychiatrist Dr. Eric Marcus, and psychologist Dr. O. Frederick Richards.

Their testimony is scheduled for Monday, according to associate defense counsel Emile Zola Berman.

On tap for today are friends and former employers. These include Mr. and Mrs. John Weidner, owners of Organic Pasadena, health food store where Sirhan was employed until a few months before the assassination; Ivan Garcia, a school friend of the defendant; Mr. and Mrs. Robert Proffwood, friends; Mr. and Mrs. John Strathmore, friends and former employers.

Two Los Angeles Police officers, Fred Willoughby and Gene Anderson, also have been summoned by the defense. They stood guard over Sirhan at the Rampart Station, where Sirhan reportedly kicked a coffee cup from Willoughby's hand.

Richard Lubic, an eyewitness to Kennedy's slaying, has been called by the defense, as have waiters and bartenders from the Ambassador Hotel.

The identity of two more defense witnesses was withheld yesterday. A spokesman explained they had not yet been subpoenaed, and he said, "If it gets out we're looking for them, we might never find them."

Lubic and the psychiatrists the defense believes, will shed some light on the events of the murder, as well as on Sirhan's state of mind.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Drunk, Blacked Out on Night Kennedy Was Shot, Sirhan Says

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan testified Thursday that he got drunk on at least three gin highballs last June 4, blacked out while trying to sober up, and "the next thing I remember, I was being choked."

He didn't learn for many hours that he had fatally shot Sen. Robert F. Kennedy and that he was being choked in a struggle to subdue him as his gun continued firing, wounding five others, he said.

It was the first time Sirhan has mentioned that he had been drinking the night Kennedy was killed.

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper asked Sirhan if he knew that during the blackout, "You walked up to Sen. Kennedy, pointed a gun to his head, pulled the trigger . . . and he later died."

With a smile, a shrug and a palms-upward gesture of his hands, Sirhan answered, "Yes. So I learned."

But under both Cooper's questioning and cross-examination by Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton, Sirhan steadily denied specific recollection of the shooting or of the rages that consumed him when he wrote in his notebooks that Kennedy must die.

Sirhan was smiling and at ease under Cooper's questioning, and as Compton began his cross-examination Sirhan remained amiable and polite—but wary.

Compton's questioning sought to dispel in jurors' minds the impression Cooper had earlier aimed for in

characterizing Sirhan's notebook writings as the disjointed scribbles of a disordered mind.

Instead, Compton suggested, much of the writing was mere doodling reflecting Sirhan's daily interests—girls, horse racing, jockeys and snatches of Arabic songs.

Sirhan replied flippily as Compton asked if the numbers 5-10, and other number series weren't actually betting combinations at Caliente race track.

"That's conjecture, sir. I don't know," Sirhan answered with a mischievous grin.

Anger Flares

But he flared in anger when Compton asserted that Sirhan must have had more notebooks than the three introduced in evidence.

"Were you with me?" demanded Sirhan. "Ask me. Don't put words in my mouth!"

Compton asked if he had had more notebooks.

"I said I don't know," Sirhan snapped.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/7/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kenseit

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-710

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 7 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-7-69

At another point, after later commuted to life (after answering one of Compton's questions, Sirhan remarked, "That's stupid.") Kirschke claimed he was

"I confess that I do in Las Vegas at the time of the murder, but one detail that helped convict him was the fact that when he was arrested there and charged with murder, he failed to ask whom he was accused of murdering.

"Yes sir, you do," Sirhan snapped back. Compton continued in a mild, pleasant tone of voice, but with a thinly veiled skepticism at Sirhan's invariable answer.

"I don't exactly remember."

Asked to Recall

That was the answer Compton got repeatedly as he asked Sirhan if he recalled the events immediately after his arrest: talking with police, drinking coffee, asking about the sensational Jack Kirschke murder case, the stock market, the high costs of having babies and his arraignment.

Earlier, prosecution witnesses described Sirhan as an unusually alert, intelligent person in their meetings with him. Compton, reciting detailed police reports of Sirhan's conversations with the witnesses, appeared unbelieving that Sirhan recalled so little of those hours.

Sirhan did admit to a faint recollection of discussing the Kirschke case with Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard, but said he couldn't remember specific details of the conversation.

But a later question by Compton recalled one of the significant details of the Kirschke case. Kirschke, a deputy district attorney and a friend of both Compton and Howard, was convicted in 1967 of murdering his wife and her lover and sentenced to death. The sentence was

later commuted to life imprisonment.)

Sirhan, who is reported to have followed that trial on television, was asked by Compton if Howard hadn't told him last June 5 that he probably would be tried. "You didn't ask 'tried for what?' did you?" asked Compton.

"I don't remember," replied Sirhan. By Sirhan's account on the witness stand Thursday, this conversation with Howard would have occurred several hours before Sirhan learned he was accused of shooting Kennedy.

Compton asked Sirhan if he thought "killing Robert Kennedy helped the Arab cause."

Sirhan said he didn't know enough about politics to say.

"Are you glad he's dead?" asked Compton.

"No sir, I'm not glad."

"Are you sorry?"

"No sir, I'm not sorry, but I'm not proud of it either."

Compton then touched on an explosive courtroom scene that occurred last Friday, after the jury had been removed from the courtroom:

"Did you not say you killed Robert Kennedy wilfully, premeditatedly and with 20 years of malice aforethought?" Compton asked.

"Yes sir, I did," answered Sirhan.

Attorneys for both sides were called to Sumner Judge Herbert V. Walk-

er's bench for a moment, and then Compton asked his last questions:

"You said you were willing to fight for the Arab cause?"

"Yes sir," said Sirhan.

"Are you willing to die for it?"

"Yes sir. I'm willing to die for it."

Cooper then resumed questioning Sirhan, going line by line through the transcript of last Friday's blow up. Jurors then learned for the first time that Sirhan had tried to fire his three attorneys, change his plea to guilty and demand execution.

Cooper asked Sirhan if he hadn't done that because he was mad at the way his defense was going, and Sirhan admitted, "Sir, I was boiling."

Cooper revealed that Sirhan had exploded over defense plans to call about a dozen witnesses Sirhan didn't want to testify, including two girls, Gwendolyn Gum and Peggy Osterkamp, whose names appear repeatedly in his notebooks. Sirhan finally compromised when attorneys agreed not to call the girls, Cooper said.

Despite his wariness and obvious irritation at Compton's questioning, Sirhan remained composed. When angered, he did not appear confused, but more emphatic and vehement.

He insisted, as he did under defense questioning, that he was "an impulsive person, and what my reaction is is good for that time only." He said he believed disputes should be settled peacefully, admitted he hated Zionism and anyone who aided it, hated Kennedy for his support of Israel and loved him for his other views.

A string of conflicting statements tended to support the defense portrait of him as one whose hatreds turned on and off "like a water spigot":

—Sirhan quoted an Arabic proverb to explain why he hated Kennedy on the one hand: "A friend of my enemy is my enemy."

—But on the other hand, he didn't feel "all that much hate. I still liked him, sir. It was just when he said he would support the state of Israel."

Whenever Kennedy talked about Israel, Sirhan "would have blasted him, and I still would..."

—But, "after the provocation is removed, I no longer respond."

It was after a day of provocations introduced and removed, Sirhan testified, that he found himself inside the Ambassador last June 4, wandering from one election party to another.

He testified Wednesday that after target practicing that day and going off in a furious but futile search for a Zionist parade he'd heard about, he began party-hopping the night of June 4, going from a Wilshire Blvd. party to the Ambassador without even knowing Kennedy would be there.

He said he had two Tom Collins and vaguely recalls buying a third Collins and drinking part of that, and then deciding "I was quite high. I was alone. If I got any more drunk, there was nobody with me to take care of me if I got more drunk."

He decided to go home, he said, and walked back to his locked car, where he said he had left his pistol lying on the seat after leaving the target range that afternoon.

He said he got into the car and began to start it, but then "I couldn't pic-

ture myself driving the car home... I was too afraid to drive," he said, for fear he'd have an accident or get a ticket.

He decided to go back to the Ambassador, find some coffee, sober up, and then go home, he said.

"Did you pick up your gun?" Cooper asked.

Sirhan said he didn't remember. "I must have, but I don't remember. I've sworn to tell the truth."

As Sirhan described it, the next few hours were a confused wandering in search of coffee in unfamiliar parts of the hotel.

The prosecution contends that Sirhan was not under the influence of alcohol or drugs, and that a brief test for intoxication showed so conclusively that he was not drunk that they didn't give more exhaustive tests.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Focus On Stalking, Killing RFK

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Grim recital of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's remembrance of his stalking and fatal shooting of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy became the focus of the young Arab's murder trial today as the admitted slayer began his fourth day of testimony.

Sirhan is set to tell what, if anything, he recalls of the events of the night of June 5, when he followed the New York senator into a pantry of the Ambassador Hotel's Embassy Ballroom and shot him in the head.

His recollections follow on the heels of dramatic testimony yesterday in which he told of the blind rage which caused the killing.

It was an advertisement for a Miracle Mile celebration of the first (1968) anniversary of the six-day Arab-Israeli war that set him off on a wild ride over Los Angeles freeways which ended only when he shot Kennedy and was captured by the senator's aides. Sirhan testified yesterday.

The killing, according to his testimony, followed a tragedy of errors in which:

• He left a day's target shooting at the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club without unloading his .22 calibre eight-shot revolver.

• He became so enraged over plans for the Arab-Israeli victory celebration he "drove like a madman" to Wilshire Boulevard not realizing he would be a day early for the parade.

• He went to the Ambassador after overhearing a chance remark about Kennedy's victory celebration while visiting the headquarters of then Sen. Thomas Kuchel.

Sirhan testified his rage was triggered by a Los Angeles

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/6/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kenseit

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-709

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 7 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

act to harbor
3-7-69

newspaper advertisement which read:

"Join the Miracle March for Israel on the Miracle Mile tomorrow, Wednesday, June 5, at 6 p.m. on Wilshire Boulevard. Six Days in June."

The young Arab said:

"Had I been dead, . . . I would have been better for me. The fire started burning inside me. . . ."

Admitting he made a mistake about the date of the parade, Sirhan explained to Grant B. Cooper, his chief defense counsel:

"I was that burned up, sir. I thought it was that night."

Sirhan said he had little recollection of driving from Pasadena City College, where he had been visiting a friend, to Los Angeles.

He became lost, finally found Wilshire Boulevard and ended up at Kuchel's headquarters at a "dull" party, he said.

There, he heard of the Kennedy victory celebration and set off for the Ambassador, he said. Sirhan testified that after seeing Kennedy at a campaign reception 47 hours before the shooting he "looked like a saint to me."

He had no thought of killing the senator when he went to the

hotel, he said, and in fact was not carrying his gun.

How he got the gun which, according to his sworn testimony, he left in the rear seat of his car parked on New Hampshire Street, is a mystery which should be solved by his testimony today.

Sirhan said he began the day before Kennedy's slaying with a decision not to go to the races, but to spend his time target shooting instead.

He arrived at the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club about noon, he said, and stayed there until the target range closed.

Sirhan testified he was particularly proud of his shooting that day. But he emphatically denied that the reason for his target practice was a rehearsal for Kennedy's murder.

"It was out of my mind, sir," he told Cooper.

When the gun range closed, his gun was loaded with eight soft-nosed minimag shells, Sirhan said. He did not unload it before leaving the range because he was having difficulty with the revolver's ejection mechanism.

Sirhan said he drove from the range to a restaurant near Pasadena City College where he dined with a friend.

They followed their dinner with a visit to the college, Sir-

han said, and then he planned to either head for home or attend a meeting of the Rosicrucian Order — mystical cult of which he was a follower.

"I was completely p—— off. . . . These Zionists were trying to rub in the fact that they had beat the hell out of the Arabs one year before . . . I decided to go down and see what those — were up to."

Any anger he had, Sirhan insisted, was directed at "these Jews . . . these Zionists."

He was "boiled up again" after reaching Wilshire and seeing another Jewish organization sign, he said.

Sirhan's testimony yesterday began with Cooper completing the reading of his diaries.

Sirhan admitted he had written of his sympathy for the Communist cause, but insisted he had never been a member of the Communist Party.

He swore it was he and he alone who shot Kennedy and that he had no accomplices. Nor, he said, was he in the employ of a foreign power at the time of the assassination.

He testified that although his diaries were in his handwriting, he had little memory of making many entries.

"I don't know. . . . It must be doodling. . . . I don't remember," were his increasingly frequent answers when Cooper pressed him to explain his writing.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Denies RFK Killing In Mind at Target Range

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, 24, on trial for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, continued testifying for the fourth day in his defense today. Following are highlights from yesterday's testimony under questioning of chief defense counsel Grant B. Cooper:

Q — On Tuesday the 4th of June, do you remember what time you got up?

A — About 9 . . . 9 or 10 o'clock.

Q — Between Sunday the second of June and Tuesday the 4th of June did you write anything in your notebook?

A — No, sir, not that I can recall.

Q — Did you, when you went to bed, tell yourself you were going to kill Robert F. Kennedy?

A — I don't remember doing that, sir.

Q — Did anything happen to change that point of view of Kennedy as a saint?

A — I don't know, sir. Because his willingness to send jets to Israel was still solidified in my mind.

Q — Then how did you think of him as a saint?

A — That was my reaction to him.

Q — But you still had the jets in the back of your mind?

A — Yes. I didn't like that at all.

Q — What were your plans for that Tuesday?

A — The Monday before I had asked my mother to give me the remainder of the money from my insurance compensation.

Q — You had turned over to her the money from your accident?

A — Yes. Most of it . . . to keep for me.

Q — Did she have some left?

A — Yes.

Q — Did she give it to you?

A — Yes, \$100.

Q — What were you doing that day?

A — I planned to go to the races.

Q — What races?

A — Hollywood Park.

Q — Had you been going to the races?

A — For two weeks before, almost every day.

Q — Were you betting?

A — Yes.

Q — You didn't do too good at that?

A — Good and bad. I lost more than I won.

Q — Did you have plans at the races?

A — No, Sir.

Q — Not at all?

A — I didn't even go to the races that day. I read the race entries. I didn't like the horses.

Q — Did you have some idea about the Rosierucians?

A — Yes, sir. That evening was a Tuesday night. The Tuesday night before I had attended the Rosierucian meeting. I planned to attend that same meeting.

Q — Did you have an alternate plan?

A — Yes, to work on my car.

Q — What were you going to do?

A — Replace some tires. The front tires were worn.

Q — Mr. Sirhan . . .

A — Sirhan, please.

Q — All right, I've known you long enough. . . We were discussing the events of June 4, and you said you looked at the newspaper at the races.

A — Yes, at the race entries.

Q — What did you do that for?

A — I decided not to go.

Q — Why?

A — I did not like the entries.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-10 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/6/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-27-708

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 7 1969	
FBI — LOS ANGELES	

cc 6/6/69
3-7-69

Q—Was there some particular reason for that? Were the horses different?

A—I had been losing all the time before that.

Q—What did you do then?

A—The telephone rang. . . It was for my brother Adel, who was in bed. . . I went to his room . . . to inform Adel that there was a telephone call for him and he asked me if I was going to the track. That was the last time I saw Adel that day. When he was on the telephone I had the idea of going target shooting again.

Q—Where did you keep your gun? In a drawer?

A—In my room . . . sometimes on a chair . . . sometimes on a cushion, anywhere in the room.

Q—And then you drove somewhere? And what time did you arrive there?

A—I don't know exactly. . . On the way I stopped at the East Pasadena Firearms Co. to buy some ammo.

Q—That is the same place that is in evidence?

A—No, that is a different place.

Q—Your memory is better than mine. Anyway, where did you go?

A—I went to a restaurant for a few minutes. . . to stop for a cup of coffee before proceeding to the range.

Q—And you stopped at the gun shop in East Pasadena?

A—Yes.

Q—Did you have any ammunition with you?

A—Yes, mini-mag, and Federal long rifle, they're my favorite, and another brand with an "X" on it. I can't remember the name.

Q—On the fourth you bought more ammunition?

A—Yes.

Q—Do you remember what kind?

A—Yes. The East Pasadena store had a sale on long rifles.

Q—Then you went where?

A—To Fish Canyon.

Q—When did you arrive?

A—I don't know. . . say about noon.

Q—Mr. Buckner (range master at the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club in Fish Canyon Rd.) testified you arrived much earlier and left about noon.

A—No sir. He is totally wrong.

Q—Did you have a conversation with Mr. Buckner?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—Tell us about that conversation.

A—I just gave him my \$2 and . . . set up my targets.

Q—How long did you stay at the range?

A—From the time I arrived until . . . Mr. Buckner announced that the range was closed for the day.

Q—What kind of a shot are you?

A—With a good gun I consider myself a pretty good shot.

Q—With the gun you had with you what kind of a shot are you?

A—A pretty good shot.

Q—A witness testified you were shooting as fast as you could.

A—That is completely wrong. . . I had to squeeze the trigger. . . and when you target shoot you're not even supposed to know when the bullet expands. . .

Q— . . . Was there someone else there?

A—There was an elderly man . . . he was a member of the NRA.

Q—The National Rifle Association?

A—Yes. . . and he had a box with all kinds of rifles and hand guns. . . one was a .22.

Q—Was he wearing some kind of special jacket?

A—Yes, a military jacket. . . and ear muffs to muffle the sound. I use cotton myself. He was the one that was doing it. . . shooting rapid fire. . . When those kids (earlier witnesses) said they thought they heard a .38 being fired. He had a .38.

Q—Did there come a time when you met an attractive blonde?

A—Don't interrupt me. . . First that other kid who said I was a good shot came to the range. . .

Q—All right. Did you have a conversation with him?

A—Yes. . . when he saw what I was using, he asked, "What are you using mini-mags for target shooting for?" . . . And he admonished me not to use them in my gun. . . I mean he asked me if my gun had the capacity for that high power. . .

Q — And at that time did you have it in mind to shoot Sen. Kennedy?

A — No, sir, I did not. . . It was totally off my mind.

Q — Did you say to Mr. Buckner, "I got to have shells that won't misfire."

A — No, sir, I did not. . . At least I don't recall saying that.

Q — Now can I get to the blonde girl? Some time that day you met a pretty girl. . . the one you saw on the witness stand. . . and you thought she was pretty at that time and you didn't know she was married.

Q — Did you strike up a conversation?

A — Yes.

Q — And after this event, I take it her husband came up?

A — Yes, but before her husband came up, I wanted to use the rest of my mini-mag. She had a brand new gun, and I wanted to. . . I wanted her new one. . . And about that time her husband came up, but I didn't know it was her husband.

Q — Eventually it came time to close?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — Was there an announcement over the loud speaker?

A — No. Mr. Buckner came and told us it was closing time. . . I had seven or eight mini-mags left, and I loaded my gun.

Q — After the announcement?

A — No, sir. I wanted to expend these in my own gun, but Mr. Buckner came over and I didn't expend them.

Q — Did you take the bullets out?

A — No, sir. I did not.

Q — Why didn't you unload the gun?

A — I was having trouble with the election.

Q — Were you saving these bullets to shoot Kennedy?

A — No, sir.

Q — Weren't you practicing to shoot Robert Kennedy?

A — No. I was so thrilled with my performance. . . that was all that was on my mind.

Q — Do you have any present recollection. . . of how many boxes of shells you had left?

A — Not full ones. . . just empty ones.

Q — When you finished shooting, where did you put the revolver?

A — On the back seat of my car.

Q — Out in the open?

A — Yes, in the open.

Q — Why?

A — I had no reason to hide it.

Q — Did you ever hear about a law about carrying a concealed weapon?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — Where did you go?

A — I started driving toward home. I dropped by Bob's Big Boy in Pasadena. It's adjacent to Pasadena City College.

Q — Did you get something to eat?

A — Yes, Sir, I did.

Q — How long did it take you to get there?

A — About 15 minutes.

Q — It was then about 5:50 p.m. or so?

A — I don't exactly remember. I didn't have a watch with me.

Q — There was something you ate?

A — A hamburger, some lettuce—a salad and some coffee.

Q — Did you see anyone?

A — Yes, Sir. At the counter there was a seat by a friend of mine.

Q — What was his name?

A — I don't know his whole name. He was an East Indian student named Mystri. While we waited for our dinner, we talked about everything, mostly about races. I was asking if he had gone. He said no. After we left Bob's restaurant we saw some newspaper machines on the sidewalk. He went and bought a newspaper, the Los Angeles Times. I said I wanted to buy one, too, to look over the race entries. But

I had no change so I said I would buy it later.

"He and I decided we would go to the Pasadena City College Student Center. We bought some lunch in the cafeteria.

Q — After you had eaten a hamburger?

A — Yes. There were seven or eight people there. I was the one who paid for the hot chocolate, so I had some change with me as we returned to our cars.

Q — It was a nice party there?

A — Yes. I talked about horses, telling them that class made a difference. So when we returned to our cars, his car was better than mine, and I said, "Hey, Mystri, I see you are moving up in class." He liked that.

Q — Was there something about newspapers?

A — I said I was going to buy it. He said, no, that he only wanted the classified section. He took out the classified section and gave me the rest of his paper. I challenged my friend to a game of pool in a pool place about half a block from Bob's. He turned me down.

"Re said he had to get home to look up in the classified because he wanted to get a job that summer.

Q — Did you have in mind then to kill Kennedy?

A — No, Sir.

Q — What did you do?

A — I got in my car, leaved through the paper to find the sports section. Something caught my attention. . . an advertisement with a border to attract the attention of the reader.

Q — Tuesday, June 4, 1968, the Los Angeles Times, Page 18 of Part I—do you see on that page the advertisement you had seen?

A — Yes, sir, I do.

Q — Will you read it?

A — "Join the Miracle March for Israel on the Miracle Mile tomorrow Wednesday, June 5, at 6 p.m. on Wilshire Boulevard at Detroit Street. . . to the steps of the Los Angeles County Museum . . . Six days in June."

Q — What was your reaction to that?

A — That brought me back to the six days in June the previous year.

Q — What was your reaction then?

A — Had I been dead, Sir, it would have been better for me. I was completely p—off at American justice at that time.

Q — What was your feeling?

A — The fire started burning inside me. These Zionists were trying to rub in the fact that they had beat the hell out of the Arabs one year before.

Q — What did you do?

A — Before the newspaper, I had in mind going to the Rosicrucian meeting, but that was at 8 o'clock and in the meantime I had nothing to do. I wanted to change the tires or challenge my friend to a game of pool. . . I decided to go down to see what those s— were up to.

Q — What did you do?

A — I went down to Wilshire Boulevard. . . mile, to where they were having that parade.

Q — But you made a mistake about the date?

A — Yes. I was that burned up, Sir. I thought it was that night.

Q — What did you do?

Q — How did you go?

A — By the Pasadena Freeway and the Hollywood Freeway, I think. Anyway I was driving, Sir, like a maniac. I missed the turnoffs. I didn't know where Wilshire Boulevard was.

Q — Do you remember passing something?

A — I don't remember what turn I took. After going off the Hollywood Freeway, I think so. I saw the Hollywood Palace or the Ice Palace or something like that. There was a very steep hill there.

Q — Did you get lost?

A — Yes, I did.

Q — Did you inquire as to directions?

A — Yes. At some gas station. I asked where Wilshire Boulevard was. He said just keep going this way. . . . I still didn't find it. I asked people when I stopped for red lights. I eventually got to it.

Q — Did you turn right or left, west or east?

A — I can't exactly remember, Mr. Cooper. I didn't know where the Miracle Mile was.

Q — Were you looking for something?

A — I kept driving on Wilshire Boulevard, looking for that parade. The way those Zionists go, I thought it was a big one.

Q — Where was your gun?

A — It was completely out of my mind.

Q — Where was it?

A — Where I had left it — on the back seat of the car.

Q — Were you going to shoot up the parade?

A — It was out of my mind. I just wanted to see what those (unprintable) were up to.

Q — Did you find them?

A — No, I didn't find them. I was ready to give up. Then driving by, I spotted a store with a very highly illuminated interior. I thought it had something to do with the parade. It was (former Sen. Thomas) Kuchel's headquarters. Having seen that, Sir, the parade . . . and not being able to find the parade, I decided to go in and see what was going on at Kuchel's store.

Q — His headquarters?

A — Yes, his headquarters.

Q — On People's Exhibit 35 (a photograph of the area) your car was found at the place marked X?

A — Yes. As I was driving, I took the next street and turned on it and parked my car so I could go down to Kuchel's. That was the only spot I found to park my car.

Q — Did you get out of the car?

A — Yes, Sir, and I locked it.

Q — Did you have your wallet?

A — I always had my wallet in my car when I drove.

Q — Did you take it with you?

A — No, Sir, I never carry it.

Q — Where was it?

A — I keep it in my glove compartment.

Q — Why?

A — I, Adel, Munir, my brothers and I have a mutual habit of never carrying our wallet with us.

Q — Where did you carry your money?

A — Loose in my own pocket.

Q — How much money did you have with you when you left the house Tuesday?

A — \$400 I took from my mother and \$50 — \$60 more. I don't remember exactly.

Q — You bought chocolate for the kids at Pasadena, and a hamburger, and bullets at the store. How much did you spend that day?

A — \$10 or \$15.

Q — That much?

A — I don't remember exactly.

Q — How much were the bullets?

A — Seventy-five cents a box. Eighty-five cents at the range . . . there were a total of nine boxes.

Q — And you bought cokes?

A — Yes, Sir.

Q — It cost you \$2 to go to the range?

A — Yes.

Q — And you bought a hamburger?

A — Yes, and I paid for Mystri's.

Q — You had about \$420 left?

A — About that. I don't exactly remember how much.

Q — Did you have the revolver in your pocket?

A — No, Sir. My revolver was still in the back seat of my car.

Q — Did you walk to Kuchel's headquarters?

A — Yes, across Wilshire Boulevard to reach Kuchel's Headquarters. There were many people there dressed for a party.

Q — How were you dressed?

A — At that time blue pants, blue shirt, blue sweater on.

Q — Did you talk to anyone?

A — No, I just went in and looked around.

Q — Was there music?

A — No ... there were some television cameras and bright lights. And some liquor ... some people were drinking liquor.

Q — Did you have any liquor?

A — No, Sir, I did not have any liquor there.

Q — What happened?

A — Some boys said there was a bigger party down at the Ambassador Hotel, so I said I was on Wilshire Boulevard and couldn't see the parade, I might as well go down there and see what was going on.

Q — On the second of June when you were in the Ambassador Hotel did you learn about the party on the fourth of June?

A — No. I did not know it. If there was an announcement I did not know it.

Q — You learned about it when you were at Kuchel's party?

A — Yes.

Q — What made you think it was a public party?

A — Curiosity made me go.

Q — What made you think you could go to it?

A — The boys, they started to go themselves.

Q — Was the Kuchel party lively?

A — Dull—I thought it was. Forgive me, any of the Kuchel supporters.

Q — Did you walk to the Ambassador Hotel?

A — Yes.

Q — Did you see anything?

A — Yes. As I left the Kuchel store, it was downhill ... one, two, three, four stories down. And there was a big sign that some Jewish organization ... Zionists, whatever, that made me burn. It boiled me up again, because I couldn't see anything and there it was. It frustrated me.

Q — You went on to the hotel?

A — I went the same way up that same long walk. By that day they had removed that sign about Santa Anita. On Tuesday there were many more people in the Ambassador in the corridor and in the main lobby where the shops were than there had been Sunday.

Q — Did you notice something about the people?

A — They were all dressed up.

Q — What about their nationalities?

A — There were quite a few of my own complexion.

Q — And blacks?

A — Yes.

Q — And tan complexions?

A — Yes.

Q — Did you walk up those same winding stairs you had walked up Sunday night?

A — Yes.

Q — Were there a lot of people?

A — The whole place was milling with people. ... There were television cameras and a whole lot of bright lights.

Court recessed for the day at this point. The following questions and answers took place at the early morning and early afternoon sessions of the trial, with the first questions relating to excerpts from Sirhan's diaries.

Q — Then it says "dig your well before your first one. Through my readings of Mohandas (sic) Ghandi ... I am a devout student of Mohandas Ghandi. His powers of mind have always fascinated me. I have tried to emulate them but your teachings are very similar to Ghandi's." Did this refer to the Rosicrucians?

A — I don't know. I don't remember.

Q — Then on page 123: "I advocate the overthrow of the current President of the — United States of America. I have no absolute plans yet, but soon will compose some. I am poor. This country's propaganda says that she is the best country in the world. I have not experienced this yet. The U.S. says that life in Russia is bad—why? Supposedly no average American has ever lived in a Slavic society, so how can he tell if it is good or bad—Isn't his government putting words in his mouth."

"Anyway, I believe that the U.S. is ready to start declining, not that it hasn't—it began in November 23, '63—But it should decline at a faster rate so that the real Utopia will not be too far from being

talking about it. If my brother told him if he came up to our house, I would buy it.

Q — Munir had the money for it?

A — It was my money that paid for the gun. After Munir's work, we met the man. We walked over to a corner where he was parked and bought the gun.

Q — I thought your brother paid \$25 and you paid the rest?

A — No sir, I'm the one who paid.

Q — Why did you buy the gun?

A — It was cheap.

Q — Did you have some use for it?

A — I thought it had some use. It was a good gun. It appealed to me.

Q — What did you intend to do with it?

A — Shoot it.

Q — Shoot at what?

A — At a shooting range.

Q — On 2nd June, 1967, in one of your writings, you said something about some revolution, but you hadn't planned your weapons yet. Can you explain that?

A — I can't. As long as my pen was in my hand, I meant what was in the writing. That was all.

Q — You had forgotten that goal?

A — Yes.

Q — It turned off like a water spigot?

A — That is my nature, sir.

Q — You forgot?

A — It passed from my mind. That was all there was to it.

Q — In the Rosierucians you learned to write down your goals. Did you have a goal?

A — At the time, whatever I said in those papers — damn it, I meant it, sir. If I had had the opportunity, I would have acted.

Q — Did you write it down because you wanted to accomplish it?

A — At the time.

Q — Did you shoot your gun?

A — Yes, sir I did.

Q — When was that?

A — Almost directly after I quit working at that health food store in March.

Q — Where did you shoot it?

A — At that same range I was at on June 4th — the San Gabriel Gun Club.

Q — How many times were you on the gun range?

A — About six times.

Q — What ones?

A — I went to the same gun range, San Gabriel, and to the Pomona Police Range.

Q — Why did you practice?

A — I liked to. I didn't have any work at the time.

Q — Did you do it so you would be proficient in your revolution?

A — Sir, that was completely out of my mind at the time. I was more interested in target practicing.

Q — Saturday, the 1st of June, did you go to a gun range?

A — Yes, sir, I did.

Q — What one?

A — I planned to go to San Gabriel, but it was so crowded, so I decided to drive over to the Pomona Police Range.

Q — Sometime during Sunday the 2nd, did you see some article or advertisement that brought to your attention that Senator Robert Kennedy would be at the Ambassador Hotel?

A — Yes, sir, but that was late in the afternoon.

Q — What did you do in early afternoon?

A — Again I went to the San Gabriel Gun Club, but because that was so crowded, I went to the Pomona Police Range. There I was thwarted. They were only allowing large bore guns, and mine was a small-bore gun.

Q — Did you do any shooting?

A — No, sir, I did not.

Q — When did you see the article?

A — On the way home, I bought a Los Angeles Times Sunday edition.

Q — What did you observe?

A — There was a big advertisement that caught my attention inviting the public to come down and see and hear Robert Kennedy at the Ambassador Hotel. It said: "You and your friends are invited to come down." I thought I was as eligible as anyone else to go down and hear Robert Kennedy speaks.

Q — On May 18th, you had written that Senator Robert

F. Kennedy much die and that he must die by June 5, 1968.

A — Yes, sir.

Q — When you read this on Sunday, the 2nd of June, did you have in mind going to the Ambassador Hotel for the purpose of killing Robert F. Kennedy?

A — No, sir, I did not.

Q — Why not?

A — That was completely forgotten from my mind.

Q — You forgot?

A — That emotion was good as long as I was writing it. Scratching for a time only.

Q — What about your emotional feeling about Israelis?

A — Palestine refugees. I have no feelings about Israelis.

Q — Well, then, Zionists. Did that feeling leave you?

A — No, that feeling never left me.

Q — In May, you had heard Senator Kennedy advocate sending bombers to Israel. Did you forget that?

A — No. Every time I was provoked, I would have written it that way. My feeling about Robert Kennedy was only good as long as I was writing that stuff.

Q — Did you go to the Ambassador Hotel?

A — Yes.

Q — Had you ever been there before?

A — I didn't even know where it was, sir.

Q — What time did you arrive at the Ambassador?

A — About six, or seven of seven-thirty.

Q — What entrance did you use?

A — The entrance off Wilshire Boulevard. It was a very long drive, sir. Midway on the walk there was a bulletin board. I stood by the bulletin board.

Q — Was there something on it?

A — Yes, something that really surprised me. A bus schedule that gave time of a bus leaving for Santa Anita. Santa Anita was closed at the time. That really bugged me.

Q — Did you walk to the lobby?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — Did you see anyone?

A — Yes, a policeman and a guard. I showed him the ad and he directed me to the room where the reception would be.

Q — Did you go there?

A — Yes.

Q — Were there many people?

A — Hundreds and hundreds.

Q — Did you have the gun with you?

A — No, sir.

Q — What did you do with it?

A — I left it at home, sir.

Q — Did you leave the room where the reception was being held?

A — Yes, it was too hot. There were too many bright lights.

Q — Did you intend to come back?

A — Yes, sir. I liked the room. At the other end of the lobby, there was some coffee and cookies.

Q — Did you get some coffee?

A — Yes, sir. I stayed in the lobby as long as I had the coffee with me. Then I went back to the room and I was stopped because Robert Kennedy was addressing the people there. They said he would come outside to accommodate the people who couldn't get in.

Q — You waited?

A — Yes.

Q — Why did you wait to see Robert Kennedy?

A — I came down to see him. I might as well see him.

Q — Did you stand on the steps by the concourse?

A — Yes.

Q — How long did you wait?

A — With all the excitement, sir, I couldn't keep track of any time.

Q — About half an hour?

A — About that.

Q — Did you listen to his speech?

A — Yes.

Q — What was the substance of it?

A — The substance was that it was almost election, 48 hours before election. He encouraged his supporters to go out for the last drive. And he sang with a movie star.

Q — Did you enjoy yourself?

A — I was really thrilled, sir.

Q — Was it the first time you had seen Robert Kennedy?

A — Yes. My whole attitude toward him changed. Everytime before, I had associated him with wanting to send jets to Israel. I thought he was a villain, but that night he looked like a saint to me.

Q — ou honestly mean that?

A — Yes, he looked like a saint to me. I liked him.

Q — Did you go browsing around looking for a kitchen?

A — No, sir, I did not. That lady who said I was there in my own words, sir, they were complete liars.

Q — You mean they were mistaken?

A — No. They swore to tell the truth and they didn't.

Q — You were not where they said you were?

A — Not where they described. I was in the lobby and in the room where the rally was supposed to be.

She and Munir, 21-year-old brother of Sirhan, strolled down Broadway this week and, far from drawing the crowds of the past, went unnoticed by everyone except a young Negro girl.

The girl said nothing, only approached and took Mary Sirhan's hand, which she tenderly patted.

This is the emotion the little woman from St. Paul Street in Jerusalem evokes from most people.

Munir was unhappy with testimony from Adel Sirhan, an elder brother, that "after the fall" (Sirhan's headlong tumble from a horse he was exercising), Sirhan sometimes acted violently or went into seances over lighted candles.

"Why did they have to bring that up?" asked Munir, outside the courtroom, after Adel told of a fight between Munir and Sirhan.

It happened at night, when Adel was in bed, at the family's Pasadena home, and he had to break up the brotherly brawl.

"There was a bloody nose and broken glasses," he told the jury.

"Whose nose and glasses?" he was asked.

"Munir's," he replied. Sirhan, he said, was doing the swinging.

It is not known whether two Corona eye specialists, who examined Sirhan after he was bruised and bloodied after falling from the horse Hy-Vera, will be called as witnesses.

However, Dr. Paul Nilsson, Corona ophthalmologist, told The Herald-Examiner: "Dr. Milton Miller examined him (Miller and Nilsson are associates) and so did I, and we found nothing particularly wrong with his eye. He had 20-20 vision with perception sharper in the left eye than in the right. His upper left eyelid had been lacerated but had healed well."

Nilsson continued, "When we refused to certify him injured to the point of collecting insurance money, Sirhan phoned Dr. Miller and said, 'If you don't fill out those insurance papers the way I want, it'll be too bad for you'."

Were the doctors worried about the threat?

"Yes, we were," said Nilsson. "He had a way of spilling out the words which you couldn't forget."

Sirhan collected, eventually, \$2000 from the insurance carrier of his employer.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Kennedy 'Looked Like a Saint' at First Sight, Sirhan Testifies

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Only two nights before he shot and fatally wounded Robert F. Kennedy, Sirhan Bishara Sirhan saw the senator in person for the first time and was "really thrilled . . . He looked like a saint to me. I liked him," the accused assassin testified Wednesday.

The statement was startling to spectators at the murder trial. On Tuesday, they had heard Sirhan admit to murderous rage at Sen. Kennedy's pro-Israel views.

The Jordanian testified on Wednesday that his first encounter with the New York senator occurred June 2 when Kennedy was surrounded by movie stars and singing a song with singer Andy Williams at the Ambassador.

"I was really thrilled, sir," Sirhan told his defense lawyer, Grant B. Cooper. "My whole attitude toward him changed when I saw him that night. Before, I'd associated Kennedy with his statements about the Phantom jets to aid Israel and I pictured him as a villain, but that night he looked like a saint to me. I liked him."

Speaking publicly for the first time about his activities last June 4, the eve of the shooting, Sirhan said he arrived at the Ambassador after getting lost while looking for a Jewish parade on Wilshire Blvd.

He had not known that Kennedy would be at the hotel that night, Sirhan said. All thoughts about Kennedy and memories of the written determination to assassinate the senator were completely out of Sirhan's mind, the defendant testified.

Cooper's questioning revealed Sirhan's murderous impulses toward Kennedy — chronicled in the Jordanian's school notebook. These impulses emerged as fitful flashes of

hate, violent at the time they were written and forgotten when the notebook was closed.

Over and over, Sirhan insisted that he couldn't remember the actual writing, even though he confirmed that it was his, and said that after he finished writing of his plans to kill Kennedy the entries "were completely forgotten from my mind."

As questioning wore on through the second full day of testimony from the 24-year-old Arab, Cooper had elicited these emotional patterns: murderous hate for anyone expressing sympathy for Zionist aims; a perplexing warmth toward Kennedy for his views on other subjects, and an abrupt forgetting of political considerations when confronted by Kennedy in person.

The prosecution, which will begin its cross-examination today, will attempt to prove that it was not completely by accident that Sirhan, having written in May of his intent to kill Kennedy, wound up at the Ambassador with a gun the night of June 4.

But as Sirhan told it Wednesday, the entire day of June 4 had been a haphazard day of often-changed plans.

Cooper referred to Sirhan's notebook entries and asked, "Did you intend to kill him then?"

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/6/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kinsalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-746

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 6 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-6-69

'Notebook Forgotten'

"No, sir, I did not. The notebook was completely forgotten in my mind."

He did not have a gun with him that night, Sirhan added.

He also denied that that night he had been in the kitchen area where Kennedy was shot two nights later. Two prosecution witnesses testified earlier that they got lost in the hotel corridors and ran across Sirhan in the pantry area the night of June 2. Sirhan said Wednesday the witnesses were, "in my opinion, complete liars." They swore to tell the truth and they didn't.

On Tuesday, June 4, Sirhan said, he planned to spend the day betting on the horses at Hollywood Park, but after checking the paper he decided he didn't like the entries, so he went target shooting instead.

He was at the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club from about noon until 5 p.m., when the range closed. He denied earlier testimony that he practiced rapid-firing; an elderly man nearby was doing that for about an hour, Sirhan said, but not he.

When the range closed, he said, he had eight bullets left in the gun and intended to expend those last shots, but the range-master's order came before he could do it. So Sirhan put the loaded gun on the back seat of his car—"so if I got a traffic ticket I don't have to explain"—and started for home. He didn't unload the gun, he said, because it was difficult to eject the bullets. They had to be pried out with a screwdriver, he said.

Later, he saw an ad in The Times which said "Join the Miracle March for Israel", and then described a Jewish parade down Wilshire Blvd., concluding with the phrase "Six Days in June."

"That brought me back to the six days in June of the previous year," Sirhan said, referring to the 1967 Israeli-Arab war. "I should have been dead for those six days. . . This fire started burning inside of me. . . These Zionists, Jews, whatever the hell they are, were trying to rub in the fact that they beat the hell out of the Arabs."

Sirhan said he was so infuriated that "I was off to go down to see what those God-damned sons of bitches were up to. . . I was driving like a maniac."

In his anger, Sirhan said, he thought the parade was that night. Actually, it was held the following night, June 5.

Becomes Lost

He became lost, Sirhan said, and since he hadn't been home, the loaded pistol was still on the back seat of the car. But, he said, "the gun was completely out of my mind."

Not finding the parade, he instead stopped at the lighted headquarters of former Sen. Thomas H. Kuchel, where an election party was in progress. Kuchel had been defeated. "It was pretty dull," he said—smiling broadly to the spectators he added, "Forgive me, any Kuchel supporters"—and then he heard two boys say they were going to "a bigger party at the Ambassador."

He finally found the Ambassador and when he parked and locked his car, he left the gun on the back seat.

In earlier testimony Wednesday, Cooper told of Sirhan's interest in the Rosicrucians Digest, which printed an article titled "Put It In Writing."

"Plan to dare something different, something exciting," it said, and then write down the plan. "See how it gains momentum in the simple process of writing it down . . . Somehow, writing it down feeds the data into your subconscious mind a little quicker . . . Set a target date, then start working to make it come true."

On May 18, Sirhan wrote "Robert F. Kennedy must be assassinated before 5 June '68." And on June 5, Sirhan shot and killed him.

This mental chain of events was laid bare as Cooper read methodically through the reading and writing that made up Sirhan's thinking.

Mystical Cult Magazine

The Rosicrucian Digest is a monthly magazine published by the Ancient Mystical Order of the Rose Crucis, a mystical cult headquartered in San Jose. Sirhan became a member in June, 1968.

Sirhan has testified that he believed he could develop his mental powers to the point where he could produce psychic phenomena, such as visual delusions and thought transference.

Cooper also introduced into evidence the explosive two pages which he argued successfully two weeks ago were "too inflammatory" to be placed before the jury.

These pages, kept from evidence then but released to the press, contained Sirhan's wholesale endorsement of all forms of communism—even conflicting forms—and an angry attack on the United States.

Cooper read the pages aloud and later explained to newsmen that defense psychiatrists felt the writings had a strong bearing on Sirhan's state of mind—which is the key issue in whether Sirhan is sentenced to death or simply imprisoned.

Cooper droned hypnotically through page after page of meaningless, undecipherable sentences, half-sentences and even parts of words.

"We believe that Robert F. Kennedy must be sacrificed for the cause of the poor, exploited people," read one entry.

Sirhan said, however, that he was not involved with anyone in the plan and couldn't remember why he wrote "We believe."

"The hand that is doing this writing will do the slaying of the above-mentioned victim," read another.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SENATOR'S SUPPORT FOR ISRAEL TURNED KEY Love for Kennedy Became Hate, Sirhan Says

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

When Sirhan Bishara Sirhan first learned last May of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy's support for Israel, he hated him so much that "if he were in front of me, the way I felt then, so help me God, he would have died. Right then and there."

"He was doing a lot of things behind my back that I didn't know about," Sirhan testified angrily Tuesday. "It just burned me up."

"Up to that time," he continued, "I loved Robert Kennedy. I cared for him very much. I hoped he'd win the Presidency."

But a television documentary on Sen. Kennedy's career at the height of the campaign last May informed Sirhan—for the first time, he said Tuesday—of the senator's support for Israel. Sen. Kennedy was shown in Israel in 1948, celebrating the creation of the Jewish state. Sirhan, who was 4 at that time and living in Jerusalem, said he had never known of this.

His love of Sen. Kennedy turned to hate, he testified, and a few days later, on May 18, wrote: "Robert F. Kennedy must be assassinated before 5 June '68"—the first anniversary of the Arab-Israeli six-day war.

Sirhan was only 17 minutes off his target date. It was 12:17 a.m. June 5 when he fired a .22-caliber bullet

into Sen. Kennedy's brain at an election victory party at the Ambassador. Sen. Kennedy died 25 hours later.

Sirhan's anger at his victim's pro-Israel views cropped up repeatedly Tuesday as Sirhan unveiled a lifetime of loathing for Zionism and the state of Israel. Sen. Kennedy's views, said Sirhan, showed him to be "not all the good guy he claimed himself to be."

The defendant said he heard a local radio broadcast on Sen. Kennedy at "some Jewish club in Beverly Hills," where Sen. Kennedy had repeated his support of military aid to Israel.

At that Sirhan added, he became so angry that he glared into his bedroom mirror, practicing a mental exercise taught by a mystical cult, until he saw Sen. Kennedy's face in the mirror rather than his own.

"I can't prove it, sir," he told defense attorney Grant B. Cooper, "but I saw his face in the mirror. I was that burned up about him."

But Sen. Kennedy was not Sirhan's only intended victim, testimony revealed Tuesday. In a page-by-page reading of Sirhan's controversial notebooks—with Sirhan eagerly reading along and laughing sheepishly at the frequent incoherence of them—Cooper found President Johnson and former U.N. Ambassador Arthur Goldberg marked for possible death.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/5/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Vick R. Williams
Title: Kensealt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-7-705

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 5 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

10

cc to [unclear]
3-5-69

Theodor Herzl convened the first international Zionist conference in 1897, he said, and propounded the movement's aim to create a Jewish state.

They chose Palestine, he said, and began to buy land there and to influence Jews in the bigger nations to exert pressure on their governments in support of the creation of Israel.

At Herzl's death in 1904, Chaim Weizmann inherited leadership of the Zionist movement and sought British support in turning over Palestine to the Zionists, he said.

With England's Balfour declaration of 1917, he said, England made "a deal" with the Zionists in which, in exchange for the pressure of U.S. Jews on the United States to aid the Allies in World War I, England would later make Palestine a Jewish state.

But, Sirhan said, England also "made a deal with the Arabs," whereby Palestine would be made independent in exchange for Arab nations' support of England against the Turks and the Germans.

Finally, Sirhan said, England also made a "deal" with France, in which the two countries secretly planned to divide the Arab nations between themselves.

Blames England

After the war, he said, England stood by her agreement with the Zionists and scrapped the deal with the Arabs.

Meanwhile, Sirhan went on—and he recited off an amazing string of statistics—the Zionists had increased Palestine's Jewish population from 56,000 in 1917 to about 650,000 by 1948. During this time, he said, the Arab population grew from about 700,000 to 1.3 million.

He said the Arabs knew they would be taken over by the Zionists, regarded the trend as "imperialism on the part of the West," but were ignored when they tried to plead their cause.

In all, Sirhan created a lecture atmosphere that gave rise to grave doubts in the minds of his hearers as to the accuracy of his IQ test, reported last week as 89, slightly below the 90-110 range considered average.

The chaotic scribbblings in Sirhan's notebook revealed the names of three girls Sirhan had known. There was one reference to "Janice" and dozens to: "Gwendolyn Gum, Gwen Gum, Gwen, Gwen, Gwen . . . Peggy, Peggy, Peggy Peggy, I love you Peggy . . . Sol & Peggy, Sol & Ostercamp . . . I love you Peggy . . ." Sol was Sirhan's nickname.

Denies 'Crush'

Janice was believed to be Janice Elaine Ducey, an exercise girl, at the race horse ranch in Corona where Sirhan worked. Miss Ostercamp also was an exercise girl there. Sirhan denied any crush on Miss Ostercamp, but admitted she was "tall and beautiful." He once bought a soft drink for her in Newport Beach, but said they never dated.

Miss Gum was a coed at Pasadena City College and once, when she was in a beauty contest, Sirhan bought \$10 worth of votes for her at a nickel or dime a vote. Although he tried to date her, she never went out with him.

At other disjointed parts of the notebook, Sirhan wrote:

"I always seem to be on the loosing (sic) end, always exploited to the fullest." ("I must have been a maniac at the time," Sirhan interrupted as that was read.)

"Long live Nasser." ("I'm a great admirer of President Nasser," he said.)

"Long live communism." ("It's a very long jump between Nasser and communism," he interjected.)

"Nasser is the greatest man that ever lived in this world."

"I have often wondered how it feels to be rich, rich, rich, rich, rich."

After more than an hour of confirming his fragmented writing, Sirhan told Cooper, "All this sounds like a crazy man writing."

"Do you feel you're crazy?" asked Cooper. "Do you think you're completely normal?"

"No, sir, I'm not crazy," Sirhan said.

As with the Kennedy reference, Sirhan said he couldn't remember writing of an intent to kill Mr. Johnson or Goldberg, but admitted he must have, since the notes were in his hand. Once he said, "It is not me, sir. It is not Sirhan, sitting right here, that wrote that. . . I couldn't write that without provocation."

Cooper asked: "Did you ever have in mind killing President Johnson?"

"No," he said, "but I hated his guts at one point. He said the United States supports the territorial integrity of all nations, and he stressed all nations," he added sarcastically, tapping an index finger for emphasis.

Phrase Repeated

Goldberg, Sirhan said, had repeated Mr. Johnson's phrase—"and he said A-L-L-L nations. He made that a hell of a long A-L-L-L."

"Should he have died for that?" asked Cooper.

"Why not?" Sirhan rejoined tartly. "He didn't stick to his word."

At one point he told Cooper: "Anything involving Zionism invokes this response in me. Zionism is more inimical to me than communism is to you."

In morning testimony, Sirhan astonished spectators at his murder trial with an impassioned—and accurate—discourse on the growth of Zionism, Palestinian history and England's behind-the-scenes agreements on Palestine's future.

He also calmly described a mystical experiment in which he plunged his hand into boiling water, "thought cool," and didn't get burned. He also turned candle flames different colors just by thinking about it, he said, adding, "I can't prove it, but God damn it, I did."

Sirhan revealed a deep study and intense hatred of Zionism in his pell-mell delivery. He faltered only once in the virtuoso performance.

Sagging forward in the witness stand, he paused, said "I'm too nervous," and sat quietly while a glass of water was brought. After a couple minutes rest, he resumed his staccato recitation of the spread of Zionism throughout his homeland.

His delivery was punctuated with occasional profanities—"These God damned Zionists!" he snapped at one point—and he told forcefully how he felt Zionism had affected his own life as a refugee.

The late President John F. Kennedy figured in a poignant moment in Sirhan's testimony, when Cooper asked:

"How did you feel about John F. Kennedy?"

Tells Love for JFK

"I loved him, sir," said Sirhan. "I loved him more than any American would have."

Sirhan explained that before Mr. Kennedy's assassination Nov. 22, 1963, in Dallas, he (Kennedy) was working with the Arab nations to secure a just settlement of the Palestinian refugee problem.

Sirhan's hatred of Zionists—which he took pains to differentiate from non-Zionist Jews—cropped up over and over as he testified that "prior to 1948, before the Zionists," the Jews and Arabs of Palestine "were living very amicably, in great harmony."

But the long-term aims of Zionism, culminating in the 1948 partition of Palestine and the creation of Israel as a Jewish state, destroyed the old Jewish-Arab relationship, he said.

Since 1948, he testified, the situation has worsened as Zionism in Israel has strengthened.

Sirhan also differentiated, in testimony on the six-day Israeli-Arab war in June, 1967, between "the Arab bloc" and "Palestinian Arabs."

He said the Arab cause in that war—though he felt the Arabs were in the right and were the victims of Israeli aggression—could not be equated with the cause of Palestinian Arabs. "Nasser has nothing to do with the struggle of the Palestinian people," Sirhan said.

Sirhan spoke of modern Zionism's aims in a quiet, scholarly way at first, then with rising voice.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan: Hounded by Frustrations

Following is the dramatic and revealing testimony given yesterday by Sirhan Bishara Sirhan at his trial for the murder of U.S. Sen. Robert F. Kennedy:

Q—In your Arab schools what were your teachers?

A—They were Arabs, sir, but they had some foreign orientation.

Q—You mean they spoke English.

A—Yes sir.

Q—In 1956 you were 11 years old.

A—About that, yes.

Q—Do you remember anything about the Suez crisis?

A—Yes sir.

Q—How did you learn about it?

A—From news reports, and radio. We lived through it.

Q—What did you learn.

A—That Israel had launched another aggression against the Arab people . . . making more misery for the Arabs.

Q—What did the teacher tell you?

A—He gave us a lecture on this is the wrong way of what should be done. We should have negotiations . . . to discuss our differences and problems.

Q—A decision was made that you would come to the United States?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—I assume somebody in the family told you about it?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—What were your feelings?

A—I was hesitant. I didn't want to leave. I wanted to stay in my country with my people.

Q—What about the conditions in your country?

A—I thought, sir, they would subside eventually.

Q—You ran away?

A—Yes, sir, I did.

Q—Where did you go?

A—From Jerusalem to Ramallah, a distance of ten to 15 miles.

Q—You had relatives there?

A—Yes, sir, they all lived near us in 1948.

Q—When you ran away, did you stay all night?

A—After eight or nine hours, I became lonely, and I missed my family. I came back.

Q—Did you get a little hungry, too?

A—Yes.

Q—Then where did you go?

A—To New York.

Q—How many of the family were on the trip?

A—I, Munir, Adel, Ayda and my parents.

Q—Where were your other brothers?

A—They were in Jordan.

Q—And eventually you arrived in California?

A—Yes.

Q—Did you live with someone when you arrived?

A—Yes, we were met by our sponsor at the train. His name was Haldor Lillens.

Q—How long did you live with them?

A—I don't remember exactly. It was about two or three weeks.

Q—And did you go to school then?

A—Yes. Longfellow Elementary School.

Q—And then where did you live when you moved?

A—We secured a home of our own. We rented it. It was at 1321 N. Mentor St. That has been torn down now.

Q—And you went to school?

A—Yes, Munir and I did.

Q—Did your mother get a position of work.

A—Yes.

Q—Where was that?

A—In the nursery school at the Westminster Presbyterian Church.

Q—How long did your father remain with you?

A—About six or eight months.

Q—And when did you start school here?

A—In early February of 1957.

Q—And after six or seven months . . . ?

A—He returned to Jordan.

Q—And how long was he away from you?

A—Ever since.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-10 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/5/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-704

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 6 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-6-69

Q — In September of 1957, you went to another school?

A — Yes, I was enrolled at John Marshall Junior High School.

Q — Did you graduate?

A — No. We had moved out of the school district of John Marshall so I had to transfer to Elliott Junior High School.

Q — Was this when your mother and sister bought the home?

A — No, that was two or three years before we bought the home.

Q — Where did you move?

A — To 1647 N. Lake.

Q — It was necessary for you to go to another school?

A — Yes, sir, it was.

Q — What school was that?

A — Elliott Junior High School.

Q — How long were you there?

A — Until I graduated from Junior High School there.

Q — You did graduate?

A — Yes, sir, I did.

Q — Then what school did you attend?

A — John Marshall High School (later corrected to John Muir).

Q — Did you live in the same place?

A — No, we had moved to the place where my mother and sister bought the house.

Q — How many years were you at John Muir?

A — Three years, from '60 to '63.

Q — Your grades were reasonably good?

A — Yes, sir, they were.

Q — Did you get along well with other students and teachers?

A — Yes, sir, I did.

Q — They accepted you?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — You were graduated?

A — I was.

Q — When did you graduate?

A — June, 1963.

Q — How long were you enrolled at Pasadena City College?

A — Three semesters, sir, and I was dismissed the fourth.

Q — During this time, did Ayda become ill?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — You were dismissed from school because of absences. In those absences reported, why did you miss school?

A — I had to nurse my sister.

Q — Were all those absences because of taking care of your sister?

A — I can't truthfully say that all of them were. But 95 per cent of them were.

Q — On what other occasions were you absent?

A — At that time I liked to go to the races.

Q — After you were dismissed from Pasadena City College, what did you do?

A — Having developed, sir, a love for the horses, I decided to try to ride them, to become a jockey.

Q — Did you get a job?

A — In August of 1963, I went down to Santa Anita and asked for a job.

Q — What kind of job was it?

A — I told my prospective employer I didn't know anything about horses, but I wanted to learn. I offered to work free for him to see how well I would do. I did work free for two or three weeks.

Q — What were your duties?

A — Just cleaning out stalls and walking horses.

Q — What did you weigh then?

A — About 110 pounds.

Q — How tall are you?

A — Five feet, four and a half inches.

Q — Were you permitted to ride horses?

A — No, not at the beginning. I was only allowed to walk them, groom them and clean them.

Q — Did you ever ride while you worked there?

A — In the latter part of the five months, I was allowed to ride one of the easier ones.

Q — You wanted to be a jockey?

A — Yes.

Q — You terminated your employment at Santa Anita?

A — Yes, I felt confident enough to ride more of the easier horses.

Q — What did you do after that?

A — I secured a job at the Altfillisch Ranch in Corona.

Q — Was there an accident at the Altfillisch Ranch?

A — Yes.

Q — When did this happen?

A — It was 7:30 or 8 o'clock on the morning of September 24, 1966.

Q — Were you instructed to ride the horse fast?

A — I was supposed to work

him for three hundred yards.

Q—What happened then?

A—50 yards after I started, sir, I don't remember anything.

Q—You were unconscious?

A—I fell from that horse and was knocked unconscious.

Q—Can you describe your wounds? You had no broken bones?

A—No broken bones. There were many contusions on my body. Some sutures under my chin and on my left eye.

Q—Did you file a claim for workmen's compensation?

A—Yes.

Q—Did you receive an award?

A—Yes, in the amount of \$2000.

Q—When you had no job, did you read more?

A—Yes, I always read what interested me, and I thought I might continue my schooling.

Q—Did you read about the Arab-Israeli situation?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—In what periodicals did you read about it?

A—There were magazines, news articles, books, pamphlets, whatever I saw. And I read the B'nai B'rith Messenger.

Q—That is a Jewish newspaper. Why did you read it?

A—The best way to know what the Zionists are up to is to read what they say.

Q—At this time, did you become interested in the occult or metaphysical?

A—Yes, sir, I did. I've always asked 'What is this life about? What is this world?' I wanted to know.

Q—You applied for membership in the Rosicrucians?

A—Yes, sir.

Sirhan testified he purchased a book titled "Cyclomancy" after reading an advertisement in an astrological magazine.

He said he learned to hold boiling water in his hand and not feel the pain.

Q—Were there other experiments?

A—Visual delusions.

Q—What about visual delusions?

A—Let me try to find the thing. (Sirhan takes the book, Cyclomancy). Here it is, Page 108. I copied this on a larger sheet, sir.

(Page 108 showed the series of six parallel dots contained within circles which Sirhan claimed, through practice of the occult, he could see as but one line of dots. The book was offered in evidence by the defense and studied by the jury.)

Q—What were you supposed to do with this?

A—You were supposed to look at the black dots and see only one black dot . . . I can't prove to you I saw only one, but I did . . . May I add this . . . I had it so I could put one half of a dot here and one half there and combine them. Not just whole dots, half dots.

Q—In your room, was there some form of desk or table?

A—Yes, there was a table with one drawer.

Q—Was there a mirror above this table?

A—Yes, there was.

Q—Did you use this mirror in your experiments?

A—Yes, I did. It was involved in the Rosicrucian exercises.

Q—Were there candles?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—And you used these candles in your exercises and studies?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—And you used these candles in studying the power of concentration?

A—Yes. One of these . . . was to take a candle in a darkened room and put it between your face and the mirror and concentrate on the flame . . . and you could see in it whatever color you wanted. This was very hard for me to do.

Q—And you could really see these colors?

A—I cannot prove it, sir, but damn it (mumble).

A—I saw a blue flame.

Q—And you could see any color you wanted?

A—Any color I wanted . . . but I had to concentrate for five minutes. Sometimes I saw flashes.

Q—How many colors did you see?

A—Numerous colors. I kept a list.

A—I played with that.

Q—Do you recall trying some of this at the race track too?

A—Yes.

Q—And there was an incident at the track which you attributed to this.

A—Yes.

Q—Where was this?

A—At the Santa Anita track last March 19th, my birthday. I wanted to bet the daily double. I didn't even look at the form, I bet the one and the nine for the 19th. After I bet the daily double, I started to read the form. There was one horse. It was the first horse in the race. It was owned by Altfillisch . . . It was a long shot, a long chance. It didn't have a chance, but I didn't want it to win.

Q—You didn't want it to win, even though you had bet on it?

A—That's right. I kept saying in my mind You . . . you won't win . . . he's not going to win, he's not going to win, he's not going to win.

They came out to the gate . . . that horse wheeled, it was in the number one position, and it went through the rail and was disqualified.

Q—It broke through the rail?

A—It jumped or something, thing.

Q—And you think your power of concentration did this?

A— . . . I can't prove it, but it works.

Q—And did other thoughts occur to you, Sirhan?

A—Yes, sir. The 1967 war in June of that year, I realized the Israelis had brainwashed the American public . . . they had talked about the Arabs and the Jews turned around and did the same thing to the Arabs. It was a deception, really.

Q—You saw a magazine description (in 1967, during the Arab-Israeli war).

A—I saw a picture of Israeli soldiers on the east bank of the Suez Canal . . . they were the victors . . . they were the winners . . . If I had seen these guys personally, I would have blasted them . . . I would have killed them.

I read in a book that the Zionists and Jews in America gave \$370 million to revitalize Israel's economy. This burned the hell out of me. When President Johnson is trying to keep the money in this country . . . when tourists only get seven dollars a day, these — — — damn Zionists . . .

Q—Watch your language, please.

Q—You thought you didn't have any rights?

A—I still don't have any rights.

Q—It was important to you to have your own country?

A—I had no country . . . I'm sick and tired of being a foreigner . . . I was a place of my own. I want to eat my own food in my own land. I want my own country, my own land, my own city, my own business . . . my own everything.

(Sirhan was shown some notebooks dating from his school

days at Pasadena City College)

Q — Now, on page 15, we have what I read to you yesterday. On May 18, at 9:45 a.m., 1968, "my determination to eliminate Robert F. Kennedy is becoming more the more of an unshakeable obsession." Do you remember writing that?

A — No, sir, I don't remember writing that.

Q — Do you remember what your feeling was about Robert F. Kennedy on or about May 18—that was three weeks before June 5.

A — That could have been the time, sir, when during his campaign he said he would send 50 bombers to Israel.

Q — Where was Mr. Kennedy on the 18th?

A — I don't know, sir, if he was in Oregon or not.

Q — On or about that time did you listen to the radio?

A — No that is not the time, Mr. Cooper. That was when I watched television.

Q — What did you see?

A — That evening, I brewed myself some tea and went into the living room to watch television. I don't have a favorite program so I just turn the channels to see what program interests me. What I saw was a documentary on Robert Kennedy. It was a biography. It told of his career as a politician. I started to watch it. It told of Robert Kennedy's achievements, of his being attorney general.

It told of his close association with his brother, how he became a Senator from New

York . . . his whole history until he was running for President. It spoke of Robert Kennedy always being for the underdog . . . the poor . . . the scum of society . . . how he wanted to help the weakest. They showed that Robert Kennedy in 1948 was in Israel helping to celebrate with the Israelis their independence and the birth of the State of Israel.

The enthusiasm of the narrator bugged me to pieces. It burned me up. Until that time, I loved Robert Kennedy. I wanted him to be elected President. Then I found out he had been supporting Israel, not only recently, but since its very inception. He was doing a lot of things behind my back that I didn't know about until that night on television. It burned me up, sir.

Q — What is the significance of 5 June, 1967?

A — Any involvement with Zionism . . . invokes something in me I can't describe. Zionism is worse to me than Communism is to you. I have that same feeling about Zionism as you do about Communism. The 5 June I wrote here was in my mind as 5 June 1967, the date of the Arab-Israeli war.

Q — Does that help you recall that you wrote that?

A — If you ask me independently of this, what June 5 means, it means to me the Israeli aggression against the Arab people in 1967.

Q — This is your handwriting?

A — It is.

Q — What did you feel for

Robert F. Kennedy, when you wrote that?

A — At the time, I felt that if he were in front of me, he would have died right then and there.

Q — Do you remember your feelings at that time?

A — I must have been burned up, sir.

Q — How do you know how you felt at the time, when you don't remember writing it?

A — I was provoked. I was off.

Q — You have used some ungentlemanly language. Did you learn those words in the United States?

A — Yes, sir, I did.

Q — You heard something on the radio.

A — Yes, sir. Yes, sir, but not directly. I was in my own room, which is adjacent to my mother's. My mother had the radio on in her room and I heard it.

Q — Do you remember that station it was?

A — KFWB, the all-news. My mother loved to listen to that.

Q — What did you hear?

A — It was hot news. The announcer said Robert Kennedy was at some Jewish Club at Beverly Hills where he had committed himself so formally to sending 50 jets to Israel.

Q — What did that make you think?

A — I thought Robert Kennedy was not all the good guy he claimed to be.

Q — Did you become an-
dy?

A — It boiled me up again. At the time, I was concentrating on my Rosicrucian studies.

Q — What did you do?

A — He bugged me to the point where instead of my own face in the mirror, I saw Robert Kennedy's face. It may have been an illusion, but I saw his face, not my own. I was that burned up about it.

Q — I again address myself to the Pasadena City College notebook . . . page 21 is written in pencil, is that correct?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — At the top of this is the word "war" . . . "A declaration of war against American humanity . . ."

A — That's right.

Q — "When in the course of human events it becomes necessary to equalize and sick, no I believe that's seek, revenge for inhumane treatment at the hands of the American people, it is proper . . ."

Q — (repeating) "Seek revenge for all the inhumane treatment committed against me by the American people . . . as soon as I am able to command a sum of money in the amount of \$2000 and acquire some firearms, the specifications of which are not arrived at yet . . . (the) victims will be the President, Vice, and so forth down the ladder . . . the method is unimportant but the weapon should be influenced somehow . . ."

"The author believes that many, in fact most people will be in sympathy with his feelings.

" . . . This declaration is not considered likely by the author . . . but he hopes to be the initiator of military steps to World War III . . ."

"The author bluntly states he wants to be recorded by history as the man who triggered the last war . . ."

"Life is ambivalence . . . struggle, wicked. If it was ever otherwise, I have never seen it. It always seems I am losing . . . always exploited . . ."

Q — This is written in your handwriting?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — What did you have in mind?

A — I don't remember.

Q — You say the victims of the party in power . . . did you have in mind on the second of June, 1967, somehow killing the President and Vice President of the United States of America?

A — That's what I wrote at that time. I must have been provoked. I would have blasted anybody.

Q — Do you recollect now obtaining a weapon for the purpose of killing the President of the United States?

A — No, sir, it's not me, sir. It's not the Sirhan who's sitting here.

Q—Without reading all this, could you tell my why you wrote "I always seem to be on the losing end?"

A—I could have been provoked by the George Putnam editorial. I must have . . . something must have moved me. There must have been some provocation. I must have been provoked. I would not have hesitated to do it (kill the President) at that time.

Q—Did you plan to do it at some time in the future?

A—I don't remember what my exact frame of mind was.

Q—On page 24 you wrote the following—"blinkers"—do you know what that means?

A—No, sir.

Q—Then you wrote "long live Nasser" . . .

A—I'm a great admirer of President Nasser.

Q—Then you wrote "tell tell, tell, tell them to put . . ." Do you know what that is?

A—I don't know what I meant by blinkers.

Q—You wrote here "tell tell, tell, tell them to put blinkers on this son of a b . . . son of a . . ." Do you recall who it was you were telling this?

A—No, sir.

Q—Then there is written here "Long live long . . . 5-2-5 . . . mid-terms 10 November. Nasser . . . Nasser. long live Nasser. Alley fighter . . . long live Communism, long live Communism . . ."

A—There is a very long jump between Nasser and Communism.

Q—On Page 29 it appears to be written: Whatever may be said in praise of poverty the fact remains it is not possible to live a complete or successful life unless one is rich. No man can rise to his greatest possibility. I have often wondered what it is like to be rich . . . rich . . . rich. Black magic. Did you write that?

A—It looks like my writing, Sir.

Q—Is it?

A—It is my handwriting.

Q—What does it mean?

A—I don't know.

Q—What is "black magic"?

A—If there is white magic, there is black magic.

Q—Here it says "Peggy . . . P . . . P . . . Peggy . . . Y . . . O G . . . G . . . The incredible power of this Kizuma." That's an ancient Egyptian technique of directing thoughts of others, of radiating thought. Was this when you were studying Eastern philosophy?

A—I don't know what source it is, but it is related to that, yes.

Q—Were you studying thinking and directing thoughts of others?

A—I don't know, Sir, what I was doing here.

Q—You were studying that at the time?

A—Yes.

Q—It says "Peggy . . . love . . . Sol and Peggy . . . the greenery here is beautiful . . . Sol and Peggy . . . I . . . I . . . I . . . she Peggy . . . Peggy

Ostercamp." Was she a girl you know?

A—Yes, Sir.

Q—Did you date Peggy?

A—No, Sir, I didn't.

Q—On Page 31 it says "Peggy Ostercamp . . . I love you . . . I love . . ."

A—Let me explain. "P" is alien to the Arab tongue. "G" is a loose pronunciation . . . it is queer to my tongue as I say it. That was what stood out in my mind.

Q—This "Peggy. I love you" —that's in your printing?

A—Yes, Sir.

Q—Did you have a crush on her?

A—No Sir . . . it's just that name.

Q—What about the "I love you"?

A—I don't know. I can't account for that.

Q—Now on Page 34, you have: "Constitution . . . will Sirhan ever need to work or uphold . . . Sirhan must begin to work on solving the problems and difficulties of assassinating the 36th president of the glorious United States. (Lyndon B. Johnson). Kelvinator . . . Janice . . . no . . . n . . . n 636 E. Howard St. . . . California . . . Sirhan, Sirhan, Sirhan, Sirhan." This part, "Sirhan must begin to work on . . . assassination of the 36th president of the United

States. Why did you write that?

A—I can't say. I must have been provoked, but I can't remember the provocation.

Q—It is your writing?

A—Yes it is my handwriting.

Q—Do you remember that about the 36th President?

A—Who is that?

Q—I don't know enough history to tell you. Johnson. Did you ever have the idea of killing Johnson?

A—No, but I hated his guts at one point. It was during the Arab-Israeli war when he came out and said: "The United States supports the territorial integrity of all nations of the area." All nations.

Q—You have written "Sol and Peggy." They knew you as Sol?

A—Yes, Sir.

Q—Were you sometimes called Sol?

A—Yes, Sir.

Q—Where did you get that nickname?

A—Someone once mistook me for being Jewish and wanted to call me Solomon. I said, why not Sol.

Q—Then it says 'Perhaps you could use the enclosed \$. . . Sol, Sol . . . \$. . . \$. . . Hello, Tom . . . Perhaps you could use the \$.' Remember writing that?

A—No, Sir, I don't remember writing it, although I did send Tom some money.

Q—How much?

A—\$25.

Q—Why?

A—I thought he needed it. It was when I had money from the industrial accident.

Q—On Page 39, you have 'Chance is a word void of sence.' Do you know what that means?

A—No, Sir, I don't.

Q—Then 'Sapphire stone, stone . . . sapphire stone . . . lodestone . . . Tom . . . Ambassador Goldberg must die, die on use die . . . meat . . . die, die, die, me at the airport . . . Ambassador Goldberg must die. Stone. Think you . . . stone . . . Goldberg must be eliminated . . . stone . . . Sirhan is an Arab

A—That he is, Sir.

Q—Then 'Arab, Arab . . . You perhaps you could use the enclosed \$. . . Sirhan, Sirhan, Sirhan, Sirhan . . . green . . . Sirhan . . . stone . . . stone . . . Sirhan . . . green . . . port . . . stone.' Then the words, 'Ambassador Goldberg must be eliminated . . . must die.' Were you angry at Ambassador Goldberg?

A—Yes, Sir, I was angry at Goldberg.

Q—Do you watch on television the meetings of the United Nations?

A—Yes, Sir, I watched all of them.

Q—Did you see the debates when he was United States ambassador?

A—Yes, I did.

Q—After the Arab-Israeli conflict in 1967?

A—Yes, Sir.

Q—What bugged you?

A—When President Johnson said "The United States supports the territorial integrity of all nations in the area," he referred to Ambassador Goldberg as his able ambassador to the United Nations. He was only "able" in the respect that he was on the side of Israel.

Q—What did Ambassador Goldberg ever do (to upset you)?

A—I just didn't like what he said. He repeated what Johnson said and he said it himself. He made a hell of a long pause when he said it. He did not stick to his word.

Q—Would you have killed Goldberg?

A—If I had a gun or if I had had anything I would have broken the television set. I hated him.

Q—Did you write this?

A—I don't remember it.

Q—How do you remember your emotions at the time if you don't remember writing it?

A—Because of how I felt about Goldberg.

Q—This 'Darling June' written here. Who's June?

A—A race horse, Sir.

Q—And here, 'Long live . . . dream . . .'

A—I say it again, Sir: Long live the Arab dream.

COURT RECESSED



Herald-Examiner Photo

SIRHAN BISHARA SIRHAN

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Gruesome Past Told By Sirhan

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan goes back into the witness box in his murder trial today to continue testimony which began dramatically with his court admission he killed Sen. Robert F. Kennedy and shot and wounded five others.

A lengthy description on his childhood as a refugee in the walled city of Old Jerusalem is expected later during this morning's trial session.

Sirhan's testimony of yesterday was without incident. But his attorneys remain concerned over their client's volatile nature.

Twice his trial has been halted by his courtroom tantrums.

Sirhan took the oath with a clenched fist yesterday and then quickly admitted under questioning by his chief defense counsel, Grant B. Cooper, that he shot Kennedy.

Q—It is alleged that on the 5th day of June, 1968, you shot and killed Robert Francis Kennedy, a human being. Did you

on or about the 5th of June shoot Robert Kennedy?

A—Yes sir, I did.

Sirhan also confessed that he "must have" shot and wounded United Auto Workers official Paul Schrade and four others who were with Kennedy in the pantry of the Ambassador Hotel's Embassy Ballroom.

But, he insisted, "I was not aware of anything."

He said he did not know Schrade, nor the other victims

— Ira Goldstein, Irwin Street

Mrs. Elizabeth Evans or newsman William Weissel. He insisted he bore them no "ill will."

Sirhan was tense but composed when he took the stand immediately after a mid-after-

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/4/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensealt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

67-156-24-703

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 5 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

note Bureau
3-5-69

noon recess. He put nervously at a cigaret and gulped water before being called. His mother seated a few feet away from him outside the courtroom rail, seemed more nervous than her son.

She sat on the edge of her chair in an attitude of prayer when he walked to the witness box. As his testimony began she struck an attitude as one rooting for a player in an athletic contest. She murmured in her native Arabic when she thought her son scored a point.

As soon as Cooper won from the admitted slayer the admission that he had fired the gun which took Kennedy's life, he handed him a photograph of an excerpt from a diary seized from Sirhan's home hours after the shooting.

The diary entry, timed and dated 9:45 a.m., May 18, 1968, read in part "my determination to eliminate RFK is becoming more and more an obsession."

The page concluded: "Robert Kennedy must be assassinated before June 5, 1968." Sirhan readily admitted the entry was in his handwriting.

He had written the phrase "port wine" twice on the same page. He explained to Cooper that this was the name of a race horse.

The diary entry established, Cooper quickly moved the questioning away from the events of the murder to the time Sirhan's early childhood—first on New Jerusalem's St. Paul's Road, and then as a refugee in the abandoned Jewish Quarter of the walled city of Old Jerusalem.

Sirhan, now 24, testified his memory of his homeland went back to 1947, when he was three.

That year he said, he recalled a dynamiting in which a British soldier was blown to bits.

"I recollect the dismembered soldier..." he swore.

Earlier in the day his mother, Mrs. Mary Sirhan, testified Sirhan was thrown into a fit of

"ague" by this and similar incidents of the Israeli war of independence.

The soldier's body "was exploded," Sirhan testified.

One of his legs was blown into the bellry of a nearby church. "I recall the leg with the soldier's boot on it," he said.

He also said he remembered the death of his brother Munir, who was run over in the street before the family home—his body tossed against a barbed-wire barrier which ran down the street separating the Zionist and Arab sectors of the city.

"I used to walk around his casket," he said.

Sirhan said he dimly recalled the family moving to their refugee quarters in Old Jerusalem.

"I remember something about moving... I was naked."

Sirhan said when he asked why the family had been displaced he learned:

"The Jews kicked us out of our homes... The Zionists kicked us out. We were terrorized into leaving our homes."

The young Arab also recounted how he was told of the Dair Nassim massacre in which some 250 persons were slain, Sirhan believes by Haganah—the Zionist provisional army of the 1940's.

Sirhan said that his mother told him of seeing Arab girls seized in that incident paraded in a truck through New Jerusalem.

Earlier, Mrs. Sirhan had testified that the girls were half-naked, and that their Zionist captives clapped and boasted, "See what we can do."

He had no personal recollection of events connected with the massacre, Sirhan admitted.

Telling of his life in the walled city, Sirhan said that while he never suffered "pangs of star-

vation," he could have more than the family's rations, provided by the United Nations.

This ration included margarine, brown sugar, flour, beans and a monthly gallon of kerosene, he said.

He said the family, who lived in one room in a damaged house, was often cold in winter.

Q—How cold did it get?

A—Pretty damn cold, sir.

"Watch your language, sir," Cooper warned.

One of Sirhan's most vivid recollections, he said, was of a slum and dump near his home.

This place was a "run down tenement... dirty... unclean... sickening, really..." he testified.

Often, in Old Jerusalem, Sirhan said, the family was forced to flee to the cellar because of bombing raids.

His mother would stuff the children's ears with cotton, he said.

One of the bombings, which he heard, but did not see, destroyed a small shop near his home, Sirhan testified.

After this incident, he said, he saw the dismembered body of the shopkeeper—a friend—on the ground before the shop.

This incident, his mother had testified earlier, sent Sirhan, then eight, into a trance from which it took him several days to recover.

A brother of the defendant, Adel, 30, who preceded the young defendant on the stand, also told of this incident.

Sirhan also repeated a story told three times in the trial—by a boyhood friend, his mother and brother—of finding a human hand in the family well.

"It sickened me," he recalled.

"It was a piece of flesh, a hand up to the wrist..."

Telling of the sparking of the cause of Arab nationalism within him, Sirhan recalled playing beneath the Jerusalem wall with friends one day in the 1950's.



SIRHAN BROTHER, ATTORNEY OUTSIDE COURTHOUSE
Adel Sirhan, right, talking with Grant Cooper, testified briefly

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Takes Witness Stand, Admits He Killed Kennedy

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan admitted from the witness stand at his murder trial Monday that he killed Sen. Robert F. Kennedy and had "no doubt" he shot and wounded five other persons June 5.

"Did you, on or about the 5th of June, 1968, shoot Sen. Robert F. Kennedy?" asked defense attorney Grant B. Cooper.

"Yes, sir," the 24-year-old defendant replied firmly.

Asked if he also shot and wounded Paul Schrade, a United Auto Workers official and Kennedy supporter, Sirhan answered with a shrug and a grin:

"If that's what the indictment reads, I must have."

Did he know who Schrade was?

"Never heard of him."

Under Cooper's questioning, Sirhan denied any knowledge of, or malice toward, Irwin S. Galt, William Weiss, Elizabeth Evans or Ira Goldstein, who were also wounded.

"I was not aware of anything," Sirhan added.

The pale, slim defendant seemed almost to relish his turn on the witness stand. His answers came clearly and quickly, sometimes even before Cooper's questions were complete. At one point, Sirhan even supplied a word when Cooper groped for another term for bombing noises.

"Cannon sounds — how's that?" Sirhan offered with a smile.

After emotional blowups last week when he demanded to fire his three-man defense team, plead guilty and be executed, Sirhan's demeanor Monday was almost sunny—particularly in early testimony on his controversial notebooks.

Sirhan's first temper tantrums last

week came when the prosecution began introducing into evidence the notebooks on which Sirhan had written "Robert F. Kennedy must be assassinated."

The defendant told Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker that if the notebooks were admitted, he wouldn't be getting a fair trial.

But Monday, Cooper read that very page, with Sirhan following eagerly line-by-line, as Cooper intoned: "May 18, 9:43 a.m. '68. My determination to eliminate RFK is becoming more the more (sic) of an unshakeable obsession."

The handwriting was all his, Sirhan confirmed; the repeated phrase "Port Wine" was the name of a race horse; yes, he had written "please pay to the order of..." several times; and the repeated injunction "RFK must be assassinated" was his.

Then Cooper shifted backward in time to the Sirhan family's life in war-torn Jerusalem, where Sirhan was born March 19, 1944.

Recalls Death

Sirhan testified that he recalled "quite vividly" the death of an Arab soldier who was blown up by dynamite one day when Sirhan was 3 or 4. Sirhan said he recalled the soldier's leg blown so high in the air it caught in the belfry of a church and was hanging there the next day, recognizable from the military boot.

The family fled during the 1948 Israeli-Arab hostilities from the new part of Jerusalem to the former Jewish quarter of the old Walled City, and Sirhan said he was told by family and friends of the reason for the flight:

"The Jews kicked us out of our homes. The Zionists kicked us out. We were terrorized out of leaving our homes."

As an example of the terror, Sirhan testified that after the April 9, 1948, massacre at the village of Dair Yasin, Arab girls with mutilated breasts "were paraded in front of us, to terrorize us and get us out of our homes."

Tells of Panic

Sirhan said the reasons he had been told, and subsequently read of in history books, were that "the West wanted to bring the persecuted Jews from Germany in and expel the indigenous Palestinian Arabs from their homes."

Sirhan said he faintly recalled the family's flight to the old Walled City. "I was naked," he said, and the family was "in a state of panic."

After settling there, he

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/4/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24702

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 4 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Coto...
3-4-69

said, he heard bombings on an average of once a week from 1948 until the family left Jerusalem for the United States in 1956. Bombings were "so routine," he said, that when his mother began to make little balls of cotton for the children's ears, they knew another bombing was on the way and took refuge in the basement.

The Sirhans subsisted on United Nations Relief and Works Agency rations, he said—mostly brown sugar, margarine, flour, beans "and a gallon of kerosene, in the winter."

"How cold does it get there?" asked Cooper.

"Pretty damn' cold, sir,"

Sirhan said with a grin.

"Pardon me," said Cooper. "You watch your language, Sirhan."

The defendant looked abashed for a moment.

Sirhan said he didn't recall "any starvation pangs . . . We always had enough, but we always cleaned up what we had before us. We could have eaten more, had we had it. We were actually among the luckier people, because we had ration cards."

That's why we shared in Sirhan after the latter what we had to spare with him from a horse in September, 1966, while working as an exercise boy on a race horse ranch near Corona.

Sirhan also told of seeing Adel described his younger brother before the fall as friendly, ambitious and "doing well in school except when our sister (Ayda, who died in 1965 of leukemia) was sick."

Earlier testimony by his mother and a childhood friend described Sirhan as going into a shaking fit after the experience at the well and being sick for days.

Sirhan also told of one time when he was 11, playing with some friends near Zion's Gate in the south wall of the old Walled City.

Sirhan said the Arab wall guard let the boys up onto the wall with him to look down at the No Man's Land separating the Old Walled City from the Zionist sector.

"I could see the feelings and emotions of this man," said Sirhan. "He said 'That's our land out there, that's our property.' I couldn't understand what he meant then, but now I understand the import of what he said."

An older brother, Adel Sirhan, 30, testified earlier to many of the same incidents related by Sirhan and his mother. But Adel also told of a change

After the fall, Adel testified, Sirhan became irritable, nervous, stayed home more and read a great deal. He once had a fight with his younger brother, Munir, 21, and sometimes argued with his family when they watched television newscasts of Middle East conflicts, demanding:

"How can you sit there and watch these things being done to people?"

Adel also told of hearing Sirhan talking to himself in his bedroom. Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts asked if Sirhan couldn't have been reading aloud or studying his German or Russian courses. Adel said he might have.

But Adel also told of finding Sirhan sitting in his room with a lighted candle on the desk before a mirror as he read from literature he got from the Rosicrucians, an order which espouses the development of one's mental powers over matter.

Mystical Tests

Friday, after Sirhan, ex-
"He would be staring at (the candle) and trying some experiment." Adel said. "And he would say executed."

"I'm staring at the light. It's supposed to turn green or yellow, or I'm going to see a cross in it, or whatever my mind decides."

Adel said his brother sometimes told him, "If you think something, it will actually happen." He said he and Sirhan frequently talked in this vein about Sirhan's mystical experiments.

The defense has claimed that Sirhan was in a virtual trance when he killed Sen. Kennedy—a trance similar to those he suffered at traumatic scenes in his childhood. They also claim he later induced such trances through his obsessive personality and his mystical experiments with self-hypnosis.

Monday morning, Mrs. Mary Sirhan, 55, related a series of grisly incidents she said Sirhan witnessed as a child. Each time, she said, he was seized by a fit of shaking, the color would drain from his face, his lips would go dry and he would sometimes "black out" remaining ill for days.

The 4-foot, 11-inch Mrs. Sirhan remained composed throughout her testimony. She burst into tears last

Friday, after Sirhan, ex-
manded to fire his lawyers, plead guilty and be executed.
Mrs. Sirhan spoke with evident pride of the family's life up until 1948, when they had to flee a comfortable, large apartment and ultimately seek refuge in one room of a crowded building in the Walled City of Jerusalem.

Expresses Regrets

Describing the dirt and poverty of that life, she was obviously embarrassed. In admitting the building had only one toilet for 11 families, she turned to the jury and said, "I'm sorry to speak this way."

She said the water supply was so filthy they would go without drinking for days at a time, and that when the family moved to the United States in 1957, Ayda "went into the toilet and flushed and flushed and flushed and then sprinkled water all around and said 'God bless America.'"

"We are lucky in this country," Mrs. Sirhan continued emotionally. "I want you to know this. Everybody is blessed in the United States."

The defendant sat with his head bowed in his

hands during this outburst, which Judge Walker ended by asking Mrs. Sirhan to restrict her testimony to answering questions directly.

She described one incident at the Damascus Gate in 1947 when several people were killed by a bomb. Sirhan, on a postoffice errand with his father, came home shaking and crying, she said, and wouldn't leave the house for two weeks.

A few months later, she said, Sirhan's elder brother, Munir, then about 8, was run over by a car. A shout from Adel brought her and Sirhan running, she said, and when he saw the bloody body of his brother, she said, "It was hard for him. He was shaking and said 'Is it the same bomb, manua?'"

"He never forgot the Damascus Gate. He never forgot his brother. He used to cry and ask me, 'Why does he stay away so long? When can he come and play with me?' When I got another boy, I had to call him Munir."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Mary Sirhan Takes Stand in Son's Trial

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

A diminutive anguished Arab emigrant woman today took the stand in the trial of her son—the admitted slayer of Robert Francis Kennedy.

Mrs. Mary Sirhan was the first witness as the murder trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan moved into its 32nd day.

This is Mrs. Sirhan's third time in the witness box in her son's trial. Early in the trial she testified as to her impoverished economic state when defense lawyers sought quashing of the indictment charging Sirhan with first-degree murder in the Kennedy slaying.

Friday, Mrs. Sirhan was sworn as a witness at the end of an emotion-packed day in which her son sought unsuccessfully to fire his lawyers, plead guilty to first-degree murder, and be sentenced to death.

Mrs. Sirhan, buffeted by the emotional outburst of her son which literally ground his trial to a halt, could not testify. She tried, but the words she had for the jury of eight men and four women could not get by the sobs that welled in her throat.

She was excused for the weekend by the trial's presiding judge, Herbert V. Walker, who said she acted with "great courage."

Mrs. Sirhan will be a witness

in a trial which conceivably may not progress beyond her testimony.

Sirhan, programmed to follow his mother on the stand, remains in what his lawyers call a "highly mercurial state."

He has made it clear he violently resents the defense of diminished mental capacity they have prepared for him.

This defense states in effect that while Sirhan is not insane, his mental balance is precarious—so precarious that he gunned down Sen. Kennedy while incapable of calculating the nature and consequences of his act.

Sirhan, according to his chief defense lawyer, Grant B. Cooper, believes such a defense "de-means" him. He objects to what he believes was the heroic act of Kennedy's killing being described in terms of mental illness.

Because of this, he has twice sought to interrupt his trial. He may—indeed some observers expect that he will—interrupt it again.

If he does, Judge Walker has warned him, he will be strapped and gagged in his seat in the armor-plated eighth-floor Hall of Justice courtroom where the trial is taking place.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-2 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/3/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-71-701

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 4 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-4-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Probers Claim Plots in Kennedy, King Deaths

Exclusive to The Times from a Staff Writer

WASHINGTON—A new group investigating American political assassinations suggested Monday that conspirators — some of them possibly the same persons — were behind the murders of President John F. Kennedy and Dr. Martin Luther King.

The conspiracy allegations — some new and some old — were made at a press conference by the Committee to Investigate Assassinations.

The committee, declining to reveal the source of its finances, charged that the government was deliberately withholding facts about the assassinations for fear the American public was not prepared to accept them.

Bernard Fensterwald Jr., executive director of the committee, whose directors include New Orleans Dist. Atty. Jim Garrison, said one purpose in holding the press conference was "to get our names before the public" to help raise funds.

Fensterwald, former counsel to the Senate judiciary subcommittee on administrative practices and

procedures, said the new committee has raised "a relatively small sum" — enough to run a two-man office here.

He said the committee "ultimately hopes to force the federal government into the thorough and honest inquiry which it has avoided" since the death of President Kennedy.

Fensterwald stepped down as the senate subcommittee's counsel last

Jan. 1 after the chairman, Sen. Edward V. Long (D-Mo.), lost his bid for reelection.

Other directors are:

Fred Cook, Englewood, N.J., freelance writer and critic of the FBI; John Henry Faulk, Austin, Tex., humorist and writer; Paris Hammond, New York author of "The Kennedy Conspiracy"; Richard Poplin, a philosophy professor at UC-San Diego; Lloyd Tupling, Washington representative for the Sierra Club; Richard Sprague, a self-employed Hartsdale, N.Y., management consultant; and William Turner, former FBI agent and a writer for Ramparts magazine.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-7 Los Angeles Time
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/18/69
Edition: Home
Author:
Editor: Wick B. Williams
Title:

Character:
or
Classification:
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 18 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

C. C. Bureau
3-18-69

cc in
62-6614

56-156-2-7

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Psychologist's Credibility Probed

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan was almost a forgotten man at his own murder trial as a subsidiary trial shaped up over the credibility of clinical psychologist Martin M. Schorr. After learning last Friday that many of Dr. Schorr's statements about the slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy were almost verbatim quotes from another man's book, the prosecution began introducing relevant portions of the book—"Casebook of a Crime Psychiatrist" by Dr. James A. Brussel—into evidence. Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard indicated that portions of the book not admitted into evidence will then be brought out in continued cross-examination of Dr. Schorr. The latter testified that Sirhan shot Kennedy last June as a "symbolic replica" of his own father. Schorr's analysis of Sirhan was found to be an almost identical match to Brussel's hypothetical analysis of a New York killer more than a decade ago.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-2 LA Times
Los Angeles, Calif

Date: 3-18-69
Edition: Home
Author:
Editor:
Title:

Character:
or
Classification:
Submitting Office: LA
☐ Being Investigated

26-156

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 18 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

56-156-24-724

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Prosecutor Questions Sirhan Tests

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Verbal dueling between a defense psychologist and the prosecutor quarterbacking the state's case continued today at the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial.

Dr. Martin M. Schorr, University-San Diego County Hospital clinical psychologist, took the witness box for the fifth day. Dr. Schorr believes the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy is a psychotic, who was in a dissociative state characterized by "spotty" amnesia when he fatally shot Kennedy at the Ambassador Hotel last June 5.

Dep. Dist. Atty. John Howard not only disputes Dr. Schorr's conclusions, he has made it clear in his cross examination that he suspects the psychologist may have perverted the any responsibility for Dr. Richardson's conclusions. De-

used on Sirhan in reaching his diagnosis. Citing a letter Schorr wrote to defense lawyer Russell E. Parsons months before he was retained on Sirhan's behalf, Howard, last week, sought an admission from the San Diego clinician that he had made up his mind that the young Arab was a paranoid before he examined him. Schorr denied this.

Central to Dr. Schorr's findings is his reading of Rorschach (ink-blot) tests given Sirhan in his isolation cell on the eighth floor of the Hall of Justice Nov. 25 and 26, 1968. In the Rorschach test the subject is shown a series of free-form drawings resembling ink blots and is asked what he sees in each.

Howard has made a study of Rorschach testing and for sev-

eral days has pressed Schorr on why he scored certain responses the way he did. Burden of the prosecutor's cross-examination is that an incorrect scoring of even one or two responses could throw the whole test off. Dr. Schorr takes the position that Howard is overly simplistic in his approach to the test, and lacks the technical knowledge to criticize the findings.

Dr. Schorr will be followed on the stand by another defense psychologist, Dr. O. Roderick Richardson. He also administered the Rorschach test to Sirhan, and Howard has hinted strongly that Dr. Richardson's findings and those of Schorr do not jibe.

In an acrimonious exchange between the two, which drew the rebuke of Judge Herbert V.

Walker, presiding over the trial, Dr. Schorr bluntly disavowed any responsibility for Dr. Richardson's conclusions. De-

used on Sirhan in reaching his diagnosis. Citing a letter Schorr wrote to defense lawyer Russell E. Parsons months before he was retained on Sirhan's behalf, Howard, last week, sought an admission from the San Diego clinician that he had made up his mind that the young Arab was a paranoid before he examined him. Schorr denied this.

Central to Dr. Schorr's findings is his reading of Rorschach (ink-blot) tests given Sirhan in his isolation cell on the eighth floor of the Hall of Justice Nov. 25 and 26, 1968. In the Rorschach test the subject is shown a series of free-form drawings resembling ink blots and is asked what he sees in each.

Howard has made a study of Rorschach testing and for sev-

and psychiatrists on the defense witness list include Dr. George Abbe, Metropolitan State Hospital; Dr. Eric Marcus, court-appointed psychiatrist for Sirhan, and Dr. Bernard Diamond, famed forensic alienist from Berkeley.

Dr. Sheldon Pollack, prosecution psychiatrist, and Dr. Marcus Crahan, USC County Medical Center alienist, have also examined Sirhan. Defense sources insist their findings agree with the defense team's. Cooper will call the two if the prosecution does not.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/17/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodeno
Title: Kenseit

Character:
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-725

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 18 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cl to Bureau
3-18-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Tapes Reveal Sirhan as Animated After Arrest

Prosecution Claims Recordings Prove That Accused Slayer Was Fully Self-Possessed

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Early in the morning last June 5, Robert F. Kennedy lay dying with a bullet in the brain. Half a mile away, his assailant chattered animatedly—at times almost gaily—about a wide range of topics, but not about the shooting, tape recordings disclose.

The prosecution in the murder case against Sirhan Bishara Sirhan continued Thursday to play recordings of the first encounters between Sirhan and police, in an effort to prove the Palestinian Arab was fully self-possessed as he skillfully avoided self-incrimination.

The defense has contended that Sirhan, several hours before and after the assassination of the senator, was in a "dissociative state" induced by drunkenness, rage and self-hypnosis, and that he remembers nothing of those hours.

First Impressions

Playing of the tapes revealed Sirhan at first as uncommunicative, subdued and nearly inaudible as police and district attorney's investigators sought to learn his name.

But by 3:15 a.m., three hours after the shooting, Sirhan was engaging in earnest discussions and humorous banter with officers—still without revealing anything about the shooting or even his name.

Every time questions began to bear on the events of the preceding few hours, Sirhan cited his constitutional right to remain silent.

He waxed chatty, however, about other matters and discussed with Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard, now one of his prosecutors, the Jack Kirschke murder case, in which Kirschke, formerly a deputy district attorney, was convicted of murdering his wife and her lover.

Turns Questions

At the Ramparts Division of the Los Angeles Police Department and later at downtown headquarters, Sirhan persistently turned questions back on his questioners as he asked their views on the nature of justice, truth and falsehood.

Sirhan also revealed a quick and apparently deep

affection for Sgt. William C. Jordan, now a lieutenant, who questioned him gently on subjects not related to the Kennedy assassination. Repeatedly Sirhan told Jordan he was "a good man" and that he trusted the policeman's sincerity.

Sirhan debated with Howard, Jordan and district attorney's investigator George W. Murphy on the high cost of prenatal care, the stock market, the "Boston Strangler" case, local politics and world travel—all in a blithe but intense manner.

'Putting Us On'

At one point Jordan told Sirhan: "I think you've been putting us on a bit here . . . You're very sharp."

Sirhan said, "Well, if you mean that as a compliment . . ."

Jordan answered, "I mean that as a com-

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-22 Los Angeles Ti
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/14/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: AENSALT

Character:
or
Classification: LA 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-31-721

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 14 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

e CB 3/14

pliment. I've got no reason to say otherwise."

"Well, I should thank you, sir," said Sirhan.

Sirhan was known only as John Doe until mid-morning of June 5, and in the hours before he was identified, much banter was exchanged over his choice of a pseudonym.

Worries About Garb

Howard suggested at one point that Rudolph Valentino was a more exotic name than John Doe, to which Sirhan answered, "I think Humphrey is very exotic, myself."

About 4 a.m., Sirhan began to fret about the baggy jail garb he was wearing, and Jordan told

him not to worry. "Actually, you look very presentable compared to when I first saw you. You're clean, you're neat, your eyes are clear..."

Defense attorneys later told reporters that the tapes could support their case as well as the prosecution's, contending that Sirhan's increasing clarity through the interviews showed only that he was sobering up and coming out of his alleged dissociative state.

Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker recessed the trial until Monday morning, to allow defense attorneys Grant B. Cooper and Emile Zola Berman to attend a bar association meeting in Houston.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan's Words Return to Haunt

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Words spoken by Sirhan Bishara Sirhan minutes after he admitted the fatal shooting of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy at the Ambassador Hotel have come back to haunt him at his murder trial in Superior Court here.

Prosecutors in the case continued today to play tape recordings of police interrogation of the young Arab to his jury of eight men and four women. They sought to impeach the testimony of a defense psychiatric witness who claims Sirhan is a paranoid psychotic who was in a state of amnesia when he shot Kennedy — and for hours after the shooting.

Testimony of Dr. Martin M. Schorr, clinical psychologist from University of San Diego County Hospital, was interrupted late yesterday at the request of Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Pitts to permit the jury to hear the tapes.

The tape was made at Ram-

part Police Station beginning only 25 minutes after Sirhan was taken into custody in a pantry of the Ambassador's Embassy Ballroom June 5.

At that time, Dr. Schorr swore earlier, Sirhan was in a "dissociative state characterized by amnesia."

That state began, according to Schorr, when the 24-year-old Jordanian immigrant plucked a gun from the back seat of his car and made his way down New Hampshire Street to the Ambassador where he shot the New York Senator.

Schorr testified, "By killing Kennedy," an episode that Sirhan says now he cannot remember, "Sirhan kills his father... He hated his father and feared him... his mother fails him... There is pain... The pain has to be death. This becomes a wish to kill his father...."

"He looks for a substitute and finds a symbol... for his

father in Kennedy and kills him

But the tape recording of interrogation of Sirhan by police told that when he was taken to Rampart station he was alert and aware of his legal rights to have counsel and remain silent.

He recalled the badge number of a police officer to whom he complained of injuries incurred during his capture at the Ambassador. He used polysyllabic phrases in verbally jousting with Lieut. (then Sgt.) W. C. Jordan, Rampart detective commander, about his rights.

He kicked a cup containing hot chocolate from Police Officer Fred Willoughby's hand when the officer refused to share it with him.

Besides Willoughby and Jordan, Sgts. E. H. Austin and J. S. Locker participated in the questioning of Sirhan at Rampart.

Following this session, which lasted 35 minutes, the young Arab was taken to police headquarters.

A partial text of the tape recording:

JORDAN—What is your name, Sir? No comment? All right. I have to advise you that you have a right to remain silent; that if you give up the right to remain silent, anything you say can be used against you in a court of law; you have a right to an attorney and have an attorney present during any questioning; and if you desire this and cannot afford one, one will be appointed for you without charge before any questioning. Do you understand your rights?

SIRHAN—Is this of the what the officers told me in the car?

JORDAN—I have no idea, sir, at this point what you were told.

SIRHAN—Would you please repeat it?

JORDAN—Right. You have a right to remain silent. If you give up this right to remain silent, anything you say—

SIRHAN—Thank you.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/14/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-723

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 14 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

c/c Bu 3/14

JORDAN—... can and will be used against you in a court of law. You have a right to speak to an attorney and to have one present during any questioning; and if you desire—

JORDAN—OK, I'm sorry. I think we finished up that—

SIRHAN — Start again.

JORDAN — OK, you have a right to remain silent. If you give up this right, anything you say can and will be used against you in a court of law. You have a right to speak with an attorney, and to have one present during any questioning. And if you desire this and cannot afford one, one will be appointed at no cost to you before questioning. Now do you understand what your rights are? You have a right to say nothing. You have a right to see an attorney. You

have a right to have an attorney present if you wish during this interrogation.

"If you can't afford one, one would be provided for you at no extra cost. Do you understand this? I mean, these are your rights. Do you have any questions regarding these rights? Now you're — you're shaking your head. You do understand me?

SIRHAN — Your name again, Sir?

JORDAN — Pardon?

SIRHAN — Your name.

JORDAN — My name is Sgt. Jordan, J-O-R-D-A-N. I'm night watch commander at Rampart Detectives which is where you are at the present time. Now, is this all your property here? I mean, is there any outside? I don't want it to get lost. You don't know? All right, now, would you tell me what your name is?

SIRHAN — I want to abide by the first admonishment, sir, to the right of keeping silence.

JORDAN — Do you wish to remain silent? In other words, now, I'm not violating your right. In other words, you can remain silent, period. By this you not only wish to remain silent as to any part of this case, but you do not wish to identify yourself? Is that correct?

SIRHAN — (Unintelligible answer.)

JORDAN — All right, Sir, that is your privilege. This has nothing to do with the case. I want to see that — I want to count this in front of you so that you're satisfied that this is the right amount; is that all right with you?

SIRHAN — Are you saying this, sir, under the authority of the first admonishment that you gave of keeping silence, does keeping silence involved in—
JORDAN — Well...

SIRHAN — ... in this processing?

JORDAN — ... Sorry, what happened?

SIRHAN — I had — I had mentioned it to Officer 3909.

JORDAN — Sorry, what was that?

SIRHAN — I don't know his name, sir.

JORDAN — Well, no — I mean you mentioned — you mentioned what?

SIRHAN — Mentioned to him my ankle and my knee ... my knee.

JORDAN — OK, I'm very sorry. You understand I was checking you. I know you have been checked, but I'm checking you for weapons only. I'll be as gentle as possible, OK? You're clean. O.K. Sorry, I know you're clean, but I'll be as gentle as possible.

"If I get in an area that's uncomfortable, you tell me. OK, you can be seated. What happened to your leg? Where's — is there a uniformed officer here? Would you guys stay with him?

WILLOUGHBY — Yes, sir.

AUSTIN — You bet.

JORDAN — Keep close watch on him, please?

AUSTIN — Uh huh.

WILLOUGHBY — Sure, one inside and one out the door?

JORDAN — No, I would just as soon both of them ...

WILLOUGHBY — OK.

JORDAN — ... inside there.

WILLOUGHBY — Do you want to smoke?

AUSTIN — I got lots of smokes.

WILLOUGHBY — All rightee.

AUSTIN — How long have you been in here? You don't want to say?

WILLOUGHBY — Do you speak English?

JORDAN — No, go head. Can you hold there?

WILLOUGHBY — Do you want a drink?

AUSTIN — No, thanks.

JORDAN — OK, now, I won't — I won't move it.

SIRHAN — Don't move it now.

JORDAN — I won't. OK, that's fine. Watch your foot. We'll just leave that off for awhile, huh? I think it would be better than trying to slip it back on. OK,

watch him real close.

WILLOUGHBY — We'll keep an eye on him.

JORDAN — I know you will. I kind a ...

SIRHAN — These are tight.

WILLOUGHBY — What happened to your leg?

SIRHAN — I'm thirsty.

WILLOUGHBY — Well, we're not going to give you any of this.

SIRHAN — It's hot that way.

WILLOUGHBY — Yeah, it's hot. I guess they'll give you some in a minute.

(At this point, Sirhan, the officers have testified, kicked the cup of hot chocolate out of the officer's hand spilling it on Willoughby and himself.)

AUSTIN — That's enough, pal.

WILLOUGHBY — Yeah.

AUSTIN — Yeah.

WILLOUGHBY — I guess we need a rag, don't we?

AUSTIN — Uh huh. Kind of

made a mess. Keep it cool. Do you want to get a rag then? Go ahead and I'll — just go to the head right outside there.

WILLOUGHBY — Right.

AUSTIN — You're not going to prove nothing that way.

SIRHAN — Later please apologize for me to him, and I trust you.

AUSTIN — I will.

WILLOUGHBY — Yeah, that chocolate's sticky. They're out of towels.

AUSTIN — Are they?

WILLOUGHBY — In that one head there they are.

AUSTIN — Here, let me stick it on the floor.

WILLOUGHBY — Oh, I'll go see if I can get another one.

AUSTIN — That's all right. There's a big spot right here.

WILLOUGHBY — It will dry.

AUSTIN — Did you get the worst?

AUSTIN — It's going to be a long night.

WILLOUGHBY — Yeah, you said it.

AUSTIN — I've got some here.

WILLOUGHBY — Thanks.

SIRHAN — May I smoke?

AUSTIN — Fire in the wall sure sounds hot, doesn't it?

VOICE — What color are his eyes?

WILLOUGHBY — Brown.

VOICE — How much do you think he weighs?

WILLOUGHBY — Oh, 140.

How much do you weigh, 140?

VOICE — Five-six.

WILLOUGHBY — Yeah about 5-6, 140.

AUSTIN — How much do you weigh? Huh? How much do you weigh? 140? 150? 130? 120? 110?

How tall are you? Makes no difference to me. I'm only a peon here.

SIRHAN — I like your humor, Sir.

AUSTIN — I hate to sit here and say nothing. Are you married? You start a conversation.

You married? Do you have a family? You say something.

then, anything. I'm sure you've already been told about your rights; is that right? Have you?

Well, you can say yes or no.

Then say something that doesn't pertain to them. We're all people, you know. You got a girl friend? Boyfriend? Friends? Did the detective tell you that you have the right to remain silent? Did he? . . . Do you speak English?

WILLOUGHBY — Silent Sam.

AUSTIN — What do you speak? What happened to your leg? What happened to your leg? You won't even tell me that. Why? What happened to your leg?

WILLOUGHBY — Yeah, he's just trying to be sociable with you. Can't you talk? Huh? We're going to be in here for a long time. You just as well be sociable. Hell, we're just trying to get along.

AUSTIN — Say yes or no if you understand.

WILLOUGHBY — Sure.

AUSTIN — We're not participants of voodoo, because we can't outstare each other.

JORDAN — OK, fellows. Thank you very much.

WILLOUGHBY — OK.

JORDAN — OK, did you get your shoe on? . . .

SIRHAN — Will you please get my pants fastened for me?

JORDAN — Take a breath.

SIRHAN — Jack 'em up. Jack 'em up.

Sirhan evidenced almost complete disinterest during the playing of the tape. He listened briefly and then reached for a psychology book lying on the table before him.

Losing interest in the book, he conferred for several minutes with Grant B. Cooper, his chief defense counsel, over a legal paper, the nature of which Cooper declined to disclose.

This conference finished, the young Arab returned to desultory study of the book alternated with perusal of legal papers on the defense table.

The scene and drama in the Sirhan tapes will shift later today. On tap are a long series of interviews of the defendant made at police headquarters. Reportedly the young Arab talked much more freely there, although he never discussed his case.

Jordan testified earlier that at headquarters he found Sirhan one of the most highly intelligent men he had ever interviewed.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Saw Kennedy as 'Replica' of His Hated Father, Expert Says

Psychologist Believes Defendant's Action Was Rooted in Desire to Take Parent's Place "as Heir to the Mother"

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan substituted Sen. Robert F. Kennedy for the father he would have preferred to kill, a clinical psychologist said Wednesday.

Martin M. Schorr, in his third day on the witness stand, testified that Sirhan, "by killing Kennedy, kills his father and takes his father's place as heir to the mother" — suggesting that Sirhan's assassination of Kennedy was rooted in oedipal conflict.

(According to Greek mythology, Oedipus killed his father and then married his own mother.)

Witnesses have testified that Sirhan's father, Bishara Sirhan, used to beat Sirhan. The father abandoned the family in 1957, soon after they immigrated to the United States, and now lives near Jerusalem. Sirhan hasn't seen his father since he was 12.

"He hated his father and feared him," Schorr said of the 24-year-old Palestinian Arab.

This hatred caused Sirhan so much pain, Schorr said, that subconsciously he felt he must repay it.

"The unconscious always demands the ultimate penalty," the psychologist said, and Sirhan chose death.

But feeling it would not be proper to kill his own father, Sirhan instead compromised and chose a "symbolic replica of his father"—Kennedy. And by killing Kennedy, Schorr said, Sirhan "also removes the relationship that stands between him and his most precious possession—his mother's love."

Mrs. Mary Sirhan, 55, objected strenuously when this statement was read for reporters during a recess of the murder trial in the court of Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker.

"I don't like this," she said.

Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard sought in his cross examination of Schorr to cast doubt on the validity of psychological tests administered to Sirhan last November. Howard contended the scoring and interpretation of test results are arbitrary.

Schorr, however, defended his scoring of Sirhan's tests and would not concede that interpretations would vary widely from one psychologist to another.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 Los Angeles "im
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/13/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kenseit

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-72-72
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
MAR 13 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

Claims Two Worlds

Schorr repeated his belief that for several hours before and many hours after killing the New York senator, Sirhan shifted back and forth between the real world and a fantasy world.

The psychologist said Sirhan was unaware he was drifting from one state of consciousness to another, and while he may have wanted to kill Kennedy, he was and still is genuinely unaware that he did.

Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts began to play tapes of the first interviews between Sirhan and police after his arrest in the early morning of June 5.

In the first tape, made at 12:45 a.m., less than half an hour after Kennedy was shot, Sirhan was advised of his constitutional rights, including the right to remain silent, and did so. He wouldn't give his name, height or weight, and his few responses did not bear on the shooting at all.

Kick and Apology

At one point, Sirhan was heard as he kicked a cup of hot chocolate out of officer F. R. Willoughby's hand. As Willoughby went out to clean the chocolate off his uniform, Sirhan told another officer, E. H. Austin, "Later please apologize for me to him, and I trust you."

Later, as Sirhan refused to engage in conversation, Austin said, "Makes no difference to me. I'm only a peon here."

Sirhan answered, "I like your humor, sir."

"I hate to sit here and say nothing," Austin said, trying to strike up a chat. "We're all people, you know. You got a girlfriend? Boyfriend? Friends?"

The prosecution was expected to cite the tapes today as evidence that Sirhan was not in a dissociative trance at the time he was being questioned.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Incapable of Premeditation, Psychologist Says

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

A clinical psychologist testified Tuesday that he does not believe Sirhan Bishara Sirhan was capable of mature and meaningful premeditation in the killing of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy last June.

Dr. Martin N. Schorr of San Diego, in his second day on the stand, described the Palestinian Arab as a paranoid psychotic, incapable of controlling his emotions, ruled by obsessions of his own grandiosity and delusions of persecution.

Dr. Schorr, who administered five psychological tests to Sirhan last November, said he felt the defendant's mental condition was essentially the same last June as it was in November and as it is today.

If the jury agrees, Sirhan could be found guilty of a lesser degree of murder than first-degree, and sentenced to imprisonment rather than death.

The defense will call four more psychiatric experts to testify that Sirhan suffered from diminished mental capacity and could not premeditate murder — which must be proven for a first-degree conviction.

Characterized by Fantasies

Schorr, describing Sirhan's reactions to the Thematic Apperception Test commonly administered to psychiatric patients, said Sirhan's responses were characterized by homicidal and suicidal fantasies, expressions of loneliness and alienation and dependency on and domination by his mother.

The test consists of pictures in which the patient is asked to see and then describe a story or set of circumstances. What the patient sees depends upon his subconscious reactions, Schorr said.

By far the most dramatic, however, was Sirhan's reaction on one entirely blank card. Sirhan told Schorr:

"This is the figure of that arrogant, self-assured bastard with the victorious smirk on his face. This is the true picture of the conqueror. It's the minister in Israel, Moshe Dayan, and he's looking down at people, but there's a bullet that's crashing through his brain at the height of his glory."

Schorr interrupted: "Where in relation to this picture would you be standing if you were part of the scene?"

"Part of the scene?" Sirhan

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1

Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/12/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-721

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 12 1969	
FBI — LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-12-69

reverted. "I am the scene. I'm the one killing him."

Schorr said Sirhan described other pictures in terms of loneliness, seeing people as assaulted, depressed, hopeless and suicidal.

In one, Sirhan saw a man who had been slipped a Mickey Finn and "he looks drunk but doesn't drink. I don't like this card," Schorr quoted him as saying.

In another, Sirhan saw "someone standing under a street light . . . he's lonely . . . no hope, no family, no country . . . He thinks of killing himself . . . He reminds me of me

In still another, Sirhan saw the picture as representing a man who had just concluded a sexual encounter with a woman and was going home to tell his mother.

Schorr said the frequent outcropping of alienation and loneliness in Sirhan's interpretations reflected the defendant's own lack of identity. Schorr described Sirhan as "a Semite, but not a Jew, an Arab, but not a Moslem, a man who has a family, but not a father, a man who immigrated to this country but is not a citizen, a man without identity. There's a quiet desperation about a lot of immigrants," Schorr said.

Characteristic Tantrum

Schorr also characterized a temper tantrum of Sirhan's two weeks ago as consistent with his diagnosis of paranoid psychosis.

That was when Sirhan, on Feb. 28, rose in court to fire his attorneys, change his plea to guilty and demand execution. Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker, after a heated exchange with the defendant, denied Sirhan's effort to change his plea and finally told him to sit down and be quiet.

Schorr said the outburst was "highly consistent with the paranoid state." The paranoid, he said, "thinks he knows better than anyone else," and that Sirhan wanted "not only to dismiss his attorneys but also was telling the judge, in effect, that he (Sirhan) is a higher authority. This is part of his grandiosity," which he said is a common symptom in paranoia.

To Sirhan's objection to "having this trial shoved down my throat," Schorr said this was also a typically paranoid view of himself.

Schorr said Sirhan's paranoid psychosis interacts with a schizophrenic tendency which gives rise to

two personalities, each quite different from the other, and which tend to dissociate under stress.

One, he said, is an unassuming, law-abiding person who keeps his hostilities in check and is quite unaware of the existence of the other personality. That personality Schorr likened to Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde.

Schorr said Sirhan's personality resembled "Silly Putty" because it "constantly changed shape" and that Sirhan used his notebooks as a "sort of escape valve to discharge his hostilities . . . To avoid acting out his hostilities, he has to keep constantly writing, furiously writing . . . He is unaware of the killer in himself . . . but is aware of his own ambivalence."

Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard asked Schorr if Sirhan's behavior around the time of the assassination of Kennedy indicated he was thinking rationally and thus was not in a dissociative personality state.

Schorr would not agree that Sirhan's thinking was rational, but only that it was thinking within the context of a paranoid psychosis. Asked if Sirhan might have lied about drinking the night of June

4, Schorr said that lying under oath would be indicative of sociopathic tendencies, and that exhaustive testing showed that Sirhan was not sociopathic.

"Mickey Mouse Test"

Howard asked then, "If you had seen (Sirhan) on June 3, could you have predicted the murder of Robert F. Kennedy?"

Schorr said he could not have predicted that specific murder, but said that if similar tests were administered at random to 100 people, three or four of them, including Sirhan, would have been pinpointed as "odds-on favorites to commit murder."

Howard drew from Schorr the admission that one of the tests, the Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory, was known in psychology by the nickname "Mickey Mouse," and that it was considered to yield 60 to 70% accuracy on sick populations.

But Schorr added that the test was nonetheless considered fairly reliable and was used only in conjunction with other tests. His own diagnosis of Sirhan, he said, was not based on the MMPI alone, but in the context of the other tests.

Howard also asked Schorr "What would be

the behavior of a man who had just committed a political assassination and was glad he had done it?"

Schorr said such a person would not have written down his intention to do so, as Sirhan did in his notebooks, and would not have committed the act in such a circumstance as to show his "hope of being caught."

"Hope of being caught?" Howard asked skeptically.

"He wouldn't go into a crowded pantry," said Schorr. "He'd go into an armory with a rifle and he'd try to get away."

Sirhan was seized by more than half a dozen people before he'd even finished firing the eight shots from his revolver in the crowded pantry of the Ambassador. Kennedy was surrounded by aides

at the time he was shot at near point-blank range?

Howard also asked Schorr what stress might have developed the night of June 4 to push Sirhan into a dissociative state so that he could kill Kennedy and have no recollection of it.

Schorr said it might have been the sight of the revolver in Sirhan's car, adding that "the gun is a symbol that relates to stress dating from his formative years."

Said Schorr, "The gun symbolized the giving to himself of an aggressive personality he doesn't possess; also the need to be treated like a man and act like a man; also the need not to be castrated, as he allegedly was by his father, through alleged cruelty and beatings."



WITNESS—Dr. Martin N. Schorr,
a clinical psychologist, after testi-
fying in the Sirhan Sirhan trial.

Times photo

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

'Sirhan Wanted To Be Caught'

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

In the dark recesses of his mind, Sirhan Bishara Sirhan harbored hope of being caught when he fatally shot Sen. Robert F. Kennedy in the Ambassador Hotel last June 5.

This was the theory of Dr. Martin M. Schorr yesterday as the clinical psychologist wound up his second day of testimony on the young Arab's behalf. He returned to the stand this morning.

Schorr put forth his idea during rigorous cross-examination by Dep. Dist. Atty. John Howard.

Howard bored in on the University-San Diego County Hospital psychologist after Dr. Schorr had testified that Sirhan lacked the "mental capacity to premeditate (Kennedy's shooting) or to reflect upon the gravity of the contemplated act of murder June 5, 1963."

Q—What would be the act of a normal man who had committed political assassination and was glad of it?

A—The act of a man who would never write it down in a book, never tell anyone about it, never advertise it . . . never kill anybody in the hope of being caught.

Q—Of being caught?

A—He (the normal man) wouldn't go into a crowded room and shoot anybody . . .

Dr. Schorr, to Howard's obvious astonishment, then proceeded to contrast Sirhan's shooting of Sen. Robert Kennedy with Lee Harvey Oswald's assassination of President John Kennedy.

Implying that Oswald was

normal, Dr. Schorr contrasted Sirhan's shooting of the New York senator in a crowded room from which there was little or no hope of escape with a killer who "would stand with a high-powered rifle and shoot . . . from an armory far above the street . . . then try to disappear into a theatre or a drug store . . ."

Dr. Schorr's claim that Sirhan lacked the mental capacity to premeditate Kennedy's murder was followed by a second claim that the young Arab also lacked the mental capacity "to comprehend his duty to govern" his impulses to kill.

Emile Zola Berman, one of the defense counsel, then asked the psychologist if Sirhan had "the mental capacity to act with malice aforethought?"

Dr. Schorr replied with an emphatic, "No."

Sirhan, Dr. Schorr insisted, is now—and was the day he admittedly shot Kennedy—in a "paranoid state."

He hears inner voices and acts in accordance with them instead of social reality. He has his own concept of right and wrong. He believes he is above the law, above the judge who is trying his case, above the lawyers who represent him.

Sirhan is in a dissociative state, Dr. Schorr said. He added:

"The dissociative state individual normally will remember the chain of events, leading up to an event, but not the event itself. He will show memory gaps in his telling of the story . . . This is the case with Sirhan . . ."

"His alleged blackout dates back to getting in his car to leave . . . adding to the building blocks of this concept of diminished capacity is this man's complete lack of awareness of what has been happening . . . even after he was picked up (by the police)."

Q—(By Howard) You said this dissociative state happens under stress. Mr. Sirhan has now left the car . . . too drunk to drive . . . Where is the stress there?

A—I don't know. But I can hypothesize . . . There was a gun in the back seat . . .

Q—When he finishes the thought that he will go back to the hotel—are there any signs of stress?

A—In my opinion the triggering of stress may have begun when he saw the gun in the car. The stress came not from one thing, but from many things.

Q—But there was some stress?

A—Yes. The stress elements are very subtle . . . suited to this man's peculiar concepts. They are not the normal kinds of stress . . . He is responding to some minor detail in human experience . . . He dissociates.

Explaining the role of the gun in Sirhan's dissociation, Dr. Schorr continued:

"The gun symbolized the giving to himself of an aggressive personality that he basically does not possess, the need of this individual to be treated like a man, to act like a man . . . (a symbol) of his need to be in charge of his own destiny, not be castrated as he allegedly was by his father with the beatings . . ."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/12/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kinsalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-724
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
MAR 13 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

Sirhan has two personalities, Dr. Schorr believes. He is a "Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde," the psychologist told the jury of eight men and four women, employing a cliché of psychiatric testimony. One of these personalities is that of a "law abiding individual . . . his aggressions in check."

The second is his violent personality.

Sirhan's antipathy for Zionists is part of his violent nature, Schorr told Howard. He equates them with Nazis.

Q — Did you find hate between Sirhan and the Jews?

A — No. May I qualify that. He makes a difference between the Jews who take on the role of persecutors and persecute Arabs. He does not talk about Jews who are friendly . . . But the persecutors — he equates these persons as Nazis. He feels the same as Jewish refugees in Dachau would about Nazis in World War II Germany.

Q — In Sirhan's testimony he

was talking about the (Arab-Israeli) war and seeing soldiers on the Suez Canal. He said, "I got so burned up . . . If I could have done it, I would have blasted them." Did he see the Israeli soldiers as persecutors?

A — Oh, yes.

Q — Where you convinced he hated Jews?

A — I feel that in my opinion he equates persecutors and Jews who are engaged in this persecution. I don't know that he means all Jews. I don't think he does.

Sirhan has testified he was drunk the night he shot Kennedy. Pressed by Howard about the effect of alcohol on Sirhan's mental state that night, Schorr said he made his diagnosis on the basis of test results and independently of the fact of possible drunkenness.

"The issue of intoxication," he said, "made no contribution to my determination that this man was a paranoid-psychotic with tendencies toward paranoid-schizophrenia that may have dissociative reaction under stress."

Additional clinical facts including Sirhan's drinking, he said, "did nothing to shake my original opinion. Alcohol never helps anybody under stress."

Dr. Schorr testified that he made his analysis of Sirhan on the basis of a battery of psychological tests including the Rorschach or inkblot test, which he called the "mental X-ray," and the Thematic Apperception Test. In the latter, the subject is asked to look at a series of pictures and tell a story about each.

One of these pictures is blank. Sirhan's story for this?

"This is the figure of that arrogant, self-assured . . . with a smirk on his face . . . Moshe Dayan . . . There is a bullet crashing through his brain at the height of his glory."

Was Sirhan part of this scene?

"Part of the scene? I am the scene. I am the one killing him!"



Herald-Examiner Photo

DRS. MARTIN SCHORR, LEFT, O. R. RICHARDSON, MRS. SCHORR
Dr. Schorr completed his second day of testimony in Sirhan trial

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Doctor: 'Sirhan Not Out Of Mind'

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Psychiatric testimony in defense of accused murderer Sirhan Bishara Sirhan was on record in court today, conflicting sharply with claims of one of his defense lawyers that he is "mentally ill."

The young Arab, on trial for the slaying of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy has no "psychotic responses" and "is not a raving maniac," according to Dr. Martin M. Schorr, San Diego clinical psychologist who testified for Sirhan yesterday.

Dr. Schorr also said his examination turned up no evidence of brain damage in the Jordanian immigrant.

But despite this, Sirhan is far from normal, according to Dr. Schorr.

"He has paranoid tendencies and is severely and markedly disabled."

"His unchecked emotions are dangerously high. If society pushes him too much, he will explode. He has no awareness of this."

Dr. Schorr said he made his evaluation of Sirhan on the basis of study of the young Arab's responses to the Rorschach or ink blot test. The psychologist described the test as a "mental X-ray."

In his opening remarks to the jury of eight men and four women who will decide Sirhan's fate, Emile Zola Berman, one of the defense lawyers said:

"The evidence in this case will disclose that the defendant Sirhan Sirhan is an immature, emotionally disturbed and mentally ill youth."

Sirhan's admitted killing of Kennedy, according to Berman, was "totally a product of a sick, obsessed mind and personality."

The psychiatric testimony Berman claimed, "conclusively shows that because of mental illness and emotional disorder, Sirhan did not have the mental capacity to have the mental states that are the essential elements of murder..."

Dr. Schorr said he found Sirhan to be "not mentally deficient."

Sirhan, he said, has a bright mind. "He is a rigid, highly perfectionistic guy..."

"This man has lost control. Whatever he feels inside he is going to act out without any concern for the consequences. This does not mean he is out of his mind..."

"He has a keen sense of justice... But it comes from his private world."

Dr. Schorr's testimony continued today. He is one of six psychologists and psychiatrists who will testify on Sirhan's behalf. The next will be psychologist Dr. O. Roderick Richardson, according to Grant B. Cooper, chief defense counsel.

Dr. Schorr said that his evaluation of Sirhan was based on analysis of two days of tests he administered to the young Arab in the isolation cell in the Hall of Justice where he has been held since June.

In addition to the inkblot test, Dr. Schorr gave Sirhan an intelligence test and a personality profile.

The personality profile, least sensitive of all the battery of tests, first disclosed paranoid tendencies in Sirhan, Schorr said. He said that it also disclosed schizophrenic tendencies.

But, he quickly added, "I do not diagnose it as schizophrenia..."

Asked for definitions of paranoia and schizophrenia, Dr. Schorr said most people think of the latter as split personality. Schizophrenia, he said, means "mental illness where the individual no longer responds to the world of reality... when his inner reality becomes more important than social reality."

In the sense he used the term, Dr. Schorr said, paranoia referred to a personality "which protects itself from the demands of society by behaving... behind a facade of sanity." "It (paranoia) says 'There's nothing wrong with me.'"

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/11/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 66-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-719

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 12 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

note below
3-12-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan a Schizophrenic, Paranoiac, Trial Told

Psychologist Says His Erratic Scores on Tests Show High Intellect, Extreme Maladjustment

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

A clinical psychologist described the slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy Monday as a paranoid personality—who felt he was right and everyone else was wrong—and a schizophrenic guided by inner beliefs that didn't match the realities of the outside world.

Dr. Martin M. Schorr testified that Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, after a battery of psychological tests, yielded erratic scores that indicated high intelligence, severe maladjustment and psychosis.

Schorr, affiliated with the hospital of UC San Diego, said Sirhan scored "better than the average American" on the Wechsler Adult Intelligence Scale test of verbal skills. There, said Schorr, Sirhan revealed a verbal intelligence quotient of 109, ranking higher than 75% of the population.

But balancing it off, he said, was a nonverbal intelligence quotient of only 82, better than only 10% of the population, and yielding a "spuriously low" IQ of 98. The average is from 90 to 100.

Explains His Reasoning

Schorr said the unusually wide "scatter" of achievement in the various tests led him to suspect either brain damage or psychosis as the cause of Sirhan's low non-verbal scores, which included such tests as digital ability, picture completion, similarity recognition, relationship identification and mathematical skills.

But because digital ability was among the higher of the low scores, Schorr said, he concluded that Sirhan was not a victim of brain damage.

Under questioning by defense attorney Emile Zola Berman, Schorr said Sirhan's identification of pictures in the Rorschach "in-blot" test included such things as a dove flying, a crushed frog, a human profile exploding, a "male-female" rooster, a human trachea, a monster "charging at me," a ballet dancer, ears, scarred seals or sea lions, the act of sexual intercourse, the Suez Canal, a rotting red apple and spurting blood and a liver.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-3 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/11/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Vick E. Williams
Title: Kenseit

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-718

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 12 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

CP to Bureau
3-12-69

Schorr said this was a "typically paranoid reaction—to convince me how right he is and wrong everyone else is." Such unanswered true-false statements were: "Something is wrong with my mind. Someone is trying to control my mind. People are saying insulting or vulgar things about me," Schorr said.

Likened to 'Roadrunner'

Schorr said this test showed Sirhan as more paranoid than 95 out of any 100 people one might choose at random off the street. It also showed him as highly hypomanic, which Schorr described as "apt to be very aggressive, restless, on the go, in state of flux . . . sort of like a roadrunner, if you want an image. Something was driving this man."

Schorr said the test also showed that Sirhan was making an unusually strong attempt to answer truthfully on the tests, but without realizing that the tests sought not what the person thinks the testers might want him to tell, but what lies behind a person's psychological defenses.

Schorr pointed out that Sirhan, rather than seeing pictures only in the colored ink, sometimes found recognizable shapes in the white spaces.

The general pattern of the Rorschach test, Schorr said, was the strongest evidence of extreme paranoia, a highly aggressive, assertive nature, a rigid, very perfectionistic personality convinced of its own rightness, and a dangerously high tendency to give way under stress to unchecked emotional reactions.

"If society pushes (a person like this)" Schorr said, "he's going to explode . . . He is unaware of this tendency because of his paranoid defenses which tell him he is right and others are wrong," Schorr added.

Schorr said Sirhan failed to answer certain significant questions on still another test—the Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory—which indicated that Sirhan "was anxious to convince me how normal and sane he is."

said the indi-
psychosis on
—particular-
range of highs
were "consis-
schizophrenia,"
described as a
between the
reality."
with two reali-
said, adding
the two reali-
and fairly well,
thy, but that
inner reality
govern more and
his behavior, to
one is behav-
a schizophrenic

said Sirhan's
regularly showed
for him to
"disorganized,
and fragmented"
Some of the
tests, in which
omit was im-
posed unusually
which Schorr
also consistent
and personali-

He said Sirhan "deterio- the immediate vicinity.
rates under stress" and Mrs. Sirhan also has a
shows a "regressive" pat- "hot-line" telephone to the
tern in his non-verbal Pasadena police depart-
abilities, which was "not ment—an arrangement set
the true picture of Sir- up shortly after Sirhan's
han." The non-stress test arrest last June.
scores remained relatively A spokesman close to the
high, he said, which addi- defense team said they
tionally indicated a psy- have received numerous
chotic reaction to stress. threats from the elder

Sirhan, who exploded brother, who has been
two weeks ago when his estranged from the family
junior high school IQ tests for eight months, but that
were revealed at only 89, previous threats had been
was more pleased with the disregarded. The latest al-
results revealed in court leged threat was made to a
Monday. secretary of defense attor-

Additional police ney Grant B. Cooper. She
protection for Mrs. Mary reportedly was frightened
Sirhan and two brothers by the call, and the matter
of the defendant, Adel and was referred to Superior
Munir, was ordered brief- Judge Herbert V. Walker.
ly last week, it was He demanded that the
disclosed Monday, after threats cease for the dura-
reported telephone threats tion of the trial.

by the eldest Sirhan broth- Police emphasized that
er, Sharif, 37. no charges have been filed
Pasadena police estab- nor arrests made.
lished a 24-hour guard on
the Sirhan home for one
day, but then resumed the
normal security arrange-
ment of one patrol car in

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan's Hope: A Trio of Doctors

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's defense turns to a panel of criminal psychiatrists today in hopes of sparing the life of the admitted assassin of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Grant E. Cooper, Emilio Zola Berman and Russell E. Parsons—Sirhan's defense team—say they have no hope of gaining acquittal for the 24-year-old Jordanian emigrant.

But they hope to spare him from death in the gas chamber.

They must accomplish this by convincing Sirhan's jury of eight men and four women that he acted under diminished mental capacity when he shot down the New York senator and presidential aspirant June 5.

The defense of diminished capacity—or diminished responsibility—says in effect that while the defendant in a criminal case is not insane he is also not fully rational. This defense is not recognized in any state other than California.

Under California law there are five possible elements in a defense of diminished capacity. They are rage, fear, obsession, drugs or alcohol.

In the preliminary testimony presented by Sirhan himself as well as friends, former employers and members of his family, including his mother, 56-year-old Mrs. Mary Sirhan, the defense has offered the elements of rage, drunkenness and obsession.

It is now up to the psychiatrists to refine this raw data of basic testimony for the jury.

The battery of defense mentalists is headed by Dr. Bernard Diamond. He is a Berkeley criminologist and one of the nation's foremost criminal psychiatrists.

He has worked with Sirhan for months and with Dr. Seymour Pollack, psychiatrist for the prosecution, has placed Sirhan under hypnosis.

In an hypnotic state Sirhan reportedly can recall his admitted slaying of Kennedy.

Consciously, he swears, he remembers nothing.

Dr. Diamond, Dr. Pollack, and other psychiatrists will reconstruct Sirhan's memory for the jury.

Dr. Martin Shorr of San Diego will aid Pollack and Diamond. Shorr, a psychologist who has testified in more than 100 murder cases, sought to fathom the inner workings of the mind of Jack Ruby—the man who killed Lee Harvey Oswald, slayer of President John F. Kennedy.

Over the weekend, Dr. Shorr indicated that in the days he had observed Sirhan in the witness box he had gained an insight hitherto denied him.

"What I will say may surprise you," he said. "My conclusions have surprised me. Please don't ask me any more questions."

Sirhan, according to his attorneys, has not only been hypnotized but has undergone other tests including the Rorschach, or inkblot test.

The inkblot test is a psychological measuring device in which the subject is shown a series of free-form illustrations which resemble ink blots and is asked to describe his instantaneous response to each of the blots. Both normal and "abnormal" responses to the diagrams are usually highly sexual in content.

The psychiatrist defense is aimed at showing that Sirhan is not mentally balanced.

Basis of the defense plea is that Sirhan cannot be condemned to death for a crime for which he is not fully responsible, and his defenders are convinced this is the only thing that can save his life.

Sirhan, his lawyers admit, despises the defense of diminished capacity. He has indicated on three occasions he would rather die than live as a marked diminished capacitant.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/10/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-717

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 11 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-10-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Mercurial Sirhan

For a time, it seemed that the mercurial defendant was about to crack once again: In one breath, he calmly admitted murdering Sen. Robert F. Kennedy; in the next, he screamed and writhed as he led the jury down the dark emotional path by which he arrived at the act.

Sirhan B. Sirhan, whose passionate outbursts and erratic behavior has made his stop-and-go trial one of the most delayed in recent years, made it plain that he considers it reasonable for him to bitterly resent being a "man without a country." But he could hardly contain himself on the witness stand as he blamed the "God damn Zionists" in America for this.

His voice rose and he hurtled out of the witness chair as he denounced Israeli Jews, and their American supporters for his plight.

Resented Support for Israelis

Sirhan, slight and tousle-haired, clenched and unclenched his hands and sweat beaded his swarthy forehead as he dwelt on his political philosophy, overshadowed on nearly every point by deep resentment toward America's support of the Israeli cause.

"Where is the justice involved?" he demanded. "Where is the love of fighting for the underdog? Israel is not the underdog in the Middle East—the Palestinians are. That burned the hell out of me..."

But strangely, Sirhan became noticeably calmer when he spoke of Kennedy himself. Without a quaver in his voice, he said that he once loved Kennedy. "I cared for him very much," he said. "I hoped he'd win the Presidency."

But, he said, this love turned into a violent hatred when Kennedy advocated the sale of U.S. jet fighter planes to Israel.

'Enough Cause to Hate'

"Specifically," said Sirhan in measured tones, "it turned into hate when he said that. Not really hate, because I still liked him. But it was enough for me—enough cause to hate."

"Enough to kill him?" asked Chief Prosecutor Lynn D. Compton.

"I don't know about that," said Sirhan, drawing back.

Sirhan swore that he blundered into the Ambassador, where Kennedy was shot last June 5, without a gun in his pocket, without murder on his mind and in an alcoholic blackout that left him without the slightest recollection of firing the fatal shots.

On the day of the shooting, said Sirhan, he attended several election parties in the Ambassador area without even knowing Kennedy would be present, drinking Tom Collinses ("They taste just like lemonade") and finally deciding, when he went to his car, that he was too intoxicated to drive home.

Chatted With Girl

Sirhan said he must have retrieved his gun from the glove compartment, although he does not remember doing so, and then entered the Ambassador to find some coffee with which to sober up. His last memory, he said, was chatting with a beautiful, dark-haired girl next to a coffee urn.

And his memory did not return, said Sirhan, until he found himself being choked and wrestled to the floor of the Ambassador kitchen while the gun he held continued firing to wound five other persons.

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper asked Sirhan if he knew that moments before he had walked up to Kennedy, "pointed a gun to his head, pulled the trigger... and he later died."

Sirhan smiled and replied: "So I learned."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

G-5 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/9/69
Edition: Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensealt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-716

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 10 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-10-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Strategy Backfires

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Defense strategy in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial boomeranged badly when an Ambassador Hotel electrician told of a conversation with the admitted killer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy hours before the shooting.

The defense put Hans Peter Bidstrup on the stand late yesterday to testify to Sirhan's allegedly drunken condition the night of June 4, 1968, just before Kennedy was shot.

On cross-examination, it was revealed the young Arab also had sought details of Kennedy's whereabouts and the amount of security surrounding the New York senator.

Less than 24 hours earlier, the jury of eight men and four women had heard the admitted slayer swear that when he went to Ambassador Hotel the night of the California primary election he was unaware that Kennedy's victory party was to be held there.

Bidstrup, who described Sirhan as "half drunk and very talkative," told the court of Judge Herbert V. Walker that Sirhan asked if Kennedy was present in the hotel and if he had any security guards.

The hotel electrician's memory of the events was hazy, but Dep. Dist. Atty. John Howard, who drew the admissions from him, produced the text of an interview Bidstrup gave the Federal Bureau of Investigation five days after the shooting.

Bidstrup told an agent: "This man (Sirhan) asked in what room or on what floor Kennedy was staying, when Kennedy was coming in, or if he was then at the hotel. This man asked about Kennedy's security.

I think it had to do with whether or not Kennedy had body guards."

Bidstrup also recalled that Sirhan wanted to know how long Kennedy had been staying at the Ambassador.

"I said," Bidstrup testified, "Mr. Kennedy stayed at the hotel a certain length of time. . . I think there was a question about Sen. Kennedy's security—if there was any security."

Q—What did you say?

A—That I would assume any man of his importance would have some.

The hotel worker's testimony clearly disturbed Sirhan.

He half-rose in his chair and beckoned furiously to Chief Defense Investigator Michael McCowan. They held an obviously agitated conversation.

After this, Grant B. Cooper, chief defense counsel, tried to question Bidstrup about a statement he gave McCowan. Bidstrup insisted he had no memory of ever talking to the defense investigator.

He told Howard that after the questions about Kennedy's security, Sirhan saw a Los Angeles fire department official on crowd duty at the hotel and "it appeared that Sirhan was a little startled."

Sirhan had testified that his conversation with Bidstrup involved the electrician's work and equipment.

The electrician's testimony was the high point of an otherwise unspectacular day in the trial.

Cable television executive Richard Lubic testified he heard a shouted epithet just before the

shot that killed Kennedy was fired.

Lubic said he was standing in the pantry off the Ambassador's Embassy Ballroom.

He said there was a shout, "Kennedy—you S.O.B."

Then a shot.

But Lubic did not connect, nor was he asked to connect, Sirhan with the shouted epithet.

Two men, Enrique Rabago of Buean Park and Humphrey Cordero, testified they talked with Sirhan outside Dr. Max Rafferty's Republican Primary victory party, also held in the Ambassador.

Cordero said Sirhan was drinking, but did not appear drunk. Sirhan has sworn he was drunk at that party.

Cordero, a New Yorker of Latin descent, brought laughter to the court as he told how he mistook Sirhan for a compatriot and later had hurried to the FBI when he realized whom his chance meeting had been with.

"I didn't want to get mixed up in any plots that this guy was seen talking to a Puerto Rican," he announced in a thick Bronx accent. Even the usually sober-visaged Judge Walker abandoned any attempt at controlling his laughter.

Cordero and Rabago said Sirhan used an epithet in describing Kennedy.

Gonzalo Cetina, Ambassador waiter, testified he talked briefly with Sirhan in the hotel and then saw him later in the ballroom pantry just before Kennedy was shot.

In early testimony yesterday,

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/8/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kenseit

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-3-715	
SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 11 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Ceto-bana
3-11-69

Sirhan's attorneys attempted to show that the young Arab's personality changed following his fall from a horse in September, 1966. Sirhan, working as an exercise boy at Granja Vista del Rio Ranch, near Corona, was thrown from a horse he was exercising in dense fog and fell on his head.

Mr. and Mrs. John Strathmann, who have known the defendant since the three were students at Pasadena City College, said he became "morose and depressed" after the fall.

Famed Los Angeles artist Millard Sheetz, who was present at the ranch the day Sirhan fell and was first to reach him, said when he first saw the fallen exercise boy he thought him "very seriously hurt. . . perhaps dead." Sirhan quickly recovered, he added.

Mrs. Strathmann said that she dated Sirhan's interest in the occult from the time of his injury.

She testified that she, too, is interested in spiritualism and had been impressed when Sirhan told her:

"He once brought forth a guardian angel. . . But it vanished."

John Weidner, former employer of Sirhan's testified to his quick temper.

That temper manifested itself when Sirhan became angry and quit his job, Weidner said.

Weidner's wife, Naomi, told of Sirhan's intense dislike of Jews

Q — Did you have a discussion of the political situation in the Middle East?

A — I remember at that time Sol (Sirhan's nickname) turning to me. . . He said "Don't you think the Jews can be cruel?" It startled me. I turned to him. I had never seen him so excited.

Q — How did you judge his excitement?

A — By his tone. Then he said, "I am going to tell you something I have never even told my parents. . . When I was in Jerusalem I saw an Israeli soldier cut off the breasts of an Arab woman."

**Witness Says
Sirhan Asked
About Kennedy
Security Guard**



RICHARD LUBIC
He heard Kennedy vilified



World-Examiner Photo
HANS BIDSTRUP
Believed Sirhan was drunk



World-Examiner Photo

DEFENSE ATTORNEY GRANT COOPER TALKS OUTSIDE COURTROOM
With Naomi Weidner, a witness, and Yvette Hoppus, interpreter for Arabs at trial

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Memory 'Failing'

By AL STUMP

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Bafflement hangs over the battered room on the Hall of Justice's eighth floor.

No one can figure a way to stifle the roar of trucks and shriek of sirens outside so all the testimony can be heard.

Chief attorney Grant Cooper of the defense team admits in outside-court talk that he can't fathom why his client, Sirhan Sirhan, can't remember writing such passages as "Kennedy must die" or recall when he last saw the notebooks in which he inscribed many passionate passages—before killing Robert Kennedy last June.

"I just don't know why he blanks out on so many things," said Cooper, showing exasperation. "We'd rather that he remembered everything that happened. But you fellows can hear him on the stand as well as I can, when he repeats and repeats he can't remember—and that's what the defense must honestly bring forth."

With a level glide of his arm, then dropping it sharply, the lawyer tells listeners, "Retrograde amnesia may explain it. In such a case, a person has memory along a certain line, then it snaps off and he remembers nothing."

Across Los Angeles, a leading psychiatrist, president of a nationally-known organization, spoke to The Herald-Examiner on the matter of retrograde amnesia. He said:

"Briefly, this is a condition where a traumatic event happens. The person involved retains recall of some of it—usually the initial portion. But he will forget events prior to it or events associated with it or contributing to it or in some way adjunctive to it.

"It's a well-known repression with no positive explanation.

"And it's very common—happens to many people. It also is very easily feigned."

Cooper, backed by associate Russell Parsons, gave the first clinical analysis yet submitted, while standing in a courtroom corridor yesterday:

"He is not psychotic, but a borderline case of schizophrenia of the paranoid type," stated Cooper.

These terms mean what in layman's language? Experts say they mean:

PSYCHOTIC—one who cannot understand reality in either a gross or a special way; a term without the legal implications of the word "insane."

SCHIZOPHRENIA—type of personality characterized by loss of contact with the environment and by disintegration of the personality; includes dementia praecox and some related forms of insanity.

PARANOID—one who believes others are out to destroy him and he must defend himself (but not often defends himself in an actively violent or criminal way).

Such terms are expected to become vital as clinical psychologists and psychiatrists move in to testify sometime next week. One key figure here is expected to be the 57-year-old Dr. Bernard L. Diamond, eminent psychiatrist and criminologist of the University of California at Berkeley, whose testimony has figured in many murder cases.

★ ★ ★

Anonymous "terrorist" phone calls to the home of Parsons, the second attorney to come to Sirhan's aid, have tailed off as the trial has progressed, he reports.

"I've been asked if these were calls from Zionists," he remarked. "How do I know? They just offered to blow up my family and me.

"Don't get many any more. As I've always said, I'm scared of such threats—but I am never scared."

You'd think the courtroom was Blinky's Bookie Shop, the way horse racing keeps intruding. Mention of the nags gives Sirhan—in his duel of wits with Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn Compton—a chance to score points. Twice, he did this notably.

Compton asked him about the time at Santa Anita when he put a mental "whammy" on a horse named Press Agent. Sirhan, earlier, had testified that he concentrated on causing something awful to happen to Press Agent, when he broke from the gate. "Because I wanted him to lose," he said.

The "evil eye," or thoughts, as Sirhan related it, caused Press Agent to wheel from the gate, leap a fence, throw his jockey and get disqualified.

Attempting to pooh-pooh the feat, Compton said:

"Well, after all, he was a longshot. He probably had the habit of breaking out of control at the gate."

Sirhan smiled triumphantly. Compton and all his researchers hadn't done their homework.

"Sir," he crowed, leaning forward and grinning, "it was the horse's maiden race."

At another point, the deputy D. A. attempted to show that the hot numerals "5-10" scrawled in Sirhan's diary might refer to the 5-10 pool at Agua Caliente race track—where Sirhan said "maybe" he had laid bets. In the 5-10, bettors pick winners in the final six races, from the fifth race through the tenth, and as much as \$80,000 has been won by a single gambler.

Instead of giving his usual "I don't exactly remember" answer, the defendant snapped:

"That's conjecture."
It was, too, and a discomfited Compton was still more taken aback, later, when the cocky Arab told him, "Ask me questions—don't put words in my mouth!" and informed the prosecutor that he asked "stupid questions."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-3 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/7/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: Al Stump
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED

MAR 10 1969

FBI - LOS ANGELES

3-10-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

When Sirhan Saw RFK! He Was Beautiful

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan completed his fourth day on the witness stand with declarations that he was drunk the night he fatally wounded Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, that he could not remember the shooting. Following is his own story as told in court yesterday at his murder trial under questioning by one of his attorneys, Grant B. Cooper, and cross-examination for the prosecution by Chief Deputy District Attorney Lynn D. Comp-ton.

Q — You had money with you?

A — I had a pocket full of money.

Q — Did you go in then?

A — I don't remember.

Q — Did you have a drink with you?

A — When I invited them to come in, I had finished my drink.

Q — What happened then?

A — I don't remember. I think I went in and bought another drink.

Q — Do you remember how many drinks you had altogether?

A — No, sir, I don't.

Q — Do you know how long you meandered around the parties?

A — No, sir, I don't know.

Q — Do you remember asking when Kennedy would come?

A — I don't remember.

Q — Witnesses said you did.

A — I don't know if they were telling the truth.

Q — Did you decide to go somewhere?

A — Yes, I felt I was quite high and I was alone, and if I got any more drunk, there was nobody with me to take care of me if I became more drunk, so I decided to go home, sir.

Q — What did you do?

A — I started to walk down the same way I had come.

Q — Earlier you had put the gun on the back seat of the car. Did you take the gun with you when you went to Kuchel's headquarters?

A — No, sir, I did not.

Q — At the Ambassador, did you have your gun?

A — No, sir, I went to the Ambassador directly from Kuchel's.

Q — When you decided to go home, what did you do?

A — I walked up this incline — that's how I remembered which direction my car was parked. I got in, but I couldn't picture myself driving my car in the condition I was in.

Q — What did you do?

A — I tried to force myself to drive.

Q — Did you turn the motor on?

A — I don't remember. I was afraid to drive, afraid I would get in an accident or get a ticket.

Q — Do you have insurance?

A — No.

Q — What did you do then?

A — I decided to go back to the party and sober up, to get some coffee.

Q — Did you pick up your gun?

A — I don't remember picking up the gun. I must have, but I don't remember.

Q — Are you sure?

A — I swore to tell the truth, sir, I have.

Q — But you had the gun when you went back to the Ambassador?

A — Yes, I must have.

Q — Where did you go?

A — In search of coffee . . .

I don't know where I found it, but eventually I found it.

Q — You went through a place with a teletype machine?

A — Yes.

Q — When was that?

A — I don't remember.

Q — What struck you about it?

A — The keys were going all by themselves. It struck me funny. I was baffled.

Q — Were there people there?

A — Yes, there were some people.

Q — Why were you there?

A — I don't know. I guess I was out there looking for coffee.

Q — Was there something you saw?

A — Yes, sir . . . a big pot.

Q — What color was it?

A — It was shiny. I don't remember.

Q — Were there coffee cups around it?

A — Piles and piles of cups and saucers.

Q — Was it like a kitchen?

A — I don't know.

Q — Were there bright lights there?

A — No, and no mirrors either.

Q — Were there other people?

A — I don't remember. I was so glad to find the coffee. It was the only thing on my mind.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-10 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/7/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-7-723

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 10 1969	
FBI — LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-10-69

Q — Did someone pour the coffee for you? Q — Jesse Unruh testified that during the drive from the Ambassador Hotel to Ram-

A — No. As I was pouring my coffee, a girl came up and wanted some. She liked hers for my country. Do you remember that?

A — Jesse Unruh must have been correct in saying that, but I myself don't remember saying that to him or anybody.

Q — What did she look like? Q — Do you remember the police station?

A — About my age. A — I didn't know what it was at the time, sir.

Q — Was she good looking? Q — You saw the uniforms — you must have recognized them as policemen.

A — Beautiful. A — Yes.

Q — Did you have a conversation? Q — Do you remember being taken inside?

A — I told her I wanted some coffee. A — Not exactly, sir.

Q — How many cups did you have? Q — Do you remember the flashlight being shown in your face?

A — I don't remember. A — I don't remember that.

Q — What is the next thing you remember? Q — Later, did other officers come in and ask you questions?

A — The next thing I remember, sir, I was being choked. A — Mr. Jordan.

Q — Do you remember anything in between? Q — You remembered Mr. Jordan?

A — No, sir. A — Yes, he was a very nice man.

Q — You were in the pantry? Q — Other than the pulling your head back, was there any mistreatment by the police?

A — That is what I later learned in this court, sir. A — I don't remember, but they were so friendly I don't think there could have been any.

Q — You saw Senator Kennedy, you put the gun to his head, about an inch away . . . eventually he died. Q — Did you know you had shot Sen. Kennedy?

A — I was told this, sir. A — No, sir, I did not.

Q — Do you believe it is true? Q — When was the first time you remember you were accused to killing Mr. Kennedy?

A — Obviously, sir. A — When this Mr. Jordan — this is the only man I remember because of his name.

Q — And after that you were choked? Q — Were you hurt?

A — I was choked, yes. A — I don't know who it was, who was choking me, but he was doing a good job.

Q — Did you know anyone there? Q — What is the next thing you remember?

A — I don't know anybody who was choking me. A — I remember getting into that car; a police car. One of the policemen took hold of my hair, yanked my head back and put a light in my eyes.

Jordan—when they took me to the court room. I was in front of a lady judge. I couldn't believe it, sir. It was the first time in my life I've ever seen a lady judge. They started reading these names to me.

Q—When you were arrested, you refused to give your name?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—With the policemen, you didn't discuss anything about the shooting?

A—They never brought it up, sir.

Q—What did you think you were there for.

A—We were so engaged in this discussion . . . I don't remember. It was so interesting to me.

Q—Did a doctor talk to you?

A—Yes. Doctor Italla.

Q—What did Dr. Italla do?

A—Examined me.

Q—When you heard the name Kennedy when you were before the lady judge . . .

Q—That is the first you knew you had shot Kennedy?

A—That is right.

Q—Did you send for a lawyer?

A—When I was before Judge Klein . . . the Public Defender wanted to know my name. I didn't know what had happened . . . I wanted to settle in my mind. I wanted to find out what was going on, and I asked him to send for the American Civil Liberties Union.

Q—Why the ACLU?

A—I had heard about them on the radio.

Q—And a person from the ACLU came?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—That was A. L. Wirin?

A—Yes, sir. A fine man.

Q—And that's about the whole story?

Q—You told this jury you don't remember having any intention to kill Kennedy?

A—I don't remember.

Q—You have heard these notebooks read?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—And you wrote these notebooks?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—And you don't deny it?

A—I don't deny it.

Q—You bought the gun?

A—Yes, sir. I did, I did.

Q—Prior to 1962 . . . that is 1967, you wrote of your plan

to kill the President of the United States.

A—Yes, sir.

Q—And you went to the Ambassador Hotel on the 2nd

of June, 1963?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—You saw Sen. Kennedy . . . you were angry at him?

A—I was.

Q—You had . . . target practice?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—You took the gun over to the Ambassador Hotel?

A—Yes, sir . . . obviously.

Q—You didn't take any identification with you?

A—I always left my wallet in the car.

Q—And you did kill him?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—How do you account for this?

A—I don't know.

Q—You may cross-examine.

Deputy District Attorney Lynn D. Compton began the

cross-examination for the Prosecution.

Q—For a long time you have been very interested in

solving the Arab problem?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—Because of this, you wanted to become a diplomat?

A—Yes, sir, I did.

Q—You were quite impressed by what your teacher

in the Old City told you—that

the way to solve these problems

was through peaceful means?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—As of the moment, now you have an intense hatred

for Zionists?

A—Yes, sir, I do.

Q—That hatred would apply to anyone who appeared

to be aiding the Zionists?

A—Yes, sir. I feel so strongly about it that any

friend of my enemy is my enemy.

Q—When did you first develop your hatred for the

United States?

A — I never have had any hatred as such for the United States. I am most grateful to the United States for having lived here the second half of my life. But from 1967 on, I was very resentful to the United States for their foreign policy, for their one-sided support in the Middle East.

Q — But never until now did you hate the United States?

A — No. Government, sir, was my favorite subject in school. I love the American democracy . . . elections . . . checks and balances.

Q — But you wrote that you wanted to overthrow the United States?

A — At that time, sir, when I wrote it.

Q — But only at the time you wrote the material?

A — Yes. That is how I felt, and only at that time. I don't remember entertaining the thought after or before.

Q — However briefly, you had that feeling of hatred?

A — My feelings, sir, to anything, changed according to the conditions of the day.

Q — Think back, now . . . can you reconstruct one single thing that was done by the United States that first caused you to resent it?

A — Not to resent them or hate them. But during politics, sir, in the United States, the Presidential elections in 1948, when Harry Truman, sir, came out and said, "Do Arabs have any votes in America" . . . the president-elect implied only the Jews in America . . . can vote for him, can contribute money to his campaign, and he is only responsible for the Jews.

He felt he had only to comply to the wishes of the Zionists in the United States, if those Jews would vote for him.

Q — You were only four years old, so that was something you read later?

A — Yes.

Q — Did President Johnson do something that upset you?

A — Yes, sir, he did. I explained that.

Q — That would explain your statement about assassinating the 36th President?

A — Yes. I must have been provoked at the time I wrote that, sir.

Q — You told us at one point in your life you had a great fondness for Robert Kennedy.

A — Yes, sir, I did.

Q — At what time did that begin?

A — I had always associated him, sir, with President Kennedy. To me he was the next President. I was hoping he would become President and would continue what his brother had started.

Q — Do you remember a time when Senator Kennedy was not an announced candidate?

A — I honestly don't, sir.

Q — Do you remember when he said he would be a candidate?

A — Yes.

Q — Do you remember when that was?

A — No.

Q — Did you feel you were for him?

A — I was for him very much, sir.

Q — At the time your love turned to hate, was that when he was a candidate?

A — Yes, sir, it was, but it wasn't all that much hate really. I still liked him until the time he came out and said he would give those 50 Phantom jet bombers to Israel.

Q — Not all that much hate?

A — No. But any was enough cause for me, sir, to hate him.

Q — Enough to kill him?

A — I don't know about that.

Q — If you had been there, you said you would have blasted him.

A — Yes, I said I would have, and I still would.

Q — You meant that?

A — Sir, I am very impulsive. Whatever my reaction would be, it was good for that time only.

Q — When did you decide your teacher was wrong about peaceful means?

A — I never decided my

teacher was wrong. Throughout my life I believed in non-violence. I liked all people who try to achieve their goals peacefully.

Q — You told us if you were where Israeli soldiers were standing on the Suez, you would kill them.

A — Yes. If you were trying to kill me, I would kill you first. Whenever it comes to self-preservation, sir, I come first, not you.

Q — Then your peaceful approach only goes so far?

A — Yes.

Q — Do you doubt that you wrote "Kennedy must die."?

A — No, I don't have any doubts.

Q — Can you relate that writing in your notebook to when you saw the television program?

A — Sir, again I don't remember what the exact provocation was. I have heard of many times when Robert Kennedy was going to send those jet bombers to Israel.

Q — Sen. Kennedy was in Oregon then?

A — I thought he was.

Q — You followed the campaign closely?

A — No, sir. This stuff came to me. I didn't go to it.

Q — On May 18th, in your notebook you wrote: "My determination to eliminate Robert F. Kennedy is becoming more the more of an unshakable obsession." Does this indicate to you that you had been thinking of eliminating him for some time?

A — Sir, I don't know what exactly was my meaning when I wrote those words. My emotion was there. I don't remember what I meant by every word.

Q — Did the same thing apply to your Zionist feeling?

A — I have a built-in bug in this brain of mine about the Jews, the Israelis. Anything about them turns me on.

Q — That does not go off and on?

A — No. It stays with me.

Q — You don't require anything to turn on the feeling?

Q — Try to listen to my question. Your Zionist feeling doesn't require repeated provocation?

A — No, sir.

Q — If you had no trouble remembering your experiments . . . what about your notebooks? You don't remember when these were written?

A — No, Sir, I don't.

Q — You had a habit of doodling?

A — Yes, Sir.

Q — You had a habit of writing words or even sentences of things that were on your mind?

A — I don't know, Sir, what came in my mind. I didn't sit there and doodle intentionally.

Q — These were the things that interested you? Race horses . . . girls now and then . . . songs, poems . . . sometimes you liked to write in Arabic . . . jockeys' names?

A — Yes, Sir.

Q — It doesn't surprise you to find these things in your notebooks?

A — No, Sir, it doesn't.

Q — Look at this book . . . you might have been thinking about a betting combination for a race when you wrote that?

A — That is conjecture, Sir. I don't know.

Q — Do you even remember that you had these notebooks?

A — Yes, Sir, they are mine.

Q — Do you remember the last time you might have written something?

A — No, Sir, I don't.

Q — These were not the only notebooks from Pasadena City College that you kept notes in?

A — I don't know, Sir.

Q — You had several books?

A — Were you with me at the time, Mr. Compton? How the hell do you know? Don't tell me, Sir. Ask me, but don't put words in my mouth.

Q — Did you have several books? A — Yes, at the East Pasadena Firearms Company.

A — I don't know, Sir.

Q — Do you remember when you wrote this letter to

you remember about withholding tax?

A — Most likely when I was at Corona.

Q — You were away from the house. You took these two notebooks with you to Corona?

A — I guess, Sir . . . I don't know. I don't remember the occasion that prompted me to write that. I said most likely I was in Corona.

Q — Did you ever look at your notebook at the things you wrote?

A — I guess, Sir. I don't remember.

Q — You don't remember looking and thinking, "Gee whiz, here I wrote that Kennedy must be assassinated" and wonder why. You don't remember that?

A — No, Sir, I don't.

Q — On this envelope, see that writing: "RFK must be disposed of like his brother." Did you write that?

A — It was my handwriting.

Q — You have no memory at all of ever writing that?

A — No, Sir. I haven't.

Q — Let's talk about the gun a minute, Sirhan. Prior to your acquiring it, you expressed a desire for a gun to your brother, right?

A — Yes, Sir.

Q — What did you want it for?

A — I don't know, Sir, at the time what I wanted it for.

Q — For target shooting or hunting?

A — It could have been from watching a western on television where they have guns.

Q — Had you ever been hunting?

A — No, Sir, I never had.

Q — You didn't go hunting after you got the gun—I mean for animals?

A — No, Sir, I did not.

Q — Before you bought this gun, had you looked at other guns?

Q — You were taught in the Cadet Corps about gun safety?

A — Yes, Sir.

Q — Didn't you think it was dangerous to carry a loaded weapon around in your automobile?

A — I think it is.

Q — When you acquired the gun, it looked like a pretty good gun to you?

A — I thought it was, yes.

Q — You had shopped other places for guns?

A — I had looked, not shopped.

Q — The guns in the store were too expensive for you?

A — Yes, Sir, they were.

Q — What was the going price?

A — It depends on the make.

Q — Give us some range of prices.

A — \$55 . . . \$65 . . . some cheaper.

Q — You can buy a .22 revolver for as low as \$13-\$14; can't you?

A — Yes, Sir, I guess you could, Sir, but of a very inferior make. I have seen some of them at the gun range . . . they are not in the same class as mine, Sir.

Q — Did you ever try to buy a gun at a gun store?

A — I never had enough money.

Q — You knew they wouldn't sell you one?

A — No, I didn't.

Q — You knew as an alien you couldn't have one?

A — No, I did not know that.

Q — Where did you keep your gun?

A — In my room.

Q — When did you get ammunition?

A — When I decided to shoot it, Sir.

Q — How long did you have the gun before you fired it?

A — About six weeks . . . two months.

Q — Where did you go? A — It was the first time I stayed that late.

A — To Fish Canyon, Sir.

Q — Did you buy the ammunition before you went? Q — Now, the notebook . . . could all of the writing on this page of the notebook . . . might have been put on at different times?

A — I think I bought the ammunition at the range.

Q — How long did you stay? A — I don't know. I will not concede to that. It might have been at the same time or at different times.

A — Long enough to acquaint myself with the gun.

Q — All your shots were slow fire? A — Yes, Sir.

A — Yes, Sir.

Q — Did you squeeze every shot off? Q — When you were doing . . . what about the different colored ink?

A — Yes, Sir.

Q — After you finished shooting, did you unload your gun? A — I could have run out of ink, Sir, in one pen or another.

A — Yes, Sir.

Q — Did you put the gun in your car? Q — The entries might have been made at different times?

A — Yes, on the back seat of the car.

Q — You said you knew it was against the law to carry a gun . . . ? A — They could have.

A — A concealed gun.

Q — But you didn't know it was against the law for an alien to have a gun? Q — On June 4, when you were target shooting, do you have any idea of how many rounds you fired that day?

A — No, I didn't.

Q — When was the next time you fired your gun? A — 6 . . . 7 . . . 8 . . . 850 rounds.

A — I don't remember. But there were about six times that I fired the gun.

Q — It was always deliberate slow fire? Q — For the whole 850 rounds you testified you drew on the target and squeezed the trigger?

A — I always aimed at the bull's eye.

Q — You know that rapid fire is best for a silhouette target? A — I said about 850 rounds.

A — I don't know.

Q — When you put live rounds into the cylinder of your revolver, do they fit tight? Q — Well 750, give me a figure.

A — Mine fit pretty tight, Sir, in my gun.

Q — Wasn't it easier to get out live bullets than the cartridges? A — I fired a hell of a lot of shots.

A — Yes.

Q — And anybody who says you were fast firing is an absolute liar?

A — I think I would say that, Sir.

Q — Witnesses said it was you . . . are they liars?

A — Yes, Sir, they are. It was the man next to me who was doing the rapid firing. He was not firing a .22.

Q — Did you have a conversation about hunting?

A — Yes, I did.

Q — Did you say "I intend to go hunting?"

A — I don't remember saying it.

Q — That was the first time you got caught with a loaded gun when the whistle went off at the range?

Q — Did you think you would take this gun out and hunt with it?

A — I might have. I don't know.

Q — Was anything said about killing a dog?

A — I don't remember exactly, Sir. It could have happened.

Q — It might have been said by you?

A — It could be. There was talk about hunting.

Q — About hunting for dogs?

A — About hunting in general.

Q — You did not say anything about your gun killing a dog?

A — I don't remember saying anything about my gun killing a dog. Whatever was said about a dog was in reference to hunting, not my gun or anybody else's gun.

Q — On June 1, do you remember you went to the range in Corona?

A — Yes.

Q — Do you remember signing in?

A — No, I don't exactly remember ... When you ask if I remember signing my name, that is like asking if I remember the whole afternoon. That is stupid.

Q — I sometimes do ask stupid questions. Do you remember signing in?

A — Yes, Sir, I do.

Q — Was all your shooting slow fire?

A — Yes ... a policeman was there teaching some people, and the way he taught them to fire guns, that was the way I was taught, too.

Q — When you left, did you go home?

A — Yes, I did.

Q — Straight?

A — I might have stopped in Corona at a restaurant.

Q — Did you take your gun out of the car?

A — No, Sir.

Q — Was it loaded?

A — Most likely it would have been unloaded. I expend-

ed my ammunition at the range.

Q — Was there any ammunition in the car?

A — I don't remember. On the way home from Corona, I bought some ammunition at the Lock, Stock and Barrel.

I asked for something they said they did not have. That is when they tried to sell me these mini-mags.

Q — The night of the first, when you got home, you took the gun inside?

A — Yes.

Q — Was that your usual practice?

A — Yes, it was.

Q — On June 4, you were mad at Kennedy?

A — Yes, but I wasn't provoked.

Q — When you saw him June 2, he looked like an all right guy?

A — He seemed like it, Sir. I had not liked it when he said he would send bombers to Israel.

Q — On June 2, he didn't say he wouldn't send bombers to Israel?

A — He didn't say he would either.

Q — He was back in your good graces?

A — As long as I could see him.

A — As long as he was in front of you?

A — When I saw him, I thought he was beautiful.

Q — And after you saw him?

A — I still thought his sending 50 jet bombers to Israel was unfair.

Q — You thought Kennedy would still send the bombers?

A — Those Zionists have a habit of holding every presidential candidate to his word. He knew where his business lied in the American election.

Q — After you arrived at the Hotel Ambassador, how long was it before you bought a drink?

A — Fifteen or 20 minutes
a half hour at most, probably.

Q — You didn't drink, did you?

A — No, Sir, I don't drink. I drank that night.

Q — You were mad?

A — I was, Sir.

Q — Mad at the Zionists?

A — I was, very much.

Q — And the friends of the Zionists?

A — Yes, Sir.

Q — You began to feel high?

A — Yes, Sir.

Q — What were symptoms?

A — I wasn't myself, Sir. I wasn't the same Sirhan that had come in here.

Q — Were you dizzy?

A — I was like this (made weaving motions with hands).

Q — Did you stagger?

A — I haven't been drunk enough to know what it is like, but I knew I was not sober.

Q — Had you ever been drunk before?

A — Yes.

Q — What was it like?

A — I had to be nursed by my brother.

Q — Were you sick?

A — Yes. . . not too sick.

Q — Did you fall down?

A — You would have to ask my brother.

Q — On this night, did you have trouble standing?

A — No, Sir, not exactly.

Q — Did you have trouble seeing?

A — I don't remember exactly.

Q — You remember the coffee urn. . . the girl. . . did you have trouble seeing them?

A — I was so glad to have gotten that coffee. . . it was the only thing on my mind.

Q — She was pretty, wasn't she?

A — You could have had the ugliest gal in the place, and the way I was drunk you could have said she was the most beautiful, and I would have no way of disputing it.

Q — You thought you should go home?

A — Yes.

Q — You left, walked back to your car?

A — Yes.

Q — Put the key in the ignition?

A — I don't remember.

Q — You decided you had too much to drink?

A — That I wasn't myself, Sir.

Q — You thought you might get arrested?

A — Yes. I didn't have any insurance, either.

Q — You thought you should get some coffee to sober up?

A — Yes.

Q — You got out of the car?

A — Yes.

Q — You locked it up?

A — Yes, I always locked it.

Q — You took your gun with you?

A — I don't remember.

Q — When you talked with Dr. (Seymour) Pollock, you said you took the gun out because you were afraid Jews would steal it?

A — I did not tell him that speaking like I am to you. I must have told him that when I was under hypnosis. I didn't know I told him that, Sir.

Q — You walked back to the Ambassador?

A — Yes, down the incline.

Q — It never entered your mind to go back to (Sen.) Kuchel's (headquarters) for coffee?

A — No, Sir, it never did.

Q — Do you remember getting back to the Ambassador?

A — That route, Sir, had become familiar to me.

Q — Were you on the second floor?

A — I don't know where I found the coffee, but I found the coffee.

Q — Do you know what time that was?

A — No, Sir, I do not have any concept of the time.

Q — Do you remember talking to the girl by the coffee?

A — Yes, I remember telling her how happy I was to get coffee.

Q — What was your conversation?

A — Coffee was the conversation.

Q — And the next thing you remember you were being choked?

A — Yes, Sir.

Q — You remember an officer grabbing you by the hair?

A — I didn't know it was an officer, but in this car, this guy yanked my head back and put a light in my eyes.

Q — Do you remember the police station?

A — No, Sir, I don't.

Q — Do you remember being in this room with Officer Jordan?

A — Yes, Sir, when he was giving me the coffee.

Q — Do you remember kicking the cup out of the hand of the officer?

A — I didn't know he was an officer.

Q — Well, someone?

A — Yes.

Q — How many officers shined the light in your eyes?

A — I don't remember. The one in the car I remember because he pulled my hair.

Q — Do you remember that Officer Jordan searched you?

A — I don't remember that.

Q — You don't remember him going through your property with you?

A — The only thing I remember about Mr. Jordan was when he was in that little room and Mr. Howard was there.

Q — You don't remember that he started to inventory your property and you said, "That has already been done by Badge 3309"?

A — I don't remember it now.

Q — Were you woozy?

A — I was tired, Sir.

Q — Could you still feel the effects of liquor?

A — I don't know what I was feeling.

Q — Were you groggy?

A — I don't know what I was.

Q — You were not alert?

A — I don't remember how I was.

Q — You asked Jordan to taste your coffee first?

A — He wanted that coffee tasted.

Q — You don't recall asking him to do it?

A — No, I don't recall.

Q — Did you not do that?

A — I could have. I don't remember.

Q — Why would you have him taste it first?

A — I don't know.

Q — You didn't think you had done anything at that time?

A — No, Sir, I didn't.

Q — You thought Jordan was a nice guy?

A — He was.

Q — Did he ask your name?

A — I don't remember if he did.

Q — Did anybody ask it that night?

A — Mr. Howard. . . He gave me my constitutional rights or whatever they were. . . said anything I said could be used against me. I kept my mouth shut.

Q — You didn't give your name?

A — No.

Q — You knew your name?

A — Yes.

Q — You weren't so foggy or drunk you forgot it?

A — I don't know.

Q — Don't you have any recollection of being in the police station and being questioned?

A—Not very clearly, Sir, no.

Q—Because you were not yourself?

A—Sir, the people around were so friendly I didn't know what was going on.

Q—You were never curious about why you had been handcuffed?

A—No.

Q—That morning did anyone ask you about the incident at the Ambassador Hotel?

A—I don't remember.

Q—Would you say you were not asked?

A—I could have been asked. I don't remember.

Q—You told us this morning that after you were arraigned before the lady judge, you were taken to another jail where you were given treatment . . . they took blood out of your arm?

A—Yes.

Q—They said it was for a venereal disease test?

A—They did not tell me what it was for.

Q—This was some time after your arraignment?

A—I give you this sequence: They changed my clothes at that place. They wheeled me in a wheelchair, then I was X-rayed, then the blood was taken from me.

Q—After you were in the courtroom?

A—Yes, Sir.

Q—Did anyone while you were in the custody of the Los Angeles Police Department . . . tell you they wanted to talk to you about the Ambassador?

A—I don't remember, Sir, if they did.

Q—Did you ever ask what you were there for?

A—I don't remember.

Q—Did you wonder why you were there?

A—The people . . . this Mr.

Jordan was so friendly, Sir.

Nothing was mentioned about the case. I don't know what happened, Sir.

Q—You were never curious about why you had been handcuffed?

A—No, Sir. I wasn't myself, Sir. I didn't know what was going on.

Q—Still suffering from the effects of liquor?

A—I don't know from what. I was not myself as I am now.

Q—Not yourself?

A—I must not have been. Otherwise I would remember what happened.

Q—Did you have difficulty speaking?

A—I don't remember.

Q—Any numbness around the nose or mouth?

A—I don't exactly remember.

Q—Do you remember Sgt. Melendrez?

A—I remember this fellow, Mr. Howard. He looked monstrous to me at the time.

Q—Do you remember later you said to Howard "I have been to the magistrate," and he said you had not but you would be taken to the magistrate and you might be tried . . . you said, "Are you going to take me up there?" . . . remember?

A—No, Sir, I don't.

Q—You didn't ask, "Tried for what?"

A—I don't remember.

Q—Do you remember around 3 o'clock Sgt. Melendrez said, "Do you want to

talk about the Ambassador?" aware that I killed Mr. Kennedy.

You said, "Look, Mr. Jordan, I must act right for a moment . . . I have the right to remain silent . . . this is a basic American jurisprudence . . . Remember?"

A — No, Sir, I don't remember that.

Q — They asked if you at least wanted to give them your name?

A — I thought they had the name.

Q — John Doe?

A — John Doe.

Q — You told them that was your name?

A — They gave me this name. They forced me. They told me to sign that name.

Q — Didn't they say to sign your name?

A — They said write down John Doe.

Q — You said you were willing to fight for the Arab cause?

A — Palestinian Arabs.

Q — Would killing Robert Kennedy aid the Arab cause?

A — Sir, I am not even

Q — You know he is dead.

Q — Would the killing of Kennedy help the Arab cause?

A — I am in no position to say that.

Q — Are you glad he is dead?

A — No, Sir, I am not.

Q — Are you sorry?

A — No, I am not sorry, but I am not proud.

Q — You're not sorry?

A — No, because I have no exact knowledge of having shot him . . . but I am not proud.

Q — Did you not say "I killed Robert Kennedy willfully, premeditatedly and with 30 years of malice aforethought"?

A — Yes, Sir, I did.

Q — Are you willing to die for the Arab cause?

A — When did I say I was willing to fight for the Arab cause?

Q — This morning. Are you willing to fight for the Arab cause?

A — Yes.

Q — Are you willing to die for it?

A — Yes.



Herold-Examiner Photo

TWO PROSECUTORS IN SIRIAN TRIAL ARRIVE AT COURTROOM

— They are David N. Fitts, deputy district attorney, and Lynn D. Compton, chief prosecutor —

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Profanity and Fatal Shot Told at Sirhan Trial

**Witness Says He Heard
Voice Swear at Kennedy
but Gives No Identification**

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

In the early moments of June 5, Richard Lubie heard a voice swear at Sen. Robert F. Kennedy and then heard the gunshot that took Kennedy's life.

Lubic, testifying Friday at the murder trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, said he jumped for cover. Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper, who called Lubie as a witness, didn't even ask if he could identify Sirhan as the man who said, "Kennedy, you son of a bitch," and fired the shot.

Lubic was the last, and briefest, of a puzzling string of defense witnesses whose testimony appeared to strengthen the prosecution case.

One, electrician Hans Peter Bidstrub, testified that Sirhan, drink in hand, asked him as early as 10 p.m. if Kennedy was staying at the Ambassador, on what floor and in what room, if Kennedy was in the hotel then and whether Kennedy had bodyguards.

Bidstrub said he talked for about 15 minutes with Sirhan at one political party the night of June 4, and that his first impression was that Sirhan was "half drunk and very talkative." Bidstrub said he himself is a nondrinker.

Changing Plans

Earlier this week, Sirhan testified that he arrived at the Ambassador June 4 through a series of haphazard changed plans, without knowing Kennedy would be there, after a day of target practice with his pistol. He said he got drunk on at least three gin highballs, talked with Bidstrub and others and later blacked out—still without knowing, apparently, that Kennedy would definitely be there that night.

Bidstrub's testimony tended to corroborate the defense claim that Sirhan had been drinking that night, and three other witnesses said they also saw Sirhan with a glass in his hand.

Bidstrub's recollection of the assassination night and of his later interviews with law enforcement officials and defense counsel appeared hazy, so much so that he could not definitely recall his former statements when confronted with them Friday.

At one point Cooper asked Bidstrub if he remembered telling Cooper that Sirhan "showed no more interest in Kennedy than in any other Democrat." Bidstrub said he didn't remember.

Enrique Rabago and Humphrey Cordero, friends from Buena Park, testified that they talked with Sirhan around 10 p.m. also. They each said he had a drink in his hand, but did not appear particularly intoxicated to them.

Rabago asked Sirhan, he said, if he thought Kennedy would win the California Democratic presidential primary, and Sirhan said yes.

But then, Rabago said, Sirhan added: "Don't worry if Sen. Kennedy doesn't win. That son of a bitch is a millionaire. Even if he wins, he's not going to do anything for you, for me or for the poor people."

Rabago said he had regarded Sirhan as "educated and arrogant."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/7/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kinsalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-712

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 10 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Oct 6 1969
3-10-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Court Tantrum By Sirhan Bared to Jury

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, his duel with his prosecutors over and his testimony completed, became a spectator today as friends and former employers testified in his defense at his murder trial.

The four-day ordeal of testimony for the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy ended yesterday as spectacularly as it had begun. Chief Deputy Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton disclosed to the jury that Sirhan had thrown a courtroom tantrum while they were excluded from the trial.

This disclosure came after Sirhan had repeated his claims that he could not remember shooting Kennedy, and in fact had no recollection of the fatal events until he was arraigned

on charges of assault with a deadly weapon with intent to commit murder.

Reflecting on the shooting, Sirhan said he was not glad Kennedy was dead, but neither was he sorry.

"I have no exact knowledge that I killed him," he explained.

Then in almost an undertone, he added, "But, I am not proud."

The eight men and four women who will decide Sirhan's fate learned that a week ago he had engaged in one of his notorious rages and came near to firing his lawyers, pleading guilty to first-degree murder and demanding execution.

Compton sought only from the young Arab an admission he had told Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding over his trial:

"I killed Robert Kennedy, willfully, premeditatedly and with 20 years malice aforethought."

Sirhan's chief defense counsel, Grant B. Cooper, objected sharply to the question because it involved testimony taken in court outside the jury's hearing. But after hasty conference at the bench, Cooper smilingly relented. His reasons soon became clear.

As soon as Compton had completed his cross-examina-

tion, the defense lawyer told the

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/7/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-77-711

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 10 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to [unclear]
3-10-69

whole story of Sirhan's temper outburst before the jury.

His strategy was to show that the impulsive temper of the 24-year old Jordanian immigrant often leads him into situations where he acts with no thought for consequences. When court recessed for the day, Cooper believed he had succeeded.

Compton's cross-examination of Sirhan sometimes became an acrimonious duel between the two.

Sirhan once called his prosecutor "stupid," and Compton laughed in open derision at some of the young Arab's claimed lapses of memory about not only the events surrounding Kennedy's murder, but also about the facts of his disagreement with his attorneys over defense strategy.

That disagreement, Cooper disclosed on redirect examination, centered around a wish by the lawyers to summon two former love interests of Sirhan as witnesses in his defense.

At Sirhan's demand the two girls, Gwendolyn Gum and Peggy Ostercamp, will not be called. But 10 other witnesses, whom Sirhan originally objected to, will testify—and with the defendant's permission, Cooper said.

Under cross-examination, Sirhan, deadly serious, maintained he was willing to die for the Arab cause.

Except for a few brisk exchanges, Compton's cross-examination was surprisingly mild-mannered. The burly chief prosecutor seemed hesitant and almost deferential in the less than two hours he held Sirhan on the stand.

Most violent exchange between the two came when Compton pressed Sirhan on why he, an avowed advocate of peaceful non-violence, had abandoned his precepts and turned to assassination.

Sirhan replied that he had not abandoned non-violence, but he made it clear his belief had its limits. He warned Compton:

"If you try to kill me now... you go first, sir. When it comes to self-preservation, I come first, not you."

Compton changed his line of questioning.

The prosecutor asked few questions about claims by Sirhan that when he shot Kennedy he was drunk.

Sirhan, describing the night of the shooting, said he had several drinks at the Ambassador Hotel headquarters of senatorial rivals Max Baer and Alan Cranston. He became drunk he said, and decided to go home.

But, he continued, when he reached his car he decided he was too drunk to drive.

He decided to return to the hotel in search of coffee with which to sober up.

His loaded gun was in the back seat of the car, he said, and he has no memory of taking it with him.

He met a girl near a coffee urn in the hotel and recalls talking with her.

Of the shooting itself?

"I don't remember."

Moreover, Sirhan swore, he has no memory of ever being in the pantry off the Ambassador's Embassy ballroom.

His first conscious memory after talking with the girl, whom he remembers as dark-haired and beautiful, is being choked by his captors after the shooting, he said.

He dimly remembers being taken to Rampart Police Station, but does not recall that he was taken by police, nor that former Assembly Speaker Jesse Unruh accompanied him, he added.

In both direct and cross-examination, Sirhan claimed that several prosecution witnesses against him had "lied."

He denied emphatically that he had ever told Pasadena refuse collector Calvin Clark that he planned to shoot Kennedy.

Clark, who admitted under oath he hates Sirhan, swore to their conversation earlier in the trial. He said it took place in Sirhan's backyard shortly after the assassination of Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr.

Compton sought again and again to attack Sirhan's claims of lapses of memory. When the young Arab insisted he could not recall taking his gun to the Ambassador, the chief prosecutor asked him about statements he made to Dr. Seymour Pollack, psychiatrist for the prosecution, that he had taken his gun "because he was afraid some Jews might steal it."

Sirhan explained that he had made his statement to the state psychiatrist, and one of his own, Dr. Bernard Diamond, while under hypnosis and had no memory of it.

Ironically, should the prosecution not call Dr. Pollack, the defense will.

"He is important to our case," a defense spokesman said yesterday. "His findings agree with ours."

The spokesman disclosed that in addition to Dr. Pollack and Dr. Diamond, the defense will call Los Angeles County

psychiatrist Dr. Marcus Crahan, who also examined Sirhan.

Other members of the defense battery of alienists include psychologist Dr. Martin Shor of San Diego, a consultant in the Jack Ruby trial; psychiatrist Dr. Eric Marcus, and psychologist Dr. O. Frederick Richardson.

Their testimony is scheduled for Monday, according to associate defense counsel Emile Zola Berman.

On tap for today are friends and former employers. These include Mr. and Mrs. John Weidner, owners of Organic Pasadena, health food store where Sirhan was employed until a few months before the assassination; Ivan Garcia, a school friend of the defendant; Mr. and Mrs. Robert Proffwood, friends; Mr. and Mrs. John Strathmore, friends and former employers.

Two Los Angeles Police officers, Fred Willoughby and Gene Austin, also have been summoned by the defense. They stood guard over Sirhan at the Rampart Station, where Sirhan reportedly kicked a coffee cup from Willoughby's hand.

Richard Lubie, an eyewitness to Kennedy's slaying, has been called by the defense, as have waiters and bartenders from the Ambassador Hotel.

The identity of two more defense witnesses was withheld yesterday. A spokesman explained they had not yet been subpoenaed, and he said, "If it gets out we're looking for them, we might never find them."

Lubie and the psychiatrists the defense believes, will shed some light on the events of the murder, as well as on Sirhan's state of mind.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Drunk, Blacked Out on Night Kennedy Was Shot, Sirhan Says

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan testified Thursday that he got drunk on at least three gin highballs last June 4, blacked out while trying to sober up, and "the next thing I remember, I was being choked."

He didn't learn for many hours that he had fatally shot Sen. Robert F. Kennedy and that he was being choked in a struggle to subdue him as his gun continued firing, wounding five others, he said.

It was the first time Sirhan has mentioned that he had been drinking the night Kennedy was killed.

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper asked Sirhan if he knew that during the blackout. "You walked up to Sen. Kennedy, pointed a gun to his head, pulled the trigger . . . and he later died."

With a smile, a shrug and a calm upward gesture of his hand, Sirhan answered, "Yes. So I learned."

But under both Cooper's questioning and cross-examination by Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton, Sirhan steadily denied specific recollection of the shooting or of the rages that consumed him when he wrote in his notebooks that Kennedy must die.

Sirhan was smiling and at ease under Cooper's questioning, and as Compton began his cross-examination Sirhan remained ~~amiable~~ and polite—but wary.

Compton's questioning sought to dispel in jurors' minds the impression Cooper had earlier aimed for in

characterizing Sirhan's notebook writings as the disjointed scribbles of a disordered mind.

Instead, Compton suggested, much of the writing was mere doodling reflecting Sirhan's daily interests—girls, horse racing, jockeys and snatches of Arabic songs.

Sirhan replied fliply as Compton asked if the numbers 5-10, and other number series weren't actually betting combinations at Caliente race track.

"That's conjecture, sir. I don't know," Sirhan answered with a mischievous grin.

Anger Flares

But he flared in anger when Compton asserted that Sirhan must have had more notebooks than the three introduced in evidence.

"Were you with me?" demanded Sirhan. "Ask me. Don't put words in my mouth!"

Compton asked if he had had more notebooks.

"I said I don't know," Sirhan snapped.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/7/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-710

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 7 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-7-69

er's bench for a moment, and then Compton asked his last questions:

"You said you were willing to fight for the Arab cause?"

"Yes sir," said Sirhan.

"Are you willing to die for it?"

"Yes sir, I'm willing to die for it."

Cooper then resumed questioning Sirhan, going line by line through the transcript of last Friday's blowup. Jurors then learned for the first time that Sirhan had tried to fire his three attorneys, change his plea to guilty and demand execution.

Cooper asked Sirhan if he hadn't done that because he was mad at the way his defense was going, and Sirhan admitted, "Sir, I was boiling."

Cooper revealed that Sirhan had exploded over defense plans to call about a dozen witnesses Sirhan didn't want to testify, including two girls, Gwendolyn Gum and Peggy Osterkamp, whose names appear repeatedly in his notebooks. Sirhan finally compromised when attorneys agreed not to call the girls, Cooper said.

Despite his wariness and obvious irritation at Compton's questioning, Sirhan remained composed. When angered, he did not appear confused, but more emphatic and vehement.

He insisted, as he did under defense questioning, that he was "an impulsive person, and what my reaction is is good for that time only." He said he believed disputes should be settled peacefully, admitted he hated Zionism and anyone who aided it, hated Kennedy for his support of Israel and loved him for his other views.

A string of conflicting statements tended to support the defense portrait of him as one whose hatreds turned on and off "like a water spigot":

—Sirhan quoted an Arabic proverb to explain why he hated Kennedy on the one hand: "A friend of my enemy is my enemy."

—But on the other hand, he didn't feel "all that much hate. I still liked him, sir. It was just when he said he would support the state of Israel."

Whenever Kennedy talked about Israel, Sirhan "would have blasted him, and I still would . . ."

—But, "after the provocation is removed, I no longer respond."

It was after a day of provocations introduced and removed, Sirhan testified, that he found himself inside the Ambassador last June 4, wandering from one election party to another.

He testified Wednesday that after target practicing that day and going off in a furious but futile search for a Zionist parade he'd heard about, he began party-hopping the night of June 4, going from a Wilshire Blvd. party to the Ambassador without even knowing Kennedy would be there.

He said he had two Tom Collins and vaguely recalls buying a third Collins and drinking part of that, and then deciding "I was quite high. I was alone. If I got any more drunk, there was nobody with me to take care of me if I got more drunk."

He decided to go home, he said, and walked back to his locked car, where he said he had left his pistol lying on the seat after leaving the target range that afternoon.

He said he got into the car and began to start it, but then "I couldn't picture myself driving the car home . . . I was too afraid to drive," he said, for fear he'd have an accident or get a ticket.

He decided to go back to the Ambassador, find some coffee, sober up, and then go home, he said.

"Did you pick up your gun?" Cooper asked.

Sirhan said he didn't remember. "I must have, but I don't remember. I've sworn to tell the truth."

As Sirhan described it, the next few hours were a confused wandering in search of coffee in unfamiliar parts of the hotel.

The prosecution contends that Sirhan was not under the influence of alcohol or drugs, and that a brief test for intoxication showed so conclusively that he was not drunk that they didn't give more exhaustive tests.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Focus On Stalking, Killing RFK

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Grim recital of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's remembrance of his stalking and fatal shooting of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy became the focus of the young Arab's murder trial today as the admitted slayer began his fourth day of testimony.

Sirhan is set to tell what, if anything, he recalls of the events of the night of June 4-5, when he followed the New York senator into a pantry of the Ambassador Hotel's Embassy Ballroom and shot him in the head.

His recollections follow on the heels of dramatic testimony yesterday in which he told of the blind rage which caused the killing.

It was an advertisement for a Miracle Mile celebration of the first (1963) anniversary of the six-day Arab-Israeli war that set him off on a wild ride over Los Angeles freeways which ended only when he shot Kennedy and was captured by the senator's aides. Sirhan testified yesterday.

The killing, according to his testimony, followed a tragedy of errors in which:

- He left a day's target shooting at the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club without unloading his .22 calibre eight-shot revolver.

- He became so enraged over plans for the Arab-Israeli victory celebration he "drove like a maniac" to Wilshire Boulevard not realizing he would be a day early for the parade.

- He went to the Ambassador after overhearing a chance remark about Kennedy's victory celebration while visiting the headquarters of then Sen. Thomas Kuchel.

Sirhan testified his rage was triggered by a Los Angeles

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/6/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kenselt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-31-709

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 7 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

*cc to Sirhan
3-7-69*

newspaper advertisement which read:

"Join the Miracle March for Israel on the Miracle Mile tomorrow, Wednesday, June 5, at 6 p.m. on Wilshire Boulevard. . . Six Days in June."

The young Arab said:

"Had I been dead, . . . it would have been better for me. . . The fire started burning inside me. . ."

Admitting he made a mistake about the date of the parade, Sirhan explained to Grant B. Cooper, his chief defense counsel:

"I was that burned up, sir. I thought it was that night."

Sirhan said he had little recollection of driving from Pasadena City College, where he had been visiting a friend, to Los Angeles.

He became lost, finally found Wilshire Boulevard and ended up at Kuchel's headquarters at a "dull" party, he said.

There, he heard of the Kennedy victory celebration and set off for the Ambassador, he said.

Sirhan testified that after seeing Kennedy at a campaign reception 47 hours before the shooting he "looked like a saint to me."

He had no thought of killing the senator when he went to the

hotel, he said, and in fact was not carrying his gun.

How he got the gun which, according to his sworn testimony, he left in the rear seat of his car parked on New Hampshire Street, is a mystery which should be solved by his testimony today.

Sirhan said he began the day before Kennedy's slaying with a decision not to go to the races, but to spend his time target shooting instead.

He arrived at the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club about noon, he said, and stayed there until the target range closed.

Sirhan testified he was particularly proud of his shooting that day. But he emphatically denied that the reason for his target practice was a rehearsal for Kennedy's murder.

"It was out of my mind, sir," he told Cooper.

When the gun range closed, his gun was loaded with eight soft-nosed minimag shells, Sirhan said. He did not unload it before leaving the range because he was having difficulty with the revolver's ejection mechanism.

Sirhan said he drove from the range to a restaurant near Pasadena City College where he dined with a friend.

They followed their dinner with a visit to the college, Sir-

han said, and then he planned to either head for home or attend a meeting of the Rosicrucian Order — mystical cult of which he was a follower.

"I was completely p—— off. . . These Zionists were trying to rub in the fact that they had beat the hell out of the Arabs one year before . . . I decided to go down and see what those— were up to."

Any anger he had, Sirhan insisted, was directed at ". . . these Jews . . . these Zionists."

He was "boiled up again" after reaching Wilshire and seeing another Jewish organization sign, he said.

Sirhan's testimony yesterday began with Cooper completing the reading of his diaries.

Sirhan admitted he had written of his sympathy for the Communist cause, but insisted he had never been a member of the Communist Party.

He swore it was he and he alone who shot Kennedy and that he had no accomplices. Nor, he said, was he in the employ of a foreign power at the time of the assassination.

He testified that although his diaries were in his handwriting, he had little memory of making many entries.

"I don't know. . . It must be doodling. . . I don't remember," were his increasingly frequent answers when Cooper pressed him to explain his writing.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Denies RFK Killing In Mind at Target Range

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, 24, on trial for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, continued testifying for the fourth day in his defense today. Following are highlights from yesterday's testimony under questioning of chief defense counsel Grant B. Cooper:

Q — On Tuesday the 4th of June, do you remember what time you got up?

A — About 9 . . . 9 or 10 o'clock.

Q — Between Sunday the second of June and Tuesday the 4th of June did you write anything in your notebook?

A — No, sir, not that I can recall.

Q — Did you, when you went to bed, tell yourself you were going to kill Robert F. Kennedy?

A — I don't remember doing that, sir.

Q — Did anything happen to change that point of view of Kennedy as a saint?

A — I don't know, sir. Because his willingness to send jets to Israel was still solidified in my mind.

Q — Then how did you think of him as a saint?

A — That was my reaction to him.

Q — But you still had the jets in the back of your mind?

A — Yes. I didn't like that at all.

Q — What were your plans for that Tuesday?

A — The Monday before I had asked my mother to give me the remainder of the money from my insurance compensation.

Q — You had turned over to her the money from your accident?

A — Yes. Most of it . . . to keep for me.

Q — Did she have some left?

A — Yes.

Q — Did she give it to you?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — What were you doing that day?

A — I planned to go to the races.

Q — What races?

A — Hollywood Park.

Q — Had you been going to the races?

A — For two weeks before, almost every day.

Q — Were you betting?

A — Yes.

Q — You didn't do too good at that?

A — Good and bad. I lost some bets.

Q — Did you have plans after the races?

A — No, sir.

Q — Not at all?

A — I didn't even go to the races that day. I read the race entries. I didn't like the horses.

Q — Did you have some idea about the Rosicrucians?

A — Yes, sir. That evening was a Tuesday night. The Tuesday night before I had attended the Rosicrucian meeting. I planned to attend that same meeting.

Q — Did you have an alternate plan?

A — Yes, to work on my car.

Q — What were you going to do?

A — Replace some tires. The front tires were worn.

Q — Mr. Sirhan . . .

A — Sirhan, please.

Q — All right, I've known you long enough. . . We were discussing the events of June 4, and you said you looked at the newspaper at the races.

A — Yes, at the race entries.

Q — What did you do that for?

A — I decided not to go.

Q — Why?

A — I did not like the entries.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-10 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/6/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-708

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 7 1969	
FBI — LOS ANGELES	

cc to [unclear]
3-7-69

Q—Was there some particular reason for that? Were the horses different?

A—I had been losing all the time before that.

Q—What did you do then?

A—The telephone rang. It was for my brother Adel, who was in bed. I went to his room . . . to inform Adel that there was a telephone call for him and he asked me if I was going to the track. That was the last time I saw Adel that day. When he was on the telephone I had the idea of going target shooting again.

Q—Where did you keep your gun? In a drawer?

A—In my room . . . sometimes on a chair . . . sometimes on a cushion, anywhere in the room.

Q—And then you drove somewhere? And what time did you arrive there?

A—I don't know exactly. . . On the way I stopped at the East Pasadena Firearms Co. to buy some ammo.

Q—That is the same place that is in evidence?

A—No, that is a different place.

Q—Your memory is better than mine. Anyway, where did you go?

A—I went to a restaurant for a few minutes. . . to stop for a cup of coffee before proceeding to the range.

Q—And you stopped at the gun shop in East Pasadena?

A—Yes.

Q—Did you have any ammunition with you?

A—Yes, mini-mag, and Federal long rifle, they're my favorite, and another brand with an "X" on it. I can't remember the name.

Q—On the fourth you bought more ammunition?

A—Yes.

Q—Do you remember what kind?

A—Yes. The East Pasadena store had a sale on long rifles.

Q—Then you went where?

A—To Fish Canyon.

Q—When did you arrive?

A—I don't know. . . say about noon.

Q—Mr. Buckner (range master at the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club in Fish Canyon Rd.) testified you arrived much earlier and left about noon.

A—No sir. He is totally wrong.

Q—Did you have a conversation with Mr. Buckner?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—Tell us about that conversation.

A—I just gave him my \$2 and . . . set up my targets.

Q—How long did you stay at the range?

A—From the time I arrived until . . . Mr. Buckner announced that the range was closed for the day.

Q—What kind of a shot are you?

A—With a good gun I consider myself a pretty good shot.

Q—With the gun you had with you what kind of a shot are you?

A—A pretty good shot.

Q—A witness testified you were shooting as fast as you could.

A—That is completely wrong. . . I had to squeeze the trigger. . . and when you target shoot you're not even supposed to know when the bullet expands.

Q—Was there someone else there?

A—There was an elderly man . . . he was a member of the NRA.

Q—The National Rifle Association?

A—Yes. . . and he had a box with all kinds of rifles and hand guns. . . one was a .22.

Q—Was he wearing some kind of special jacket?

A—Yes, a military jacket. . . and ear muffs to muffle the sound. I use cotton myself. He was the one that was doing it. . . shooting rapid fire. . . When those kids (earlier witnesses) said they thought they heard a .38 being fired. He had a .38.

Q—Did there come a time when you met an attractive blonde?

A—Don't interrupt me. . . First that other kid who said I was a good shot came to the range. . .

Q—All right. Did you have a conversation with him?

A—Yes. . . when he saw what I was using, he asked, "What are you using mini-mags for target shooting for?" . . . And he admonished me not to use them in my gun. . . I mean he asked me if my gun had the capacity for that high power. . .

Q — And at that time did you have it in mind to shoot Sen. Kennedy?

A — No, sir, I did not. . . It was totally off my mind.

Q — Did you say to Mr. Buckner, "I got to have shells that won't misfire."

A — No, sir, I did not. . . At least I don't recall saying that.

Q — Now can I get to the blonde girl? Some time that day you met a pretty girl. . . the one you saw on the witness stand. . . and you thought she was pretty at that time and you didn't know she was married.

Q — Did you strike up a conversation?

A — Yes.

Q — And after this event, I take it her husband came up?

A — Yes, but before her husband came up, I wanted to use the rest of my mini-mag. She had a brand new gun, and I wanted to. . . I wanted her new one. . . And about that time her husband came up, but I didn't know it was her husband.

Q — Eventually it came time to close?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — Was there an announcement over the loud speaker?

A — No, Mr. Buckner came and told us it was closing time. . . I had seven or eight mini-mags left, and I loaded my gun.

Q — After the announcement?

A — No, sir. I wanted to expend these in my own gun, but Mr. Buckner came over and I didn't expend them.

Q — Did you take the bullets out?

A — No, sir. I did not.

Q — Why didn't you unload the gun?

A — I was having trouble with the election.

Q — Were you saving these bullets to shoot Kennedy?

A — No, sir.

Q — Weren't you practicing to shoot Robert Kennedy?

A — No, I was so thrilled with my performance. . . that was all that was on my mind. . .

Q — Do you have any present recollection. . . of how many boxes of shells you had left?

A — Not full ones. . . just empty ones.

Q — When you finished shooting, where did you put the revolver?

A — On the back seat of my car.

Q — Out in the open?

A — Yes, in the open.

Q — Why?

A — I had no reason to hide it.

Q — Did you ever hear about a law about carrying a concealed weapon?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — Where did you go?

A — I started driving toward home. I drowned by Bob's Big Boy in Pasadena. It's adjacent to Pasadena City College.

Q — Did you get something to eat?

A — Yes, Sir, I did.

Q — How long did it take you to get there?

A — About 15 minutes.

Q — It was then about 5:50 p.m. or so?

A — I don't exactly remember. I didn't have a watch with me.

Q — There was something you ate?

A — A hamburger, some lettuce—a salad and some coffee.

Q — Did you see anyone?

A — Yes, Sir. At the counter there was a seat by a friend of mine.

Q — What was his name?

A — I don't know his whole name. He was an East Indian student named Mystri. While we waited for our dinner, we talked about everything, mostly about races. I was asking if he had gone. He said no. After we left Bob's restaurant we saw some newspaper machines on the sidewalk. He went and bought a newspaper, the Los Angeles Times. I said I wanted to buy one, too, to look over the race entries. But

I had no change so I said I would buy it later.

"He and I decided we would go to the Pasadena City College Student Center. We bought some lunch in the cafeteria.

Q—After you had eaten a hamburger?

A—Yes. There were seven or eight people there. I was the one who paid for the hot chocolate, so I had some change with me as we returned to our cars.

Q—It was a nice party there?

A—Yes. I talked about horses, telling them that class made a difference. So when we returned to our cars, his car was better than mine, and I said, "Hey, Mystri, I see you are moving up in class." He liked that.

Q—Was there something about newspapers?

A—I said I was going to buy it. He said, no, that he only wanted the classified section. He took out the classified section and gave me the rest of his paper. I challenged my friend to a game of pool in a pool place about half a block from Bob's. He turned me down.

"He said he had to get home to look up in the classified because he wanted to get a job that summer.

Q—Did you have in mind then to kill Kennedy?

A—No, Sir.

Q—What did you do?

A—I got in my car, leafed through the paper to find the sports section. Something caught my attention... an advertisement with a border to attract the attention of the reader.

Q—Tuesday, June 4, 1968, the Los Angeles Times, Page 18 of Part I—do you see on that page the advertisement you had seen?

A—Yes, sir, I do.

Q—Will you read it?

A—"Join the Miracle March for Israel on the Miracle Mile tomorrow Wednesday, June 5, at 6 p.m. on Wilshire Boulevard at Detroit Street... to the steps of the Los Angeles County Museum... Six days in June."

Q—What was your reaction to that?

A—That brought me back to the six days in June the previous year.

Q—What was your reaction then?

A—Had I been dead, Sir, it would have been better for me. I was completely p—off at American justice at that time.

Q—What was your feeling?

A—The fire started burning inside me. These Zionists were trying to rub in the fact that they had beat the hell out of the Arabs one year before.

Q—What did you do?

A—Before the newspaper, I had in mind going to the Rosicrucian meeting, but that was at 8 o'clock and in the meantime I had nothing to do. I wanted to change the tires or challenge my friend to a game of pool... I decided to go down to see what those s— were up to.

Q—What did you do?

A—I went down to Wilshire Boulevard. Mile, to where they were having that parade.

Q—But you made a mistake about the date?

A—Yes. I was that burned up, Sir. I thought it was that night.

Q—What did you do?

Q—How did you go?

A—By the Pasadena Freeway and the Hollywood Freeway, I think. Anyway I was driving, Sir, like a maniac. I missed the turnoffs. I didn't know where Wilshire Boulevard was.

Q—Do you remember passing something?

A—I don't remember what turn I took. After going off the Hollywood Freeway, I think so. I saw the Hollywood Palace or the Ice Palace or something like that. There was a very steep hill there.

Q—Did you get lost?

A—Yes, I did.

Q—Did you inquire as to directions?

A — Yes. At some gas station. I asked where Wilshire Boulevard was. He said just keep going this way. . . . I still didn't find it. I asked people when I stopped for red lights. I eventually got to it.

Q — Did you turn right or left, west or east?

A — I can't exactly remember, Mr. Cooper. I didn't know where the Miracle Mile was.

Q — Were you looking for something?

A — I kept driving on Wilshire Boulevard, looking for that parade. The way those Zionists go, I thought it was a big one.

Q — Where was your gun?

A — It was completely out of my mind.

Q — Where was it?

A — Where I had left it — on the back seat of the car.

Q — Were you going to shoot up the parade?

A — It was out of my mind. I just wanted to see what those (unprintable) were up to.

Q — Did you find them?

A — No, I didn't find them. I was ready to give up. Then driving by, I spotted a store with a very highly illuminated interior. I thought it had something to do with the parade. It was (former Sen. Thomas) Kuchel's headquarters. Having seen that, Sir, the parade . . . and not being able to find the parade, I decided to go in and see what was going on at Kuchel's store.

Q — His headquarters?

A — Yes, his headquarters.

Q — On People's Exhibit 35 (a photograph of the area) your car was found at the place marked X?

A — Yes. As I was driving, I took the next street and turned on it and parked my car so I could go down to Kuchel's. That was the only spot I found to park my car.

Q — Did you get out of the car?

A — Yes, Sir, and I locked

Q — Did you have your wallet?

A — I always had my wallet in my car when I drove.

Q — Did you take it with you?

A — No, Sir, I never carry

Q — Where was it?

A — I keep it in my glove compartment.

Q — Why?

A — I, Adel, Munir, my brothers and I have a mutual habit of never carrying our wallet with us.

Q — Where did you carry your money?

A — Loose in my own pockets.

Q — How much money did you have with you when you left the house Tuesday?

A — \$400 I took from my mother and \$50-\$60 more. I don't remember exactly.

Q — You bought chocolate for the kids at Pasadena, and a hamburger, and bullets at the store. How much did you spend that day?

A — \$10 or \$15.

Q — That much?

A — I don't remember exactly.

Q — How much were the bullets?

A — Seventy-five cents a box. Eighty-five cents at the range . . . there were a total of nine boxes.

Q — And you bought cokes?

A — Yes, Sir.

Q — It cost you \$2 to go to the range?

A — Yes.

Q — And you bought a hamburger?

A — Yes, and I paid for Mystri's.

Q — You had about \$420 left?

A — About that. I don't exactly remember how much.

Q — Did you have the revolver in your pocket?

A — No, Sir. My revolver was still in the back seat of my car.

Q — Did you walk to Kuchel's headquarters?

A — Yes, across Wilshire Boulevard to reach Kuchel's Headquarters. There were many people there dressed for a party.

Q — How were you dressed?

A — At that time blue pants, blue shirt, blue sweater on.

Q — Did you talk to anyone?

A — No, I just went in and looked around.

Q — Was there music?

A — No ... there were some television cameras and bright lights. And some liquor ... some people were drinking liquor.

Q — Did you have any liquor?

A — No, Sir, I did not have any liquor there.

Q — What happened?

A — Some boys said there was a bigger party down at the Ambassador Hotel, so I said I was on Wilshire Boulevard and couldn't see the parade, I might as well go down there and see what was going on.

Q — On the second of June when you were in the Ambassador Hotel did you learn about the party on the fourth of June?

A — No. I did not know it. If there was an announcement I did not know it.

Q — You learned about it when you were at Kuchel's party?

A — Yes.

Q — What made you think it was a public party?

A — Curiosity made me go.

Q — What made you think you could go to it?

A — The boys, they started to go themselves.

Q — Was the Kuchel party lively?

A — Dull—I thought it was. Forgive me, any of the Kuchel supporters.

Q — Did you walk to the Ambassador Hotel?

A — Yes.

Q — Did you see anything?

A — Yes. As I left the Kuchel store, it was downhill ... one, two, three, four stories down. And there was a big sign that some Jewish organization ... Zionists, whatever, that made me burn. It boiled me up again, because I couldn't see anything and there it was. It frustrated me.

Q — You went on to the hotel?

A — I went the same way up that same long walk. By that day they had removed that sign about Santa Anita. On Tuesday there were many more people in the Ambassador in the corridor and in the main lobby where the shops were than there had been Sunday.

Q — Did you notice something about the people?

A — They were all dressed up.

Q — What about their nationalities?

A — There were quite a few of my own complexion.

Q — And blacks?

A — Yes.

Q — And tan complexions?

A — Yes.

Q — Did you walk up those same winding stairs you had walked up Sunday night?

A — Yes.

Q — Were there a lot of people?

A — The whole place was milling with people. ... There were television cameras and a whole lot of bright lights.

Court recessed for the day at this point. The following questions and answers took place at the early morning and early afternoon sessions of the trial, with the first questions relating to excerpts from Sirhan's diaries.

Q — Then it says "dig your well before your first one. Through my readings of Mohandos (sic) Ghandi ... I am a devout student of Mohandos Ghandi. His powers of mind have always fascinated me. I have tried to emulate them but your teachings are very similar to Ghandi's." Did this refer to the Rosicrucians?

A — I don't know. I don't remember.

Q — Then on page 123: "I advocate the overthrow of the current President of the — United States of America. I have no absolute plans yet, but soon will compose some. I am poor. This country's propaganda says that she is the best country in the world. I have not experienced this yet. The U.S. says that life in Russia is bad—why? Supposedly no average American has ever lived in a Slavic society, so how can he tell if it is good or bad—isn't his government putting words in his mouth."

"Anyway, I believe that the U.S. is ready to start declining, not that it hasn't—it began in November 23, '63—But it should decline at a faster rate so that the real Utopia will not be too far from being

talking about it. If my brother told him if he came up to our house, I would buy it.

Q — Munir had the money for it?

A — It was my money that paid for the gun. After Munir's work, we met the man. We walked over to a corner where he was parked and bought the gun.

Q — I thought your brother paid \$25 and you paid the rest?

A — No sir, I'm the one who paid.

Q — Why did you buy the gun?

A — It was cheap.

Q — Did you have some use for it?

A — I thought it had some use. It was a good gun. It appealed to me.

Q — What did you intend to do with it?

A — Shoot it.

Q — Shoot at what?

A — At a shooting range.

Q — On 2nd June, 1967, in one of your writings, you said something about some revolution, but you hadn't planned your weapons yet. Can you explain that?

A — I can't. As long as my pen was in my hand, I meant what was in the writing. That was all.

Q — You had forgotten that goal?

A — Yes.

Q — It turned off like a water spigot?

A — That is my nature, sir.

Q — You forgot?

A — It passed from my mind. That was all there was to it.

Q — In the Rosicrucians you learned to write down your goals. Did you have a goal?

A — At the time, whatever I said in those papers — damn it, I meant it, sir. If I had had the opportunity, I would have acted.

Q — Did you write it down because you wanted to accomplish it?

A — At the time.

Q — Did you shoot your gun?

A — Yes, sir I did.

Q — When was that?

A — Almost directly after I quit working at that health food store in March.

Q — Where did you shoot it?

A — At that same range I was at on June 4th — the San Gabriel Gun Club.

Q — How many times were you on the gun range?

A — About six times.

Q — What ones?

A — I went to the same gun range, San Gabriel, and to the Pomona Police Range.

Q — Why did you practice?

A — I liked to. I didn't have any work at the time.

Q — Did you do it so you would be proficient in your revolution?

A — Sir, that was completely out of my mind at the time. I was more interested in target practicing.

Q — Saturday, the 1st of June, did you go to a gun range?

A — Yes, sir, I did.

Q — What one?

A — I planned to go to San Gabriel, but it was so crowded, so I decided to drive over to the Pomona Police Range.

Q — Sometime during Sunday the 2nd, did you see some article or advertisement that brought to your attention that Senator Robert Kennedy would be at the Ambassador Hotel?

A — Yes, sir, but that was late in the afternoon.

Q — What did you do in early afternoon?

A — Again I went to the San Gabriel Gun Club, but because that was so crowded, I went to the Pomona Police Range. There I was thwarted. They were only allowing large bore guns, and mine was a small-bore gun.

Q — Did you do any shooting?

A — No, sir, I did not.

Q — When did you see the article?

A — On the way home, I bought a Los Angeles Times Sunday edition.

Q — What did you observe?

A — There was a big advertisement that caught my attention inviting the public to come down and see and hear Robert Kennedy at the Ambassador Hotel. It said: "You and your friends are invited to come down." I thought I was as eligible as anyone else to go down and hear Robert Kennedy speak.

Q — On May 18th, you had written that Senator Robert

F. Kennedy much die and that he must die by June 5, 1963.

A — Yes, sir.

Q — When you read this on Sunday, the 2nd of June, did you have in mind going to the Ambassador Hotel for the purpose of killing Robert F. Kennedy?

A — No, sir, I did not.

Q — Why not?

A — That was completely forgotten from my mind.

Q — You forgot?

A — That emotion was good as long as I was writing it. Something for a time only.

Q — What about your emotional feeling about Israelis?

A — Palestine refugees. I have no feelings about Israelis.

Q — Well, then, Zionists. Did that feeling leave you?

A — No, that feeling never left me.

Q — In May, you had heard Senator Kennedy advocate sending bombers to Israel. Did you forget that?

A — No. Every time I was provoked, I would have written it that way. My feeling about Robert Kennedy was only good as long as I was writing that stuff.

Q — Did you go to the Ambassador Hotel?

A — Yes.

Q — Had you ever been there before?

A — I didn't even know where it was, sir.

Q — What time did you arrive at the Ambassador?

A — About six, or seven of seven-thirty.

Q — What entrance did you use?

A — The entrance off Wilshire Boulevard. It was a very long drive, sir. Midway on the walk there was a bulletin board. I stood by the bulletin board.

Q — Was there something on it?

A — Yes, something that really surprised me. A bus schedule that gave time of a bus leaving for Santa Anita. Santa Anita was closed at the time. That really bugged me.

Q — Did you walk to the lobby?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — Did you see anyone?

A — Yes, a policeman and a guard. I showed him the ad and he directed me to the room where the reception would be.

Q — Did you go there?

A — Yes.

Q — Were there many people?

A — Hundreds and hundreds.

Q — Did you have the gun with you?

A — No, sir.

Q — What did you do with it?

A — I left it at home, sir.

Q — Did you leave the room where the reception was being held?

A — Yes, it was too hot. There were too many bright lights.

Q — Did you intend to come back?

A — Yes, sir. I liked the room. At the other end of the lobby, there was some coffee and cookies.

Q — Did you get some coffee?

A — Yes, sir. I stayed in the lobby as long as I had the coffee with me. Then I went back to the room and I was stopped because Robert Kennedy was addressing the people there. They said he would come outside to accommodate the people who couldn't get in.

Q — You waited?

A — Yes.

Q — Why did you wait to see Robert Kennedy?

A — I came down to see him. I might as well see him.

Q — Did you stand on the steps by the concourse?

A — Yes.

Q — How long did you wait?

A — With all the excitement, sir, I couldn't keep track of any time.

Q — About half an hour?

A — About that.

Q — Did you listen to his speech?

A — Yes.

Q — What was the substance of it?

A — The substance was that it was almost election, 48 hours before election. He encouraged his supporters to go out for the last drive. And he sang with a movie star.

Q — Did you enjoy yourself?

A — I was really thrilled, sir.

Q — Was it the first time you had seen Robert Kennedy?

A — Yes. My whole attitude toward him changed. Everytime before, I had associated him with wanting to send jets to Israel. I thought he was a villain, but that night he looked like a saint to me.

Q — ou honestly mean that?

A — Yes, he looked like a saint to me. I liked him.

Q — Did you go browsing around looking for a kitchen?

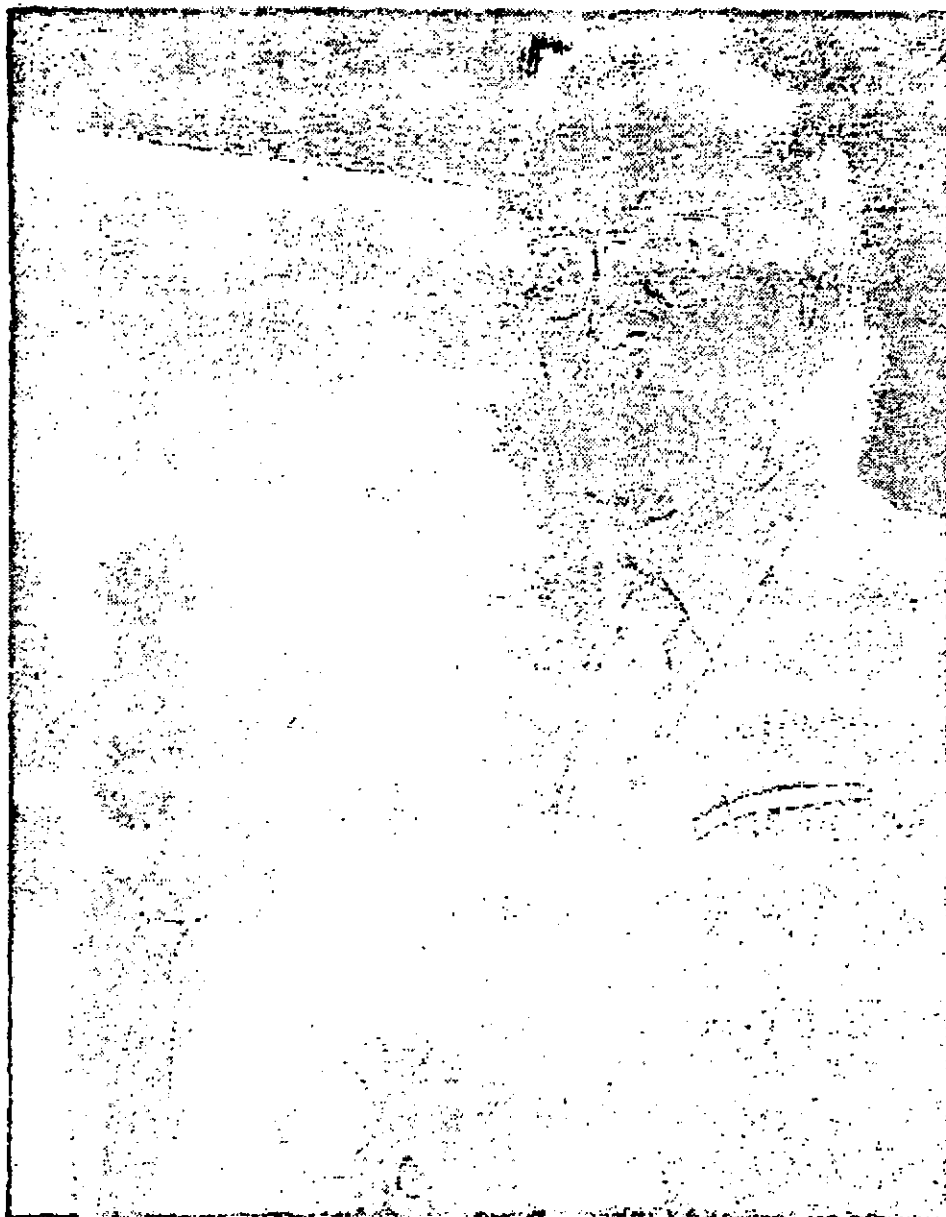
A — No, sir, I did not. That lady who said I was there in my own words, sir, they were complete liars.

Q — You mean they were mistaken?

A — No. They swore to tell the truth and they didn't.

Q — You were not where they said you were?

A — Not where they described. I was in the lobby and in the room where the rally was supposed to be.



Herald-Examiner Photo

ATTORNEY GRANT COOPER, RIGHT, WITH SIRHAN SIRHAN
Cooper is chief of team defending Jordanian in Kennedy murder trial

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

"CORRIDOR" ROWS STIR TRIAL

London Barrister Joins Sirhan Defense Team

By AL STUMP

World-Examiner Staff Writer

Outside-courtroom explosions, unknown to the Sirhan trial judge and jury, enliven the proceedings almost daily.

The mysterious Issa Nahlileh—recently an added spectator to the array of legal talent defending Sirhan—hovered in the background until a San Francisco radio reporter tossed a few political questions at him. Nahlileh burned, fumed—then let anger erupt.

"Just why are you here?" inquired the reporter. The ruddy-faced, portly, Western-dressed lawyer, identified in court as "director of the Palestinian-Arab delegation to the United Nations," replied that he had come as an observer. "A group from my homeland interested in Sirhan's welfare put me on my way from New York," he said.

His legal affiliation? "Member of the British bar!" snapped Nahlileh, his accent more Chelsea-Mayfair than middle-Eastern.

"Aren't you really here to cool off Sirhan when he becomes a most uncontrollable and raves in court that he wants to plead guilty, fire his lawyers?" the reporter probed.

Nahlileh reddened. Launching into the statement that Sirhan was a victim of circumstance—

the circumstance being that the Kennedy killer witnessed Arabs forced from their homeland by Zionists and as a child lived in a blood bath—he was making good headway when came another question.

"What about Robert Kennedy—how do you feel about him?"

"He was a victim, too," shot back the visiting attorney. "If the United States hadn't sold arms to the Israelis, he'd be alive today. He was a hero and a victim."

Question: "Then you justify political murder?"

At that, Nahlileh's eyes bulged and he shouted, "What do you think your country is doing right now in Vietnam?"

He went on to describe the supply of Panther jet fighters to Israel by the U.S. as "a giant stupidity" and...

ing when the reporter switched off a tape-recorder in his briefcase and walked away.

Mary Sirhan, the mother, now feels free to walk out of the Hall of Justice, without a lawyer or

guard at her side. Previously, she never left the building except under escort.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-3 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/6/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: Al Stump
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kenseit

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-37-707

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 7 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-7-69

She and Munir, 21-year-old brother of Sirhan, strolled down Broadway this week and, far from drawing the crowds of the past, went unnoticed by everyone except a young Negro girl.

The girl said nothing, only approached and took Mary Sirhan's hand, which she tenderly patted.

This is the emotion the little woman from St. Paul Street in Jerusalem evokes from most people.

Munir was unhappy with testimony from Adel Sirhan, an elder brother, that "after the fall" (Sirhan's headlong tumble from a horse he was exercising), Sirhan sometimes acted violently or went into seances over lighted candles.

"Why did they have to bring that up?" asked Munir, outside the courtroom, after Adel told of a fight between Munir and Sirhan.

It happened at night, when Adel was in bed, at the family's Pasadena home, and he had to break up the brotherly brawl.

"There was a bloody nose and broken glasses," he told the jury.

"Whose nose and glasses?" he was asked.

"Munir's," he replied. Sirhan, he said, was doing the swinging.

It is not known whether two Corona eye specialists, who examined Sirhan after he was bruised and bloodied after falling from the horse Ky-Vera, will be called as witnesses.

However, Dr. Paul Nilsson, Corona ophthalmologist, told The Herald-Examiner: "Dr. Milton Miller examined him (Miller and Nilsson are associates) and so did I, and we found nothing particularly wrong with his eye. He had 20-20 vision with perception sharper in the left eye than in the right. His upper left eyelid had been lacerated but had healed well."

Nilsson continued, "When we refused to certify him injured to the point of collecting insurance money, Sirhan phoned Dr. Miller and said, 'If you don't fill out those insurance papers the way I want, it'll be too bad for you.'"

Were the doctors worried about the threat?

"Yes, we were," said Nilsson. "He had a way of spitting out the words which you couldn't forget."

Sirhan collected, eventually, \$2000 from the insurance carrier of his employer.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Kennedy 'Looked Like a Saint' at First Sight, Sirhan Testifies

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Only two nights before he shot and fatally wounded Robert F. Kennedy, Sirhan Bishara Sirhan saw the senator in person for the first time and was "really thrilled . . . He looked like a saint to me. I liked him," the accused assassin testified Wednesday.

The statement was startling to spectators at the murder trial. On Tuesday, they had heard Sirhan admit to murderous rage at Sen. Kennedy's pro-Israel views.

The Jordanian testified on Wednesday that his first encounter with the New York senator occurred June 2 when Kennedy was surrounded by movie stars and singing a song with singer Andy Williams at the Ambassador.

"I was really thrilled, sir," Sirhan told his defense lawyer, Grant B. Cooper. "My whole attitude toward him changed when I saw him that night. Before, I'd associated Kennedy with his statements about the Phantom jets to aid Israel and I pictured him as a villain, but that night he looked like a saint to me. I liked him."

Speaking publicly for the first time about his activities last June 4, the eve of the shooting, Sirhan said he arrived at the Ambassador after getting lost while looking for a Jewish parade on Wilshire Blvd.

He had not known that Kennedy would be at the hotel that night, Sirhan said. All thoughts about Kennedy and memories of the written determination to assassinate the senator were completely out of Sirhan's mind, the defendant testified.

Cooper's questioning revealed Sirhan's murderous impulses toward Kennedy — chronicled in the Jordanian's school notebook. These impulses emerged as fitful flashes of

hate, violent at the time they were written and forgotten when the notebook was closed.

Over and over, Sirhan insisted that he couldn't remember the actual writing, even though he confirmed that it was his, and said that after he finished writing of his plans to kill Kennedy the entries "were completely forgotten from my mind."

As questioning wore on through the second full day of testimony from the 24-year-old Arab, Cooper had elicited these emotional patterns: murderous hate for anyone expressing sympathy for Zionist aims; a perplexing warmth toward Kennedy for his views on other subjects, and an abrupt forgetting of political considerations when confronted by Kennedy in person.

The prosecution, which will begin its cross-examination today, will attempt to prove that it was not completely by accident that Sirhan, having written in May of his intent to kill Kennedy, wound up at the Ambassador with a gun the night of June 4.

But as Sirhan told it Wednesday, the entire day of June 4 had been a haphazard day of often-changed plans.

Cooper referred to Sirhan's notebook entries and asked, "Did you intend to kill him then?"

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/6/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-746

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 6 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

celebration
3-6-69

'Notebook Forgotten'

"No, sir, I did not. The notebook was completely forgotten in my mind."

He did not have a gun with him that night, Sirhan added.

He also denied that that night he had been in the kitchen area where Kennedy was shot two nights later. Two prosecution witnesses testified earlier that they got lost in the hotel corridors and ran across Sirhan in the pantry area the night of June 2. Sirhan said Wednesday the witnesses were, "in my opinion, complete liars." They swore to tell the truth and they didn't.

On Tuesday, June 4, Sirhan said, he planned to spend the day betting on the horses at Hollywood Park, but after checking the paper he decided he didn't like the entries, so he went target shooting instead.

He was at the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club from about noon until 5 p.m., when the range closed. He denied earlier testimony that he practiced rapid-firing; an elderly man nearby was doing that for about an hour, Sirhan said, but not he.

When the range closed, he said, he had eight bullets left in the gun and intended to expend those last shots, but the range-master's order came before he could do it. So Sirhan put the loaded gun on the back seat of his car—"so if I got a traffic ticket I don't have to explain"—and started for home. He didn't unload the gun, he said, because it was difficult to eject the bullets. They had to be pried out with a screwdriver, he said.

Later, he saw an ad in The Times which said "Join the Miracle March for Israel" and then described a Jewish parade down Wilshire Blvd., concluding with the phrase "Six Days in June."

"That brought me back to the six days in June of the previous year," Sirhan said, referring to the 1967 Israeli-Arab war. "I should have been dead for those six days. . . This fire started burning inside of me. . . These Zionists, Jews, whatever the hell they are, were trying to rub in the fact that they beat the hell out of the Arabs."

Sirhan said he was so infuriated that "I was off to go down to see what those God-damned sons of bitches were up to. . . I was driving like a maniac."

In his anger, Sirhan said, he thought the parade was that night. Actually, it was held the following night, June 5.

Becomes Lost

He became lost, Sirhan said, and since he hadn't been home, the loaded pistol was still on the back seat of the car. But, he said, "the gun was completely out of my mind."

Not finding the parade, he instead stopped at the lighted headquarters of former Sen. Thomas H. Kuchel, where an election party was in progress. Kuchel had been defeated. "It was pretty dull," he said—smiling broadly to the spectators he added, "Forgive me, any Kuchel supporters"—and then he heard two boys say they were going to "a bigger party at the Ambassador."

He finally found the Ambassador and when he parked and locked his car, he left the gun on the back seat.

In earlier testimony Wednesday, Cooper told of Sirhan's interest in the Rosicrucians Digest, which printed an article titled "Put It In Writing."

"Plan to dare something different, something exciting," it said, and then write down the plan. "See how it gains momentum in the simple process of writing it down . . . Somehow, writing it down feeds the data into your subconscious mind a little quicker . . . Set a target date, then start working to make it come true."

On May 18, Sirhan wrote "Robert F. Kennedy must be assassinated before 5 June '68." And on June 5, Sirhan shot and killed him.

This mental chain of events was laid bare as Cooper read methodically through the reading and writing that made up Sirhan's thinking.

Mystical Cult Magazine

The Rosicrucian Digest is a monthly magazine published by the Ancient Mystical Order of the Rose-Croix, a mystical cult headquartered in San Jose. Sirhan became a member in June, 1966.

Sirhan has testified that he believed he could develop his mental powers to the point where he could produce psychic phenomena, such as visual delusions and thought transference.

Cooper also introduced into evidence the explosive two pages which he argued successfully two weeks ago were "too inflammatory" to be placed before the jury.

These pages, kept from evidence then but released to the press, contained Sirhan's wholesale endorsement of all forms of communism—even conflicting forms—and an angry attack on the United States.

Cooper read the pages aloud and later explained to newsmen that defense psychiatrists felt the writings had a strong bearing on Sirhan's state of mind—which is the key issue in whether Sirhan is sentenced to death or simply imprisoned.

Cooper droned hypnotically through page after page of meaningless, undecipherable sentences, half-sentences and even parts of words.

"We believe that Robert F. Kennedy must be sacrificed for the cause of the poor, exploited people," read one entry.

Sirhan said, however, that he was not involved with anyone in the plan and couldn't remember why he wrote "We believe."

"The hand that is doing this writing will do the slaying of the above-mentioned victim," read another.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SENATOR'S SUPPORT FOR ISRAEL TURNED KEY Love for Kennedy Became Hate, Sirhan Says

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

When Sirhan Bishara Sirhan first learned last May of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy's support for Israel, he hated him so much that "if he were in front of me, the way I felt then, so help me God, he would have died. Right then and there."

"He was doing a lot of things behind my back that I didn't know about," Sirhan testified angrily Tuesday. "It just burned me up."

"Up to that time," he continued, "I loved Robert Kennedy. I cared for him very much. I hoped he'd win the Presidency."

But a television documentary on Sen. Kennedy's career at the height of the campaign last May informed Sirhan—for the first time, he said Tuesday—of the senator's support for Israel. Sen. Kennedy was shown in Israel in 1948, celebrating the creation of the Jewish state. Sirhan, who was 4 at that time and living in Jerusalem, said he had never known of this.

His love of Sen. Kennedy turned to hate, he testified, and a few days later, on May 18, wrote: "Robert F. Kennedy must be assassinated before 5 June '68"—the first anniversary of the Arab-Israeli six-day war.

Sirhan was only 17 minutes off his target date. It was 12:17 a.m. June 5 when he fired a .22-caliber bullet

into Sen. Kennedy's brain at an election victory party at the Ambassador. Sen. Kennedy died 25 hours later.

Sirhan's anger at his victim's pro-Israel views cropped up repeatedly Tuesday as Sirhan unveiled a lifetime of loathing for Zionism and the state of Israel. Sen. Kennedy's views, said Sirhan, showed him to be "not all the good guy he claimed himself to be."

The defendant said he heard a local radio broadcast on Sen. Kennedy at "some Jewish club in Beverly Hills," where Sen. Kennedy had repeated his support of military aid to Israel.

At that, Sirhan added, he became so angry that he glared into his bedroom mirror, practicing a mental exercise taught by a mystical cult, until he saw Sen. Kennedy's face in the mirror rather than his own.

"I can't prove it, sir," he told defense attorney Grant B. Cooper, "but I saw his face in the mirror. I was that burned up about him."

But Sen. Kennedy was not Sirhan's only intended victim, testimony revealed Tuesday. In a page-by-page reading of Sirhan's controversial notebooks—with Sirhan eagerly reading along and laughing sheepishly at the frequent incoherence of them—Cooper found President Johnson and former U.N. Ambassador Arthur Goldberg marked for possible death.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/5/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Vick P. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-725

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 5 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

10

cc to Bureau
3-5-69

Theodore Herzl convened the first international Zionist conference in 1897, he said, and propounded the movement's aim to create a Jewish state.

They chose Palestine, he said, and began to buy land there and to influence Jews in the bigger nations to exert pressure on their governments in support of the creation of Israel.

At Herzl's death in 1904, Chaim Weizmann inherited leadership of the Zionist movement and sought British support in turning over Palestine to the Zionists, he said.

With England's Balfour declaration of 1917, he said, England made "a deal" with the Zionists in which, in exchange for the pressure of U.S. Jews on the United States to aid the Allies in World War I, England would later make Palestine a Jewish state.

But, Sirhan said, England also "made a deal" with the Arabs, whereby Palestine would be made independent in exchange for Arab nations' support of England against the Turks and the Germans.

Finally, Sirhan said, England also made a "deal" with France, in which the two countries secretly planned to divide the Arab nations between themselves.

Blames England

After the war, he said, England stood by her agreement with the Zionists and scrapped the deal with the Arabs.

Meanwhile, Sirhan went on—and he reeled off an amazing string of statistics—the Zionists had increased Palestine's Jewish population from 56,000 in 1917 to about 650,000 by 1948. During this time, he said, the Arab population grew from about 700,000 to 1.3 million.

He said the Arabs knew they would be taken over by the Zionists, regarded the trend as "imperialism on the part of the West," but were ignored when they tried to plead their cause.

In all, Sirhan created a lecture atmosphere that gave rise to grave doubts in the minds of his hearers as to the accuracy of his IQ test, reported last week as 89, slightly below the 90-110 range considered average.

The chaotic scribbles in Sirhan's notebook revealed the names of three girls Sirhan had known. There was one reference to "Janice" and dozens to: "Gwendolyn Gum, Gwen Gum, Gwen, Gwen, Peggy, Peggy, Peggy Peggy, I love you Peggy . . . Sol & Peggy, Sol & Ostercamp . . . I love you Peggy, . . ." Sol was Sirhan's nickname.

Denies 'Crush'

Janice was believed to be Janice Elaine Duce, an exercise girl, at the race horse ranch in Corona where Sirhan worked. Miss Ostercamp also was an exercise girl there. Sirhan denied any crush on Miss Ostercamp, but admitted she was "tall and beautiful." He once bought a soft drink for her in Newport Beach, but said they never dated.

Miss Gum was a coed at Pasadena City College and once, when she was in a beauty contest, Sirhan bought \$10 worth of votes for her at a nickel or dime a vote. Although he tried to date her, she never went out with him.

At other disjointed parts of the notebook, Sirhan wrote:

"I always seem to be on the loosing (sic) end, always exploited to the fullest." ("I must have been a maniac at the time," Sirhan interrupted as that was read.)

"Long live Nasser." ("I'm a great admirer of President Nasser," he said.)

"Long live communism." ("It's a very long jump between Nasser and communism," he interjected.)

"Nasser is the greatest man that ever lived in this world."

"I have often wondered how it feels to be rich, rich, rich, rich, rich."

After more than an hour of confirming his fragmented writing, Sirhan told Cooper, "All this sounds like a crazy man writing."

"Do you feel you're crazy?" asked Cooper. "Do you think you're completely normal?"

"No, sir, I'm not crazy," Sirhan said.

As with the Kennedy reference, Sirhan said he couldn't remember writing of an intent to kill Mr. Johnson or Goldberg, but admitted he must have, since the notes were in his hand. Once he said, "It is not me, sir. It is not Sirhan, sitting right here, that wrote that... I couldn't write that without provocation."

Cooper asked: "Did you ever have in mind killing President Johnson?"

"No," he said, "but I hated his guts at one point. He said the United States supports the territorial integrity of all nations, and he stressed all nations," he added sarcastically, tapping an index finger for emphasis.

Phrase Repeated

Goldberg, Sirhan said, had repeated Mr. Johnson's phrase—"and he said A-L-L-L nations. He made that a hell of a long A-L-L-L."

"Should he have died for that?" asked Cooper.

"Why not?" Sirhan rejoined tartly. "He didn't stick to his word."

At one point he told Cooper: "Anything involving Zionism invokes this response in me. Zionism is more inimical to me than communism is to you."

In morning testimony, Sirhan astonished spectators at his murder trial with an impassioned—and accurate—discourse on the growth of Zionism, Palestinian history and England's behind-the-scenes agreements on Palestine's future.

He also calmly described a mystical experiment in which he plunged his hand into boiling water, "thought cool," and didn't get burned. He also turned candle flames different colors just by thinking about it, he said, adding, "I can't prove it, but God damn it, I did."

Sirhan revealed a deep study and intense hatred of Zionism in his pell-mell delivery. He faltered only once in the virtuoso performance.

Sagging forward in the witness stand, he paused, said "I'm too nervous," and sat quietly while a glass of water was brought. After a couple minutes rest, he resumed his staccato recitation of the spread of Zionism throughout his homeland.

His delivery was punctuated with occasional profanities—"These God damned Zionists!" he snapped at one point—and he told forcefully how he felt Zionism had affected his own life as a refugee.

The late President John F. Kennedy figured in a poignant moment in Sirhan's testimony, when Cooper asked:

"How did you feel about John F. Kennedy?"

Tells Love for JFK

"I loved him, sir," said Sirhan. "I loved him more than any American would have."

Sirhan explained that before Mr. Kennedy's assassination Nov. 22, 1963, in Dallas, he (Kennedy) was working with the Arab nations to secure a just settlement of the Palestinian refugee problem.

Sirhan's hatred of Zionists—which he took pains to differentiate from non-Zionist Jews—cropped up over and over as he testified that "prior to 1948, before the Zionists," the Jews and Arabs of Palestine "were living very amicably, in great harmony."

But the long-term aims of Zionism, culminating in the 1948 partition of Palestine and the creation of Israel as a Jewish state, destroyed the old Jewish-Arab relationship, he said.

Since 1948, he testified, the situation has worsened as Zionism in Israel has strengthened.

Sirhan also differentiated, in testimony on the six-day Israeli-Arab war in June, 1967, between "the Arab bloc" and "Palestinian Arabs."

He said the Arab cause in that war—though he felt the Arabs were in the right and were the victims of Israeli aggression—could not be equated with the cause of Palestinian Arabs. "Nasser has nothing to do with the struggle of the Palestinian people," Sirhan said.

Sirhan spoke of modern Zionism's aims in a quiet, scholarly way at first, then with rising voice.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan: Hounded by Frustrations

Following is the dramatic and revealing testimony given yesterday by Sirhan Bishara Sirhan at his trial for the murder of U.S. Sen. Robert F. Kennedy:

Q—In your Arab schools what were your teachers?

A—They were Arabs, sir, but they had some foreign orientation.

Q—You mean they spoke English.

A—Yes sir.

Q—In 1956 you were 11 years old.

A—About that, yes.

Q—Do you remember anything about the Suez crisis?

A—Yes sir.

Q—How did you learn about it?

A—From news reports, and radio. We lived through it.

Q—What did you learn.

A—That Israel had launched another aggression against the Arab people . . . making more misery for the Arabs.

Q—What did the teacher tell you?

A—He gave us a lecture on this is the wrong way of what should be done. We should have negotiations . . . to discuss our differences and problems.

Q—A decision was made that you would come to the United States?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—I assume somebody in the family told you about it?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—What were your feelings?

A—I was hesitant. I didn't want to leave. I wanted to stay in my country with my people.

Q—What about the conditions in your country?

A—I thought, sir, they would subside eventually.

Q—You ran away?

A—Yes, sir, I did.

Q—Where did you go?

A—From Jerusalem to Ramallah, a distance of ten to 15 miles.

Q—You had relatives there?

A—Yes, sir, they all lived near us in 1948.

Q—When you ran away, did you stay all night?

A—After eight or nine hours, I became lonely, and I missed my family. I came back.

Q—Did you get a little hungry, too?

A—Yes.

Q—Then where did you go?

A—To New York.

Q—How many of the family were on the trip?

A—I, Munir, Adel, Ayda and my parents.

Q—Where were your other brothers?

A—They were in Jordan.

Q—And eventually you arrived in California?

A—Yes.

Q—Did you live with someone when you arrived?

A—Yes, we were met by our sponsor at the train. His name was Haldor Liliens.

Q—How long did you live with them?

A—I don't remember exactly. It was about two or three weeks.

Q—And did you go to school then?

A—Yes. Longfellow Elementary School.

Q—And then where did you live when you moved?

A—We secured a home of our own. We rented it. It was at 1321 N. Mentor St. That has been torn down now.

Q—And you went to school?

A—Yes, Munir and I did.

Q—Did your mother get a position of work.

A—Yes.

Q—Where was that?

A—In the nursery school at the Westminster Presbyterian Church.

Q—How long did your father remain with you?

A—About six or eight months.

Q—And when did you start school here?

A—In early February of 1957.

Q—And after six or seven months . . . ?

A—He returned to Jordan.

Q—And how long was he away from you?

A—Ever since.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-10 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/5/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-704

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 6 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-6-69

Q—In September of 1957, you went to another school?

A—Yes, I was enrolled at John Marshall Junior High School.

Q—Did you graduate?

A—No. We had moved out of the school district of John Marshall so I had to transfer to Elliott Junior High School.

Q—Was this when your mother and sister bought the home?

A—No, that was two or three years before we bought the home.

Q—Where did you move?

A—To 1647 N. Lake.

Q—It was necessary for you to go to another school?

A—Yes, sir, it was.

Q—What school was that?

A—Elliott Junior High School.

Q—How long were you there?

A—Until I graduated from Junior High School there.

Q—You did graduate?

A—Yes, sir, I did.

Q—Then what school did you attend?

A—John Marshall High School (later corrected to John Muir).

Q—Did you live in the same place?

A—No, we had moved to the place where my mother and sister bought the house.

Q—How many years were you at John Muir?

A—Three years, from '60 to '63.

Q—Your grades were reasonably good?

A—Yes, sir, they were.

Q—Did you get along well with other students and teachers?

A—Yes, sir, I did.

Q—They accepted you?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—You were graduated?

A—I was.

Q—When did you graduate?

A—June, 1963.

Q—How long were you enrolled at Pasadena City College?

A—Three semesters, sir, and I was dismissed the fourth.

Q—During this time, did Ayda become ill?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—You were dismissed from school because of absences. In those absences reported, why did you miss school?

A—I had to nurse my sister.

Q—Were all those absences because of taking care of your sister?

A—I can't truthfully say that all of them were. But 95 per cent of them were.

Q—On what other occasions were you absent?

A—At that time I liked to go to the races.

Q—After you were dismissed from Pasadena City College, what did you do?

A—Having developed, sir, a love for the horses, I decided to try to ride them, to become a jockey.

Q—Did you get a job?

A—In August of 1965, I went down to Santa Anita and asked for a job.

Q—What kind of job was it?

A—I told my prospective employer I didn't know anything about horses, but I wanted to learn. I offered to work free for him to see how well I would do. I did work free for two or three weeks.

Q—What were your duties?

A—Just cleaning out stalls and walking horses.

Q—What did you weigh then?

A—About 110 pounds.

Q—How tall are you?

A—Five feet, four and a half inches.

Q—Were you permitted to ride horses?

A—No, not at the beginning. I was only allowed to walk them, groom them and clean them.

Q—Did you ever ride while you worked there?

A—In the latter part of the five months, I was allowed to ride one of the easier ones.

Q—You wanted to be a jockey?

A—Yes.

Q—You terminated your employment at Santa Anita?

A—Yes, I felt confident enough to ride more of the easier horses.

Q—What did you do after that?

A—I secured a job at the Altfillisch Ranch in Corona.

Q—Was there an accident at the Altfillisch Ranch?

A—Yes.

Q—When did this happen?

A—It was 7:30 or 8 o'clock on the morning of September 24, 1966.

Q—Were you instructed to ride the horse fast?

A—I was supposed to work

him for three hundred yards.

Q—What happened then?

A—50 yards after I started, sir, I don't remember anything.

Q—You were unconscious?

A—I fell from that horse and was knocked unconscious.

Q—Can you describe your wounds? You had no broken bones?

A—No broken bones. There were many contusions on my body. Some sutures under my chin and on my left eye.

Q—Did you file a claim for workmen's compensation?

A—Yes.

Q—Did you receive an award?

A—Yes, in the amount of \$2000.

Q—When you had no job, did you read more?

A—Yes, I always read what interested me, and I thought I might continue my schooling.

Q—Did you read about the Arab-Israeli situation?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—In what periodicals did you read about it?

A—There were magazines, news articles, books, pamphlets, whatever I saw. And I read the B'nai B'rith Messenger.

Q—That is a Jewish newspaper. Why did you read it?

A—The best way to know what the Zionists are up to is to read what they say.

Q—At this time, did you become interested in the occult or metaphysical?

A—Yes, sir, I did. I've always asked "What is this life about? What is this world?" I wanted to know.

Q—You applied for membership in the Rosicrucians?

A—Yes, sir.

Sirhan testified he purchased a book titled "Cyclomancy" after reading an advertisement in an astrological magazine.

He said he learned to hold boiling water in his hand and not feel the pain.

Q—Were there other experiments?

A—Visual delusions.

Q—What about visual delusions?

A—Let me try to find the thing. (Sirhan takes the book, Cyclomancy). Here it is, Page 108. I copied this on a larger sheet, sir.

(Page 108 showed the series of six parallel dots contained within circles which Sirhan claimed, through practice of the occult, he could see as but one line of dots. The book was offered in evidence by the defense and studied by the jury.)

Q—What were you supposed to do with this?

A—You were supposed to look at the black dots and see only one black dot . . . I can't prove to you I saw only one, but I did . . . May I add this . . . I had it so I could put one half of a dot here and one half there and combine them. Not just whole dots, half dots.

Q—In your room, was there some form of desk or table?

A—Yes, there was a table with one drawer.

Q—Was there a mirror above this table?

A—Yes, there was.

Q—Did you use this mirror in your experiments?

A—Yes, I did. It was involved in the Rosicrucian exercises.

Q—Were there candles?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—And you used these candles in your exercises and studies?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—And you used these candles in studying the power of concentration?

A—Yes. One of these . . . was to take a candle in a darkened room and put it between your face and the mirror and concentrate on the flame . . . and you could see in it whatever color you wanted. This was very hard for me to do.

Q—And you could really see these colors?

A—I cannot prove it, sir, but damn it (mumble).

A—I saw a blue flame.

Q—And you could see any color you wanted?

A—Any color I wanted . . . but I had to concentrate for five minutes. Sometimes I saw flashes.

Q—How many colors did you see?

A—Numerous colors. I kept a list.

A—I played with that.

Q—Do you recall trying some of this at the race track too?

A—Yes.

Q—And there was an incident at the track which you attributed to this.

A—Yes.

Q—Where was this?

A—At the Santa Anita track last March 19th, my birthday. I wanted to bet the daily double. I didn't even look at the form, I bet the one and the nine for the 19th. After I bet the daily double, I started to read the form. There was one horse. It was the first horse in the race. It was owned by Altfillisch . . . It was a long shot, a long chance. It didn't have a chance, but I didn't want it to win.

Q—You didn't want it to win, even though you had bet on it?

A—That's right. I kept saying in my mind You . . . you won't win . . . he's not going to win, he's not going to win, he's not going to win.

They came out to the gate . . . that horse wheeled, it was in the number one position, and it went through the rail and was disqualified.

Q—It broke through the rail?

A—It jumped or something. thing.

Q—And you think your power of concentration did this?

A— . . . I can't prove it, but it works.

Q—And did other thoughts occur to you, Sirhan?

A—Yes, sir. The 1967 war in June of that year, I realized the Israelis had brainwashed the American public . . . they had talked about the Arabs and the Jews turned around and did the same thing to the Arabs. It was a deception. really.

Q—You saw a magazine description. (in 1967, during the Arab-Israeli war).

A—I saw a picture of Israeli soldiers on the east bank of the Suez Canal . . . they were the victors . . . they were the winners . . . If I had seen these guys personally, I would have blasted them . . . I would have killed them.

I read in a book that the Zionists and Jews in America gave \$370 million to revitalize Israel's economy. This burned the hell out of me. When President Johnson is trying to keep the money in this country . . . when tourists only get seven dollars a day, these — — — damn Zionists . . .

Q—Watch your language, please.

Q—You thought you didn't have any rights?

A—I still don't have any rights.

Q—It was important to you to have your own country?

A—I had no country . . . I'm sick and tired of being a foreigner . . . I was a place of my own. I want to eat my own food in my own land. I want my own country, my own land, my own city, my own business . . . my own everything.

(Sirhan was shown some notebooks dating from his school

days at Pasadena City College)

Q — Now, on page 15, we have what I read to you yesterday. On May 18, at 9:45 a.m., 1963, "my determination to eliminate Robert F. Kennedy is becoming more the more of an unshakeable obsession." Do you remember writing that?

A — No, sir, I don't remember writing that.

Q — Do you remember what your feeling was about Robert F. Kennedy on or about May 18—that was three weeks before June 5.

A — That could have been the time, sir, when during his campaign he said he would send 50 bombers to Israel.

Q — Where was Mr. Kennedy on the 18th?

A — I don't know, sir, if he was in Oregon or not.

Q — On or about that time did you listen to the radio?

A — No that is not the time, Mr. Cooper. That was when I watched television.

Q — What did you see?

A — That evening, I brewed myself some tea and went into the living room to watch television. I don't have a favorite program so I just turn the channels to see what program interests me. What I saw was a documentary on Robert Kennedy. It was a biography, it told of his career as a politician. I started to watch it. It told of Robert Kennedy's achievements, of his being attorney general.

It told of his close association with his brother, how he became a Senator from New

York ... his whole history until he was running for President. It spoke of Robert Kennedy always being for the underdog ... the poor ... the scum of society ... how he wanted to help the weakest. They showed that Robert Kennedy in 1943 was in Israel helping to celebrate with the Israelis their independence and the birth of the State of Israel.

The enthusiasm of the narrator bugged me to pieces. It burned me up. Until that time, I loved Robert Kennedy. I wanted him to be elected President. Then I found out he had been supporting Israel, not only recently, but since its very inception. He was doing a lot of things behind my back that I didn't know about until that night on television. It burned me up, sir.

Q — What is the significance of 5 June, 1967?

A — Any involvement with Zionism ... invokes something in me I can't describe. Zionism is worse to me than Communism is to you. I have that same feeling about Zionism as you do about Communism. The 5 June I wrote here was in my mind as 5 June 1967, the date of the Arab-Israeli war.

Q — Does that help you recall that you wrote that?

A — If you ask me independently of this, what June 5 means, it means to me the Israeli aggression against the Arab people in 1967.

Q — This is your handwriting?

A — It is.

Q — What did you feel for

Robert F. Kennedy, when you wrote that?

A — At the time, I felt that if he were in front of me, he would have died right then and there.

Q — Do you remember your feelings at that time?

A — I must have been burned up, sir.

Q — How do you know how you felt at the time, when you don't remember writing it?

A — I was provoked. I was off.

Q — You have used some ungentlemanly language. Did you learn those words in the United States?

A — Yes, sir, I did.

Q — You heard something on the radio.

A — Yes, sir. Yes, sir, but not directly. I was in my own room, which is adjacent to my mother's. My mother had the radio on in her room and I heard it.

Q — Do you remember that station it was?

A — KFVB, the all-news. My mother loved to listen to that.

Q — What did you hear?

A — It was hot news. The announcer said Robert Kennedy was at some Jewish Club at Beverly Hills where he had committed himself so formally to sending 50 jets to Israel.

Q — What did that make you think?

A — I thought Robert Kennedy was not all the good guy he claimed to be.

Q — Did you become an-
dy?

A — It boiled me up again. At the time, I was concentrating on my Rosierucian studies.

Q — What did you do?

A — He bugged me to the point where instead of my own face in the mirror, I saw Robert Kennedy's face. It may have been an illusion, but I saw his face, not my own. I was that burned up about it.

Q — I again address myself to the Pasadena City College notebook . . . page 21 is written in pencil, is that correct?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — At the top of this is the word "war" . . . "A declaration of war against American humanity . . ."

A — That's right.

Q — "When in the course of human events it becomes necessary to equalize and sick, no I believe that's seek, revenge for inhumane treatment at the hands of the American people, it is proper . . ."

Q — (repeating) "Seek revenge for all the inhumane treatment committed against me by the American people . . . as soon as I am able to command a sum of money in the amount of \$2000 and acquire some firearms, the specifications of which are not arrived at yet . . . (the) victims will be the President, Vice, and so forth down the ladder . . . the method is unimportant but the weapon should be influenced some-
how . . ."

"The author believes that many, in fact most people will be in sympathy with his feelings.

" . . . This declaration is not considered likely by the author . . . but he hopes to be the initiator of military steps to World War III . . ."

"The author bluntly states he wants to be recorded by history as the man who triggered the last war . . ."

"Life is ambivalence . . . struggle, wicked. If it was ever otherwise, I have never seen it. It always seems I am losing . . . always exploited . . ."

Q — This is written in your handwriting?

A — Yes, sir.

Q — What did you have in mind?

A — I don't remember.

Q — You say the victims of the party in power. . . did you have in mind on the second of June, 1967, somehow killing the President and Vice President of the United States of America?

A — That's what I wrote at that time. I must have been provoked. I would have blasted anybody.

Q — Do you recollect now obtaining a weapon for the purpose of killing the President of the United States?

A — No, sir, it's not me, sir. It's not the Sirhan who's sitting here.

Q—Without reading all this, could you tell my why you wrote "I always seem to be on the losing end?"

A—I could have been provoked by the George Putnam editorial. I must have . . . something must have moved me. There must have been some provocation. I must have been provoked. I would not have hesitated to do it (kill the President) at that time.

Q—Did you plan to do it at some time in the future?

A—I don't remember what my exact frame of mind was.

Q—On page 24 you wrote the following—"blinkers"—do you know what that means?

A—No, sir.

Q—Then you wrote "long live Nasser". . .

A—I'm a great admirer of President Nasser.

Q—Then you wrote "tell tell, tell, tell them to put . . . Do you know what that is?"

A—I don't know what I meant by blinkers.

Q—You wrote here "tell tell, tell, tell them to put blinkers on this son of a b . . . son of a . . ." Do you recall who it was you were telling this?

A—No, sir.

Q—Then there is written here "Long live long . . . 3-3-3 . . . mid-terms 10 November. Nasser . . . Nasser, long live Nasser. Alley fighter . . . long live Communism, long live Communism . . ."

A—There is a very long jump between Nasser and Communism.

Q—On Page 29 it appears to be written: Whatever may be said in praise of poverty the fact remains it is not possible to live a complete or successful life unless one is rich. No man can rise to his greatest possibility. I have often wondered what it is like to be rich . . . rich . . . rich. Black magic.' Did you write that?

A—It looks like my writing, Sir.

Q—Is it?

A—It is my handwriting.

Q—What does it mean?

A—I don't know.

Q—What is "black magic"?

A—If there is white magic, there is black magic.

Q—Here it says 'Peggy . . . P . . . Peggy . . . Y . . . O G . . . G . . . The incredible power of this Kizuma.' That's an ancient Egyptian technique of directing thoughts of others, of radiating thought. Was this when you were studying Eastern philosophy?

A—I don't know what source it is, but it is related to that, yes.

Q—Were you studying thinking and directing thoughts of others?

A—I don't know, Sir, what I was doing here.

Q—You were studying that at the time?

A—Yes.

Q—It says 'Peggy . . . love . . . Sol and Peggy . . . the greenery here is beautiful . . . Sol and Peggy . . . I . . . I . . . I . . . the Peggy . . . Peggy

Ostercamp.' Was she a girl you know?

A—Yes, Sir.

Q—Did you date Peggy?

A—No, Sir, I didn't.

Q—On Page 31 it says 'Peggy Ostercamp . . . I love you . . . I love . . .'

A—Let me explain. "P" is alien to the Arab tongue. "G" is a loose pronunciation . . . It is queer to my tongue as I say it. That was what stood out in my mind.

Q—This 'Peggy, I love you'—that's in your printing?

A—Yes, Sir.

Q—Did you have a crush on her?

A—No Sir . . . It's just that name.

Q—What about the 'I love you'?

A—I don't know. I can't account for that.

Q—Now on Page 34, you have: 'Constitution . . . will Sirhan ever need to work or uphold . . . Sirhan must begin to work on solving the problems and difficulties of assassinating the 36th president of the glorious United States. (Lyndon B. Johnson). Kelvinator . . . Janice . . . no . . . n . . . n 696 E. Howard St. . . California . . . Sirhan, Sirhan, Sirhan, Sirhan.' This part, 'Sirhan must begin to work on . . . assassination of the 36th president of the United

States. Why did you write that?

A—I can't say. I must have been provoked, but I can't remember the provocation.

Q—It is your writing?

A—Yes it is my handwriting.

Q—Do you remember that about the 36th President?

A—Who is that?

Q—I don't know enough history to tell you. Johnson. Did you ever have the idea of killing Johnson?

A—No, but I hated his guts at one point. It was during the Arab-Israeli war when he came out and said: "The United States supports the territorial integrity of all nations of the area." All nations.

Q—You have written "Sol and Peggy." They knew you as Sol?

A—Yes, Sir.

Q—Were you sometimes called Sol?

A—Yes, Sir.

Q—Where did you get that nickname?

A—Someone once mistook me for being Jewish and wanted to call me Solomon. I said, why not Sol.

Q—Then it says 'Perhaps you could use the enclosed \$. . . Sol, Sol . . . \$. . . \$. . . Hello, Tom . . . Perhaps you could use the \$.' Remember writing that?

A—No, Sir, I don't remember writing it, although I did send Tom some money.

Q—How much?

A—\$25.

Q—Why?

A—I thought he needed it. It was when I had money from the industrial accident.

Q—On Page 20, you have 'Chance is a word void of sense.' Do you know what that means?

A—No, Sir, I don't.

Q—Then 'Sapphire stone, stone . . . sapphire stone . . . lodestone . . . Tom . . .

Ambassador Goldberg must die, die on use die . . . meet . . . die, die, die, me at the airport . . . Ambassador Goldberg must die. Stone. Think you . . . stone . . . Goldberg must be eliminated . . . stone . . . Sirhan is an Arab . . .

A—That he is, Sir.

Q—Then 'Arab, Arab . . . You perhaps you could use the enclosed \$. . . Sirhan, Sirhan, Sirhan, Sirhan . . . green . . . Sirhan . . . stone . . . stone . . . Sirhan . . . green . . . port . . . stone.' Then the words, 'Ambassador Goldberg must be eliminated . . . must die.' Were you angry at Ambassador Goldberg?

A—Yes, Sir, I was angry at Goldberg.

Q—Do you watch on television the meetings of the United Nations?

A—Yes, Sir, I watched all of them.

Q—Did you see the debates when he was United States ambassador?

A—Yes, I did.

Q—After the Arab-Israeli conflict in 1967?

A—Yes, Sir.

Q—What bugged you?

A—When President Johnson said "The United States supports the territorial integrity of all nations in the area," he referred to Ambassador Goldberg as his able ambassador to the United Nations. He was only "able" in the respect that he was on the side of Israel.

Q—What did Ambassador Goldberg ever do (to upset you)?

A—I just didn't like what he said. He repeated what Johnson said and he said it himself. He made a hell of a long pause when he said it. He did not stick to his word.

Q—Would you have killed Goldberg?

A—If I had a gun or if I had had anything I would have broken the television set. I hated him.

Q—Did you write this?

A—I don't remember it.

Q—How do you remember your emotions at the time if you don't remember writing it?

A—Because of how I felt about Goldberg.

Q—This 'Darling June' written here. Who's June?

A—A race horse, Sir.

Q—And here, 'Long live . . . dream . . .

A—I say it again, Sir: Long live the Arab dream.

COURT RECESSED



World-Examiner Photo

SIRHAN BISHARA SIRHAN

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Gruesome Past Told By Sirhan

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan goes back into the witness box in his murder trial today to continue testimony which began dramatically with his court admission he killed Sen. Robert F. Kennedy and shot and wounded five others.

A lengthy description on his childhood as a refugee in the walled city of Old Jerusalem is expected later during this morning's trial session.

Sirhan's testimony of yesterday was without incident. But his attorneys remain concerned over their client's volatile nature.

Twice his trial has been halted by his courtroom tantrums.

Sirhan took the oath with a clenched fist yesterday and then quickly admitted under questioning by his chief defense counsel, Grant B. Cooper, that he shot Kennedy.

Q — It is alleged that on the 5th day of June, 1968, you shot and killed Robert Francis Kennedy, a human being. Did you

on or about the 5th of June shoot Robert Kennedy?

A — Yes sir, I did.

Sirhan also confessed that he "must have" shot and wounded United Auto Workers official Paul Schrade and four others who were with Kennedy in the pantry of the Ambassador Hotel's Embassy Ballroom.

But, he insisted, "I was not aware of anything."

He said he did not know Schrade, nor the other victims

— Ira Goldstein, Irwin Strop, Mrs. Elizabeth Evans or newsman William Weissel. He insisted he bore them no "ill will."

Sirhan was tense but composed when he took the stand immediately after a mid-after-

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/4/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kennel

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-703

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 5 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-5-69

noon recess. He pulled nervously at a cigaret and gulped water before being called. His mother seated a few feet away from him outside the courtroom rail, seemed more nervous than her son.

She sat on the edge of her chair in an attitude of prayer when he walked to the witness box. As his testimony began she struck an attitude as one rooting for a player in an athletic contest. She murmured in her native Arabic when she thought her son scored a point.

As soon as Cooper won from the admitted slayer the admission that he had fired the gun which took Kennedy's life, he handed him a photograph of an excerpt from a diary seized from Sirhan's home hours after the shooting.

The diary entry, timed and dated 9:45 a.m., May 18, 1968, read in part "my determination to eliminate RFK is becoming more and more an obsession."

The page concluded:

"Robert Kennedy must be assassinated before June 5, 1968."

Sirhan readily admitted the entry was in his handwriting.

He had written the phrase "port wine" twice on the same page. He explained to Cooper that this was the name of a race horse.

The diary entry established, Cooper quickly moved the questioning away from the events of the murder to the time Sirhan's early childhood—first on New Jerusalem's St. Paul's Road, and then as a refugee in the abandoned Jewish Quarter of the walled city of Old Jerusalem.

Sirhan, now 24, testified his memory of his homeland went back to 1947, when he was three.

That year he said, he recalled a dynamiting in which a British soldier was blown to bits.

"I recollect the dismembered soldier..." he swore.

Earlier in the day his mother, Mrs. Mary Sirhan, testified Sirhan was thrown into a fit of

"ague" by this and similar incidents of the Israeli war of independence.

The soldier's body "was exploded," Sirhan testified.

One of his legs was blown into the belfry of a nearby church.

"I recall the leg with the soldier's boot on it," he said.

He also said he remembered the death of his brother Munir, who was run over in the street before the family home—his body tossed against a barbed-wire barrier which ran down the street separating the Zionist and Arab sectors of the city.

"I used to walk around his casket," he said.

Sirhan said he dimly recalled the family moving to their refugee quarters in Old Jerusalem.

"I remember something about moving... I was haxed."

Sirhan said when he asked why the family had been displaced he learned:

"The Jews kicked us out of our homes... The Zionists kicked us out. We were terrorized into leaving our homes."

The young Arab also recounted how he was told of the Dair Nassim massacre in which some 250 persons were slain, Sirhan believes by Haganah—the Zionist provisional army of the 1940's.

Sirhan said that his mother told him of seeing Arab girls seized in that incident paraded in a truck through New Jerusalem.

Earlier, Mrs. Sirhan had testified that the girls were half-naked, and that their Zionist captives clapped and boasted, "See what we can do."

He had no personal recollection of events connected with the massacre, Sirhan admitted.

Telling of his life in the walled city, Sirhan said that while he never suffered "pangs of star-

vation" hunger, he could have eaten more than the family's rations, provided by the United Nations.

This ration included margarine, brown sugar, flour, beans and a monthly gallon of kerosene, he said.

He said the family, who lived in one room in a damaged house, was often cold in winter.

Q—How cold did it get?

A—Pretty damn cold, sir.

"Watch your language, sir," Cooper warned.

One of Sirhan's most vivid recollections, he said, was of a slum and dump near his home.

This place was a "run down tenement... dirty... unclean... sickening, really..." he testified.

Often, in Old Jerusalem, Sirhan said, the family was forced to flee to the cellar because of bombing raids.

His mother would stuff the children's ears with cotton, he said.

One of the bombings, which he heard, but did not see, destroyed a small shop near his home, Sirhan testified.

After this incident, he said, he saw the dismembered body of the shopkeeper—a friend—on the ground before the shop.

This incident, his mother had testified earlier, sent Sirhan, then eight, into a trance from which it took him several days to recover.

A brother of the defendant, Adel, 20, who preceded the young defendant on the stand, also told of this incident.

Sirhan also repeated a story told three times in the trial—by a boyhood friend, his mother and brother—of finding a human hand in the family well.

"It sickened me," he recalled.

"It was a piece of flesh, a hand up to the wrist..."

Telling of the sparking of the cause of Arab nationalism within him, Sirhan recalled playing beneath the Jerusalem wall with friends one day in the 1950's.



SIRHAN BROTHER, ATTORNEY OUTSIDE COURTHOUSE
Adel Sirhan, right, talking with Grant Cooper, testified briefly

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Takes Witness Stand, Admits He Killed Kennedy

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan admitted from the witness stand at his murder trial Monday that he killed Sen. Robert F. Kennedy and had "no doubt" he shot and wounded five other persons June 5.

"Did you, on or about the 5th of June, 1968, shoot Sen. Robert F. Kennedy?" asked defense attorney Grant B. Cooper.

"Yes, sir," the 24-year-old defendant replied firmly.

Asked if he also shot and wounded Paul Schrade, a United Auto Workers official and Kennedy supporter, Sirhan answered with a shrug and a grin:

"If that's what the indictment reads, I must have."

Did he know who Schrade was?

"Never heard of him."

Under Cooper's questioning, Sirhan denied any knowledge of, or malice toward, Irwin S. Galt, William Weiss, Elizabeth Evans or Ira Goldstein, who were also wounded.

"I was not aware of anything," Sirhan added.

The pale, slim defendant seemed almost to relish his turn on the witness stand. His answers came clearly and quickly, sometimes even before Cooper's questions were complete. At one point, Sirhan even supplied a word when Cooper groped for another term for bombing noises.

"Cannon sounds — how's that?" Sirhan offered with a smile.

After emotional blowups last week when he demanded to fire his three-man defense team, plead guilty and be executed, Sirhan's demeanor Monday was almost sunny—particularly in early testimony on his controversial notebooks.

Sirhan's first temper tantrums last

week came when the prosecution began introducing into evidence the notebook pages on which Sirhan had written "Robert F. Kennedy must be assassinated."

The defendant told Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker that if the notebooks were admitted, he wouldn't be getting a fair trial.

But Monday, Cooper read that very page, with Sirhan following eagerly line-by-line, as Cooper intoned: "May 18, 9:45 a.m. '68. My determination to eliminate RFK is becoming more the more (sic) of an unshakeable obsession."

The handwriting was all his, Sirhan confirmed: the repeated phrase "Port Wine" was the name of a race horse; yes, he had written "please pay to the order of..." several times; and the repeated injunction "RFK must be assassinated" was his.

Then Cooper shifted backward in time to the Sirhan family's life in war-torn Jerusalem, where Sirhan, was born March 19, 1944.

Recalls Death

Sirhan testified that he recalled "quite vividly" the death of an Arab soldier who was blown up by dynamite one day when Sirhan was 3 or 4. Sirhan said he recalled the soldier's leg blown so high in the air it caught in the belfry of a church and was hanging there the next day, recognizable from the military boot.

The family fled during the 1948 Israeli-Arab hostilities from the new part of Jerusalem to the former Jewish quarter of the old Walled City, and Sirhan said he was told by family and friends of the reason for the flight:

"The Jews kicked us out of our homes. The Zionists kicked us out. We were terrorized out of leaving our homes."

As an example of the terror, Sirhan testified that after the April 9, 1948, massacre at the village of Dair Yasin, Arab girls with mutilated breasts "were paraded in front of us, to terrorize us and get us out of our homes."

Tells of Panic

Sirhan said the reasons he had been told, and subsequently read of in history books, were that "the West wanted to bring the persecuted Jews from Germany in and expel the indigenous Palestinian Arabs from their homes."

Sirhan said he faintly recalled the family's flight to the old Walled City. "I was naked," he said, and the family was "in a state of panic."

After settling there, he

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/4/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Wick B. Williams
Title: Kinsalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-702

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 4 1969	
FBI — LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-4-69

said, he heard bombings on an average of once a week from 1948 until the family left Jerusalem for the United States in 1956. Bombings were "so routine," he said, that when his mother began to make little balls of cotton for the children's ears, they knew another bombing was on the way and took refuge in the basement.

The Sirhans subsisted on United Nations Relief and Works Agency rations, he said—mostly brown sugar, margarine, flour, beans "and a gallon of kerosene, in the winter."

"How cold does it get there?" asked Cooper.

"Pretty damn' cold, sir," Sirhan said with a grin.

"Pardon me," said Cooper. "You watch your language, Sirhan."

The defendant looked abashed for a moment.

Sirhan said he didn't recall "any starvation pangs... We always had enough, but we always cleaned up what we had before us. We could have eaten more, had we had it. We were actually among the luckier people, because we had ration cards.

That's why we shared in Sirhan after the latter what we had to spare with other people," Sirhan said. He added, however, that he saw many people die of starvation.

Sirhan also told of seeing a neighborhood shopkeeper's body after a bombing, and of being sickened by the sight of a human hand in a bucket of well water he drew one day.

Earlier testimony by his mother and a childhood friend described Sirhan as going into a shaking fit after the experience at the well and being sick for days.

Sirhan also told of one time when he was 11, playing with some friends near Zion's Gate in the south wall of the old Walled City.

Sirhan said the Arab wall guard let the boys up onto the wall with him to look down at the No Man's Land separating the Old Walled City from the Zionist sector.

"I could see the feelings and emotions of this man," said Sirhan. "He said 'That's our land out there, that's our property.' I couldn't understand what he meant then, but now I understand the import of what he said."

An older brother, Adel Sirhan, 30, testified earlier to many of the same incidents related by Sirhan and his mother. But Adel also told of a change

in Sirhan after the latter fell from a horse in September, 1966, while working as an exercise boy on a race horse ranch near Corona.

Adel described his younger brother before the fall as friendly, ambitious and "doing well in school except when our sister (Ayda, who died in 1965 of leukemia) was sick."

After the fall, Adel testified, Sirhan became irritable, nervous, stayed home more and read a great deal. He once had a

fight with his younger brother, Munir, 21, and sometimes argued with his family when they watched television newscasts of Middle East conflicts, demanding:

"How can you sit there and watch these things being done to people?"

Adel also told of hearing Sirhan talking to himself in his bedroom, Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts asked if Sirhan couldn't have been reading aloud or studying his German or Russian courses. Adel said he might have.

But Adel also told of finding Sirhan sitting in his room with a lighted candle on the desk before a mirror as he read from literature he got from the Rosicrucians, an order which espouses the development of one's mental powers over matter.

Mystical Tests

Friday, after Sirhan exploded in court and demanded to fire his lawyers, some experiment." Adel pleaded guilty and he said. "And he would say executed."

"I'm staring at the light. Mrs. Sirhan spoke with it's supposed to turn green evident pride of the family's life up until 1918, see a cross in it, or when they had to flee a comfortable, large apartment and ultimately seek refuge in one room of a crowded building in the Walled City of Jerusalem."

Adel said his brother sometimes told him, "If you think something, it will actually happen." He said he and Sirhan frequently talked in this vein about Sirhan's mystical experiments.

The defense has claimed that Sirhan was in a virtual trance when he killed Sen. Kennedy—a trance similar to those he suffered at traumatic scenes in his childhood. They also claim he later induced such trances through his obsessive personality and his mystical experiments with self-hypnosis.

Monday morning, Mrs. Mary Sirhan, 55, related a series of grisly incidents she said Sirhan witnessed as a child. Each time, she said, he was seized by a fit of shaking, the color would drain from his face, his lips would go dry and he would sometimes "black out" remaining ill for days.

The 4-foot, 11-inch Mrs. Sirhan remained composed throughout her testimony. She burst into tears last

Friday, after Sirhan exploded in court and demanded to fire his lawyers, some experiment." Adel pleaded guilty and he said. "And he would say executed."

Expresses Regrets

Describing the dirt and poverty of that life, she was obviously embarrassed. In admitting the building had only one toilet for 11 families, she turned to the jury and said, "I'm sorry to speak this way."

She said the water supply was so filthy they would go without drinking for days at a time, and that when the family moved to the United States in 1957, Ayda "went into the toilet and flushed and flushed and flushed and then sprinkled water all around and said 'God bless America.'"

"We are lucky in this country," Mrs. Sirhan continued emotionally. "I want you to know this. Everybody is blessed in the United States."

The defendant sat with his head bowed in his

hands during this outburst, which Judge Walker ended by asking Mrs. Sirhan to restrict her testimony to answering questions directly.

She described one incident at the Damascus Gate in 1947 when several people were killed by a bomb. Sirhan, on a postoffice errand with his father, came home shaking and crying, she said, and wouldn't leave the house for two weeks.

A few months later, she said, Sirhan's elder brother, Munir, then about 8, was run over by a car. A shout from Adel brought her and Sirhan running, she said, and when he saw the bloody body of his brother, she said, "it was hard for him. He was shaking and said 'Is it the same bomb, mania?'"

"He never forgot the Damascus Gate. He never forgot his brother. He used to cry and ask me, 'Why does he stay away so long? When can he come and play with me?' When I got another boy, I had to call him Munir."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Mary Sirhan Takes Stand in Son's Trial

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

A diminutive anguished Arab emigrant woman today took the stand in the trial of her son—the admitted slayer of Robert Francis Kennedy.

Mrs. Mary Sirhan was the first witness as the murder trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan moved into its 32nd day.

This is Mrs. Sirhan's third time in the witness box in her son's trial. Early in the trial she testified as to her impoverished economic state when defense lawyers sought quashing of the indictment charging Sirhan with first-degree murder in the Kennedy slaying.

Friday, Mrs. Sirhan was sworn as a witness at the end of an emotion-packed day in which her son sought unsuccessfully to fire his lawyers, plead guilty to first-degree murder, and be sentenced to death.

Mrs. Sirhan, buffeted by the emotional outburst of her son which literally ground his trial to a halt, could not testify. She tried, but the words she had for the jury of eight men and four women could not get by the sobs that welled in her throat.

She was excused for the week-end by the trial's presiding judge, Herbert V. Walker, who said she acted with "great courage."

Mrs. Sirhan will be a witness

in a trial which conceivably may not progress beyond her testimony.

Sirhan, programmed to follow his mother on the stand, remains in what his lawyers call a "highly mercurial state."

He has made it clear he violently resents the defense of diminished mental capacity they have prepared for him.

This defense states in effect that while Sirhan is not insane, his mental balance is precarious—so precarious that he gunned down Sen. Kennedy while incapable of calculating the nature and consequences of his act.

Sirhan, according to his chief defense lawyer, Grant B. Cooper, believes such a defense "demeans" him. He objects to what he believes was the heroic act of Kennedy's killing being described in terms of mental illness.

Because of this, he has twice sought to interrupt his trial. He may—indeed some observers expect that he will—interrupt it again.

If he does, Judge Walker has warned him, he will be strapped and gagged in his seat in the armor-plated eighth-floor Hall of Justice courtroom where the trial is taking place.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-2 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/3/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-71-701

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 4 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-4-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Guilty and Wants to Be Executed, Sirhan Declares

Defendant Says He Had Planned Kennedy Death; Change of Plea Denied

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, infuriated at disclosure of his school grades and his IQ of 89, flew into a rage at his murder trial Friday, tried to fire his defense team and demanded to change his plea to guilty and be executed.

In a firm but angry voice he said: "I killed Robert F. Kennedy willfully, premeditatedly and with 20 years of malice aforethought."

Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker, obviously angered at the flareup, refused to accept the change of plea or the firing of the three-man defense team.

As Sirhan's 10-minute tirade verged on a shouting match with the veteran jurist, Judge Walker threatened the tiny defendant with a face mask to silence him and arm straps to keep him in his chair if there are further outbursts.

Slightly Below Average

The temper tantrum appeared triggered by the methodical disclosure of Sirhan's grades in Pasadena's junior high and high schools. A school official confirmed that Sirhan was a "C" student and said his intelligence quotient tested out at 89—slightly below the 90-110 range considered average. At that point Sirhan began to blow up.

After a quick, whispered conference with the 24-year-old defendant, attorney Russell B. Parsons asked for a recess.

The jury was led out and defense attorney Grant B. Cooper, obviously taken aback, explained that Sirhan had earlier said he would forbid the calling of about a dozen witnesses his lawyers believe should testify. Cooper said Sirhan had later calmed down and promised cooperation, but that he now wanted to speak up in court.

There followed this dramatic exchange between Judge Walker and Sirhan:

Judge Walker: There is something you wanted to say?

Sirhan: May I address the court in chambers, sir?

Walker: No.

Sirhan: I at this time, sir, withdraw my original plea of not guilty and submit the plea of guilty as charged on all counts. I also request that my counsel disassociate themselves from this case completely.

Walker: Do I understand—stand up—do I understand that you want

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/1/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-702

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 3 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Change of Plea
cc to Bureau
3-3-69

to plead guilty to murder in the first degree?

Sirhan: Yes, sir, I do.

Walker: All right, and what do you want to do about the penalty?

Sirhan: I will offer no defense whatsoever.

Walker: The question is, what do you want to do about the penalty?

Sirhan: I will ask to be executed, sir.

Walker: Now, I know of nothing in the law that permits a defendant under any circumstances to enter a plea of guilty to murder of the first degree and ask for execution.

Sirhan: Well, I have, sir.

Walker: Well now, just a minute. Why do you want to do this?

Sirhan: I believe, sir, that is my business, isn't it?

Walker: You just believe it is your business?

Sirhan: That is my prerogative.

Walker: No, it isn't. Now, when we come to accepting a plea, you have to give me a reason.

Tells Why

Sirhan: I killed Robert F. Kennedy willfully, premeditatedly, with 20 years of malice aforethought, that is why.

Walker: Well, the evidence has to be produced here in court.

Sirhan: I withdraw all evidence, sir.

Walker: There is no such procedure.

Sirhan: To hell with it.

Walker: Well, the court will not accept the plea. Proceed with the trial. Let me give you to understand here and now that this

court will not put up with any more of your interrupting. You are to follow the advice of the court and just sit down there. Any further interruptions by you in this trial will result in you being restrained. You understand that?

Sirhan: Sir?

Walker: I mean by that that you will have a face mask put on you which will prohibit you from talking and, further, your arms will be strapped to your chair and the trial will proceed. You understand that?

Sirhan: I understand. However, sir, I intend to defend myself pro per (defendant representing himself). I don't want to be represented by these counsel.

Judge Refuses

Walker: You have retained counsel. Counsel is staying in the trial.

Sirhan: What I have said, I don't want anyone to have a trial shoved down my throat, sir, and you are not going to shove it down my throat, sir, in any way you want.

Walker: You say you want to go pro per?

Sirhan: Yes, I will.

Walker: What are the defenses, let me ask what are the elements of the crime of murder?

Sirhan: Sir, I don't know. I don't understand all of this legality. You let me—

Walker: I am conducting these proceedings, not you. What are the defenses to murder in the first degree?

Sirhan: I don't know.

Walker: I find you are incapable of representing

yourself. Sit down and keep quiet, and, if not, I intend to keep you quiet.

Sirhan: No, sir, I still maintain my original point. I plead guilty to murder and ask to be executed.

Walker: I thought I made it clear. The court will not accept the plea.

Sirhan: I am sorry. I will not accept it.

Walker: The law tells me what I can do and cannot do. Now, you understand from here on out you keep quiet, and if not, I will see to it that you are kept quiet.

Sirhan: I am sorry, but my original position stands.

Walker: Get the jury down.

Sirhan: Why not let me go into chambers? I insist.

Walker: You are not going to go in chambers. I let you go in there once and that was the beginning and the end. That procedure is over as far as I am concerned. We will proceed with the trial. Again, I will tell you to keep quiet and consult with your attorneys.

Finally Subsides

At this, Sirhan subsided and asked to talk with his defense team — Cooper, Parsons and Emilie Zola Berman.

After a brief recess, and before jurors were brought back to the court, Cooper told Judge Walker that Sirhan was adamant and that "he has advised us definitely, positively and unequivocally that he does not desire us to continue to represent him."

Cooper then said the three-man defense team was "perfectly willing, as a matter of fact I might say anxious, to withdraw from the case and let him either represent himself or

be represented by other counsel."

Cooper added, however, that they would be equally willing to proceed with their defense and that they did not want to appear to be deserting Sirhan, except upon his insistence.

Judge Walker denied the offer to withdraw, saying good cause for such withdrawal had not been shown and adding that Sirhan appeared clearly unable to represent himself.

Throughout the stormy hour the scene consumed, Mrs. Mary Sirhan, 55, sat in her third row seat, alternately sobbing with her hands covering her

face or staring ahead, blinking rapidly as tears ran down her cheeks.

At Judge Walker's ruling that the trial would proceed, the jury was led in and Mrs. Sirhan was the next witness called.

Still blinking back tears, the tiny woman — not quite 5 feet tall — dressed in a black knit suit with gold embroidery, took the stand.

With a quavering voice, she said Sirhan was born March 29, 1944, in Jerusalem, where her family had lived "for hundreds of years . . . from generation to generation."

Jerusalem was called, she said, "the city of

peace . . ." and with that her voice quavered into a sob.

Judge Walker quickly adjourned the trial as the sobbing Mrs. Sirhan was led from the courtroom. The jurist told spectators and newsmen:

"I can't conceive of a worse set of circumstances under which a mother could be called to testify. I think she shows great courage."

The emotional afternoon — by far the most dramatic of several outbursts by Sirhan this week — was preceded by what was for Sirhan an unusually sunny morning, as a childhood friend testified to Sirhan's twisted early years.

Ziad Hashimeh, 25 and only a month older than Sirhan, testified that:

When he was about 10 in Jerusalem, Sirhan went to the well one day for his mother. When he drew up the bucket, a severed human arm and hand floated in the water.

Stories of Childhood

This and other childhood horrors used to send Sirhan into fits of shaking and trembling—the forerunners of the trance-like states the defense claims Sirhan was in when he killed Kennedy.

Hashimeh described his childhood playmate as a "very sensitive human being" subjected to poverty, a father's beatings and the repeated spectacle of violent deaths.

Hashimeh's testimony corroborated earlier descriptions of Sirhan family life given to The Times last year by other members of the Hashimeh family still living in Jerusalem.

The slim, dark-haired witness, who said he last saw Sirhan in late 1956, exchanged frequent broad

smiles with the defendant who greeted him with a happy shout as he entered the courtroom.

The Hashimeh family lived in the same large house as the Sirhans in the old walled city of Jerusalem. Hashimeh said nine families, totaling about 50 people, lived in the building and shared a common toilet and adjacent well.

Hashimeh said the incident at the well occurred a year or two before the Sirhan family left Jerusalem in late 1956 for the United States. He said he and the neighbors ran out one day when Sirhan screamed "Mother, Mother."

They found Sirhan crying by the well, his body shaking, and in the bucket was the arm, Hashimeh said.

He also described other times when Sirhan, angered or frightened, would withdraw into silence and begin shaking. Once, he said, he planned to steal an ice cream cone from a street vendor but Sirhan told him:

"Ziad, do not steal. The man is making his living on a few piastres a day to feed his whole family. It is wrong to steal from him."

Hashimeh said Sirhan was trembling with anger as he spoke and abruptly left for home. Hashimeh said he didn't steal the ice cream.

Another time, Hashimeh said, he lied to Sirhan and was told angrily:

"If you lie to people, they are clever enough to lie back to you. The greatest thing in the world is people. You can learn more from people than you can learn in school."

Hashimeh said Sirhan delivered this rebuff with his fists clenched and raised to his shoulders and

then left. Hashimeh and went home.

Still another incident was when they were playing football. Hashimeh testified.

He said Sirhan suddenly became nervous for no apparent reason and began to shake. Hashimeh asked if he were all right and Sirhan shouted, "Leave me alone! Leave me alone!" and then ran home.

Hashimeh testified that he visited the Sirhan home nearly every day as a boy and that he frequently saw the father, Bishara, strike or push the mother, Mary—and Sirhan as well.

Bishara Sirhan divorced his wife in June of 1968, after a divorce action he first had instituted in 1957, the year he abandoned his wife and children in Pasadena.



DEFENSE WITNESS—Ziad Hashimeh, right, leaves court with Sirhan B. Sirhan's mother and brother, Munir. Hashimeh testified for the defense in Sirhan's trial for the slaying of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.
Times photo by Ben Olander

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

'I Killed Robert

Kennedy'

SIRHAN

EXPLO

SION

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-3 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Change of Plus

Date: 3/1/69
Edition: Preview
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

cc to Jensen
3-3-69

56-156-31-699

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 3 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Judge Rejects Defendant's Demand to Enter Guilty Plea

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan exploded in rage at his murder trial Friday afternoon and demanded to change his plea to guilty and go to the gas chamber.

In a 10-minute tirade before Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker he discharged his counsel, said "I will plead guilty as charged on all counts" and added "I will ask to be executed."

"I killed Robert F. Kennedy, willfully, premeditatedly and with 20 years of malicious forethought."

Judge Walker rejected the plea and ordered the trial to proceed, ignoring Sirhan's demand that he be permitted to act as his own counsel. The judge told Sirhan "now sit down and keep quiet or I'll see to it that you're kept quiet."

The judge threatened Sirhan with a face mask to silence him and adding that he would be strapped to his chair.

In earlier testimony, it was related that when he was about 10 in Jerusalem, Sirhan Bishara Sirhan went to the well one day for his mother. When he drew up the heavy rubber bucket, a severed human arm and hand floated in the water.

This and other childhood terrors, a former neighbor testified Friday, used to send Sirhan into fits of shaking and trembling—the fore-runners of the trance-like states the defense will contend Sirhan was in when he shot and killed Robert F. Kennedy.

Defense witness Ziad Hashimeh, 23 and only a month older than the defendant, described his childhood playmate as a "very sensitive human being" subjected to poverty, a father's beatings and the repeated spectacle of violent deaths.

Hashimeh's testimony corroborated earlier descriptions of Sirhan family life given to The Times last year by other members of the Hashimeh family still living in Jerusalem.

The slim, dark-haired witness who said he last saw Sirhan in late 1956, exchanged frequent broad smiles with the defendant who greeted him with a happy shout as he entered the courtroom.

The Hashimeh family lived in the same large house as the Sirhans in the old walled city of Jerusalem. Hashimeh said nine families totaling about 50 people, lived in the building and shared a common toilet and adjacent well.

Hashimeh said the incident at the well occurred a year or two before the Sirhan family left Jerusalem in late 1956 for the United States. He said he and the neighbors ran out one day when Sirhan screamed "mother, mother."

They found Sirhan crying by the well, his body shaking, and in the bucket was the arm, Hashimeh said.

He also described other times when Sirhan, angered or frightened, would withdraw into silence and begin shaking. Once, he said, he



DEFENSE WITNESS—Ziad Hashoneh, right, who once lived with the Sirhans, leaves courtroom with Sirhan B. Sirhan's mother and brother, Munir. Hashoneh testified for the defense in Sirhan's trial for the slaying of Robert Kennedy. Times photo by Ben Olander

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Lawyers Ask Sirhan Truce

By JOHN DOUGLAS

and

MYRNA OLIVER

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's defense team huddled with the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy in his Hall of Justice isolation cell today in an attempt to reconcile the young Arab to their view of the defense.

The conference was hastily arranged yesterday at the end of an emotion packed court session in which:

• Sirhan tried to fire his lawyers, plead guilty and seek a death sentence.

• The attorneys - Grant B. Cooper, Emile Zola Berman and Russell E. Parsons - attempted, at Sirhan's demand, to withdraw from the case.

• Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding over the trial rejected both pleas and warned Sirhan that if he continued his courtroom outbursts he would be physically restrained.

Judge Walker, in a forceful scolding made it clear to Sirhan that he considered him "incompetent" either to change his plea or plot his own defense.

The drama-packed afternoon began with an outburst by Sirhan midway through the testimony of Pasadena Public Schools official John T. Harris, who was reading Sirhan's school reports into the trial record.

The grades and test evaluations portrayed the 24-year-old Jordanian immigrant as an average student of limited potential.

Sirhan attempted to rise and speak and was shoved back into his chair by Inspector William Conroy, in charge of courtroom security.

Cooper asked that the jury be taken out of the courtroom and Sirhan be given permission to speak.

"I withdraw my original plea of not guilty and I say I am guilty on all counts. I request counsel to disassociate themselves with me.

"I will ask to be executed!" In clipped drum-fire phrases the young Arab spewed out this confession:

"I killed Robert Kennedy, willfully, premeditatedly and with 20 years of malice aforethought."

Told by Judge Walker that, nevertheless, the trial must go forward, so that the evidence could be presented, Sirhan insisted, "I withdraw all evidence."

Judge Walker, then assuming that Sirhan wanted to defend himself, asked Sirhan to define the elements of first degree murder. When the defendant

could not, Walker snapped, "I find you incompetent."

Cooper explained the outburst was triggered by testimony showing Sirhan's poor school grades.

"He doesn't like to be demeaned..." he said. "He doesn't consider himself to be of diminished capacity."

Chief Deputy Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton said he was not surprised by the outburst. "It fits a perfect pattern. He's got a tremendous ego."

Following the outburst Walker recessed court to allow Cooper and his associates to confer with Sirhan. They were joined in the meeting, held in a holding cell off the armor-plated, eighth floor Hall of Justice courtroom, by the defendant's brother, Mu-

hammad, 21. Emerging from the holding cell Cooper demanded that the jury not be recalled, but that he be given permission to address the court.

Rising wearily to his feet he faced Judge Walker across the well of the court and said:

"Since we recessed, we as counsel have conferred with our client. He has advised us definitely, positively, unequivocally that he does not wish us to continue as his counsel.

"None of us has any desire to continue representing a client who does not desire our services. We have prepared what

we feel, based on the facts of the law, a legal defense of diminished responsibility. There is a very violent difference of opinion as to how the defense should be conducted. We can not allow the defendant to run the lawsuit."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-3 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 3/1/69
Edition: Latest News
Author: John Douglas and
Editor: Myrna Oliver
Editor: Donald Goodenood
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-691

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
MAR 3 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to base
3-3-69

At his request, Sirhan Bishara chair. Your trial will proceed. Sirhan, on trial for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, was permitted to make a statement in court yesterday, in which he attempted to change his plea from not guilty to guilty.

Judge Herbert V. Walker denied the request.

The following is a partial text of the conversation between the defendant and the judge:

SIRHAN — I withdraw my original plea of not guilty and say I am guilty on all counts. I request counsel to disassociate themselves with me. I will ask to be executed.

JUDGE — You wish to plead guilty to murder in the first degree?

SIRHAN — Yes.

JUDGE — What penalty will you ask?

SIRHAN — I will ask to be executed.

JUDGE — I know of no law which permits a subject to plead guilty to first-degree murder after he has pleaded not guilty . . . (In this way). Why do you want to do this?

SIRHAN — I believe it is in my best interest.

JUDGE — Why do you believe it is in your best interest?

SIRHAN — That is my prerogative.

JUDGE — It is not.

SIRHAN — I killed Robert Kennedy willfully, premeditatedly and with 20 years of malice aforethought.

JUDGE — . . . Evidence showing that, or not, must be presented in your trial.

SIRHAN — I withdraw all evidence.

JUDGE — There is no such procedure. The court will not accept your plea. Furthermore, any further interruption by you in this trial will result in my having you restrained. Do you realize what that means? It means you will be put in a face mask so that you cannot talk. Your arms will be strapped to a

SIRHAN — I don't want counsel. I want to plead my own case.

JUDGE — You want to go proper (plead your own defense)?

SIRHAN — Yes.

JUDGE — What are the elements of murder?

SIRHAN — I don't know, but

JUDGE — I'll conduct the proceedings. What are the elements of defense in murder?

SIRHAN — I don't know.

JUDGE — You are incapable of representing yourself. I find you incompetent. Sit down and keep quiet or I will take steps to have you kept quiet. I will not accept your plea.

SIRHAN — I'm sorry, sir. I will not accept your words.

JUDGE — I will see you are kept quiet.

Judge Walker advised Sirhan to consult with his attorneys and recessed the court.

Cooper disclosed that during noon recess he arranged for an Arab international lawyer, Baron Sarkees Nahas, to speak with Sirhan in an attempt to convince him of the wisdom of the defense strategy. Baron Nahas, a former United Nations official, testified on Sirhan's behalf at the morning court session.

Cooper said members of Sirhan's family also remonstrated with him. The defendant's brother, Munir, apparently realized well in advance that his effect on his brother was nil. During a recess he turned to one of the deputies guarding the court and said, with a slight smile, "I told you it would be today."

Cooper pleaded with Judge Walker:

"We are perfectly willing, and in a sense anxious, to withdraw from the case and either let him represent himself or let him be represented by other counsel."

Judge Walker answered:

"I know of no law that permits counsel to withdraw in the middle of a case unless there is good cause. I don't feel this situation is good cause."

"He (Sirhan) is not capable of representing himself."

"I deny your motion to withdraw."

Cooper rejoined, "We are prepared and will go forward."

The examination of Harris was completed without further incident and the defense then called Mrs. Mary Sirhan, the Kennedy slayer's 35-year-old mother.

But the afternoon had taken a severe emotional toll on Mary

Sirhan, who had several times burst into tears during her son's tantrums.

Even under the gentle questioning of Parsons associated with the case so long he is considered a family friend, Mrs. Sirhan could not go on.

Teeth clenched, she attempted to answer Parsons' questions without breaking down, but to no avail.

She whimpered a few answers, and the tears came. Munir stepped to the rail of the court and asked Chief Defense Investigator Michael McCowan to intercede to end his mother's ordeal.

Judge Walker adjourned court for the weekend and in an unusual gesture told newsmen:

"I can't conceive of a worse set of circumstances under which a mother could be called to the stand. I think she showed great courage. . . Counsel requested the recess and that was why it was granted."

Earlier in the day a childhood friend of Sirhan's, Ziad Hashim, testified about their lives when both were refugee children in the walled city of Old Jerusalem.

Sirhan was terrified by the carnage of the Palestinian war, he said.

He described his friend of seven years as "sensitive and very honest," but painted a portrait of Sirhan that made the defendant see a person of overly grim ideas.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Defense To Hear 30 Testify

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Attorneys for Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, admitted killer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, open his defense today shortly after the prosecution officially "rests" its case.

Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton will pronounce the rote phrase, "The prosecution rests," early in the session. Then it will be Grant Cooper's turn as chief defense counsel.

Cooper and his associates, Emile Zola Berman and Russell E. Parsons, spent most of yesterday huddled behind closed doors in Cooper's office planning last-minute strategy.

While they were meeting, investigators for Cooper's staff circulated defense subpoenas in the Los Angeles area.

Cooper has said that he will call 30 witnesses in all.

Sirhan's trial was not in session yesterday. Judge Walker gave the attorneys one day to complete their preparations. They had sought an adjournment until Monday, but the jurist told them it was "out of reason" to expect the jury, which is locked up in the Biltmore Hotel, to remain idle that long.

There is a possibility that Sirhan will be the first witness in the defense case, but his mercurial emotions may prevent this. Cooper has half-warned him that if he persists in emotional courtroom outbursts he may have to "get another lawyer."

Judge Walker said Sirhan's outbursts could lead to Sirhan being physically restrained in the armor-plated, eighth-floor Hall of Justice courtroom where his trial takes place under heavy guard.

Should Sirhan not testify today, his mother, 56-year-old Mrs. Mary Sirhan, probably will take the stand in her son's defense. The defense hopes her testimony, and that of the defendant's brother Munir, 21, will be acted under diminished mental capacity.

Cooper and his associates concede they have no chance of winning a acquittal for their client. They seek to induce the jury to spare his life, hoping to prove that his mental state was such that he could not have held within his heart and mind the "malice" necessary for first-degree murder.

In his opening remarks to the jury, Berman said that Sirhan was "in a trance and intoxicated" when he shot Kennedy. There has been speculation that Sirhan will testify that he was in a blackout when the shooting took place in a pantry off the Ambassador Hotel's Embassy Ballroom early the morning of June 5, 1968.

However, so-called blackout is almost a cliché in murder defenses, and it is probable that the defense will seek a more

sophisticated explanation of the mystery of Sirhan for a jury that includes an engineering PhD, a computer programmer and a mathematician.

Also lined up for Sirhan's defense is a team of six psychiatrists and psychologists, led by Dr. Bernard Diamond, nationally famed alienist. They have tested Sirhan for several months and have examined him under hypnosis.

Purpose of the hypnosis was to recreate as nearly as possible the trance which Berman claims Sirhan was under when he shot Kennedy.

Should the jury believe Sirhan and his legal psychiatrists, presumably it would not condemn him to die.

There is another possibility. If during the trial Sirhan's mental state should deteriorate, the trial could be halted and he could be sent to a mental institution until he recovered.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/28/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-697

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 MAR 3 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
3-3-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan: Problem to Lawyer

Sirhan Due To Testify in Own Defense

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan likely will be the lead-off witness when the defense opens its case at his murder trial Friday, according to Grant B. Cooper, chief defense counsel for the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Cooper revealed the potential defense strategy shortly after the prosecution completed presentation of its case yesterday.

The defense lawyer, who had lunched with Sirhan in his jail cell, was clearly worried about the turn the case has taken.

Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding over the trial, ordered a one-day break in the proceedings today, following the prosecution's completion of its presentation of evidence. However, the prosecution will not formally "rest" until court opens tomorrow.

Cooper refused to explain, but said several times, "I have problems . . . with my client."

Los Angeles County Coroner Dr. Thomas T. Noguchi was the final prosecution witness. It was one of his last official acts. He has resigned at the demand of County Administrative Officer L. S. Hollister, and said he would leave his post following his testimony in the Sirhan case.

Under examination by chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton, Dr. Noguchi described the autopsy performed on Kennedy shortly after his death, 1:44 a.m., July 6, 1968.

A bullet fired at one-inch muzzle range, which pierced Kennedy's skull and brain was the cause of death, the Coroner said.

A second bullet, removed from the fleshy part of the Senator's neck, near the vertebrae, would not have caused death, Dr. Noguchi said.

Noguchi's testimony was cut short by Judge Walker, who acceded to Cooper's request that some of the "gory detail" be omitted. He agreed with the defense lawyer that a detailed account of the post mortem "is not necessary."

Dr. V. Fausten Bazilaukas, who attended Kennedy at Central Receiving Hospital where he was taken immediately following the shooting in the pantry off the Ambassador Hotel's Embassy Room, preceded Dr. Noguchi on the stand.

October 2-27-69

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/27/69
Edition: Latest News
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-31-686

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FEB 27 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

He said Kennedy was "lifeless" when brought into Central Receiving. His breathing and pulse was restored through a heart massage and use of a heart-lung machine. Dr. Bazilauskas testified.

He said Kennedy's condition was stable and his pulse and breathing "good" when he was transferred to Good Samaritan Hospital for surgery.

Dr. Bazilauskas was interrupted by a defense objection when he began to tell of Mrs. Ethel Kennedy's anguish as she stood at her husband's side in Central Receiving's treatment room No. 2.

"I was going to inject adrenaline directly into the heart (with a syringe and needle 10 inches long), which is occasionally a life-saving maneuver. But I looked into Mrs. Kennedy's eyes, she was standing just two feet away, and I don't think she could have taken it."

Cooper objected and the physician's reminiscences went no further.

Despite Cooper's forbodings, Sirhan remained calm, but tense throughout yesterday's session.

His lawyers spent more than an hour with him before court opened, calming him before his diaries were read to the jury of eight men and four women. During the 34 minutes the jury studied the diaries, in which Sirhan wrote of his "obsession" to slay Kennedy, the wiry Arab kept up a running conversation with one of his attorneys, Russell E. Parsons, but did not interrupt court proceedings, as he had Tuesday.

A transcript of a portion of a Tuesday in-chambers exchange between Sirhan and Walker revealed the admitted assassin had this to say about changing his plea to guilty rather than let the diaries go to the jury:

"I will do so, sir, not so much. I want to be railroaded into putting its witnesses on the stand tomorrow, the case will deny you the pleasure, sir, of return to the prosecution for a brief period Monday. Laurence Stone, district attorney's handwriting expert who established the Sirhan diaries were in the defendant's handwriting, has not completed his testimony."

"The evidence, sir, that was taken from a home (Sirhan's diaries were seized by police at his Pasadena residence) was illegally obtained, was stolen by the district attorney's people. They had no search warrant. I did not give them any permission, sir, to do what they did to my home."

While Cooper refused to say so, there is every indication that Sirhan is again insisting on taking an active part in plotting defense strategy.

Cooper has said that he and his associates are "not going to let the client run the case." But he has admitted he doubts his ability to control Sirhan.

Sirhan's petulance in the courtroom for the past two days contrasted markedly with an evaluation of him given by a police officer who testified yesterday.

Lt. William C. Jordan described Sirhan as "extremely polite."

"In 15 years as a policeman," Lt. Jordan said, "he is one of the most alert and intelligent people I ever interrogated or attempted to interrogate."

Telling of questioning Sirhan following his arrest at the Ambassador, Jordan said: "Under

the circumstances, we had a very pleasant relationship."

Only mar to the relationship, Jordan testified, was suspicion on Sirhan's part of water and coffee offered him during interrogation. The lieutenant said Sirhan made him taste each cup for him.

Jordan said he asked Sirhan, "Do you think we're trying to poison you?" Sirhan did not answer.

While the defense will begin putting its witnesses on the stand tomorrow, the case will return to the prosecution for a brief period Monday. Laurence Stone, district attorney's handwriting expert who established the Sirhan diaries were in the defendant's handwriting, has not completed his testimony.

It was interrupted, by defense prosecution agreement, to permit Stone to attend a meeting in the East. It will be completed Monday.

Cooper said he expects to call 30 witnesses and take about three weeks to present his case. Lengthy prosecution cross-examination could extend this estimate, he conceded.

Sirhan will testify, as will his mother, Mrs. Mary Sirhan, and brother, Munir, 21. Cooper disclosed he is also seeking to locate another Sirhan brother, Adel, 30, now believed in Washington state.

It is expected that the defense will call at least six psychologists and psychiatrists in its attempt to show Sirhan acted under diminished mental capacity in the shooting. That panel will be led by Dr. Bernard Diamond, nationally-famed forensic psychiatrist, who has worked with Sirhan for the past several months. Results of tests on the defendant performed while he was under hypnosis will be introduced.

The prosecution took nine days to present its case. It called 56 witnesses of 80 it had ready, and gave the jury 30 exhibits. Three more exhibits were prepared, but not admitted into evidence — including a passage from the Sirhan diaries ruled by Judge Walker to be too "inflammatory" for the jurors' eyes.

Compton said yesterday he would insert into the record, although not seek to present to the jury, statements taken from 200 other peripheral witnesses questioned in his investigation of the case.

"I don't want anyone to think we are hiding anything," he explained.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Warned to Calm Down or Get Another Attorney

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, uneasy about his defense strategy and uneasy at his murder trial this week, is "going to have to calm down or get another lawyer," one of his defense attorneys warned him Wednesday.

Two other warnings came from Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker:

1—If Sirhan should lose or fire his three-man defense team and then undertake his own defense, the jurist said, "There is one thing I have always told all defendants sitting as their own counsel: when they are being tried for murder in a case before me they usually go to the gas chamber."

2—If Sirhan doesn't control his courtroom outbursts, he will be physically restrained—perhaps by being strapped in his chair during court sessions.

These developments came to light Wednesday as the prosecution wound up its case against Sirhan and opened the way Friday—after a recess today—for the defense effort to prove that the admitted slayer of Robert F. Kennedy is not guilty, by reason of diminished mental capacity.

The defense team would not discuss its opening tactics. Attorney Grant Cooper, who earlier warned Sirhan about calming down, said "we have some problems," but would not amplify.

The problems were reliably reported, however, to involve Sirhan's state of mind about the conduct of his defense.

Early Tuesday morning, before the trial resumed, Sirhan surprised

the judge, the prosecution, and even his own defense team with the impulsive which read, "Please be decision to charge his plea guilty."

A transcript released Wednesday of an in-chambers session Tuesday

morning confirmed that Sirhan wanted to change his plea from innocent to guilty, and that he'd near-ly had a blowup Monday afternoon when the prosecution began its lengthy introduction of his controversial notebooks. It said in part: "Your honor, if these notebooks are allowed in evidence, I will change my plea to guilty as charged."

"I will do so, sir, not so much that I want to be railroaded into that gas chamber, sir, but to deny you the pleasure, sir, of after convicting me turning around and telling the world: 'Well, I put that fellow in the gas chamber, but I first gave him a fair trial,' when you in fact, sir, will not have done so."

The evidence, sir, that was taken from my home was illegally obtained, was stolen by the district attorney's people. They had no search warrant. I did not give them any permission, sir, to do what they did to my home.

"My brother Adel had no permission to give them permission to enter my own room and take what they took from my home, from my own room."

It was expected, however, that barring continued difficulty with their mercurial client, the defense would call Sirhan himself, his mother, Mary, and defense contention that brothers Munir and Adel Sirhan's capacity to premeditate. Sen. Kennedy's death was diminished.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/27/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-695

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 EB 27 1969	
FBI — LOS ANGELES	

cc Taber
2-27-69

The prosecution case, though virtually complete, was not formally rested Wednesday.

Dep. Dist. Attys. John E. Howard and David N. Pitts and Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton said they must organize prosecution exhibits and finish testimony from one witness, handwriting analyst Laurence Sloan, who is out of town until Monday.

The case can, however, be formally rested Friday with the stipulation that the defense case may be interrupted Monday to finish Sloan's testimony.

Transcript of another in-chambers session Tuesday afternoon revealed that counsel for both sides debated with Judge Walker whether Sirhan's outbursts might have been, in Compton's words, "malingering or putting on some kind of an act."

Cooper assured Judge Walker and Compton that Sirhan's behavior was not an act and that both de-

fense counsel and Sirhan's family had tried to curb his explosive behavior.

They debated whether to call in a psychiatrist to examine Sirhan Tuesday afternoon, but decided against it when all agreed there was no evidence that Sirhan's outbursts indicated he didn't understand the nature and import of the courtroom proceedings.

Oddly, Sirhan was composed and quiet Wednesday during the one thing he was most alarmed about Tuesday — jurors' examination of the notebook evidence.

The jurors appeared deeply absorbed as they read the chaotic scribbles of Sirhan's political views, mixed with unintelligible phrases and the repeated statement that he would kill Sen. Kennedy.

Several jurors looked frankly bewildered at what they read in the sometimes disjointed, sometimes repetitious narrative.

Howard drew from Police Lt. William C. Jordan the description of Sirhan after his arrest on June 5 as "extremely intelligent. He speaks very well. He denied any formal education

but speaks as if he were well-educated. He was emphatic on certain points and showed an inquiring mind.

"In 15 years (of Jordan's police work) I'd have to say he is one of the most alert, intelligent people I've ever interrogated, or attempted to interrogate."

Jordan testified, however, that Sirhan revealed almost nothing in the interrogation, not even his name.

But he admitted to Cooper that Sirhan, while uninformative, was "extremely polite. Under the circumstances we had a very pleasant relationship."

"You talked about things unrelated to this case?" Cooper asked.

"We specifically avoided discussing this case," said Jordan.

"But in your talk, you laughed, and he laughed?" asked Cooper.

"Yes, sir," said Jordan.

Jordan said it was his opinion that Sirhan was not at that time under the influence of either alcohol or drugs, and thus he administered no test for drunkenness.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Report on Sirhan 'Deal' Inaccurate, DA Says

BY RON EINSTOSS

Times Staff Writer

A report that the State Department "specifically approved" an agreement by which Sirhan Bishara Sirhan would change his plea to guilty in exchange for a sentence of life in prison was described Wednesday as "inaccurate" by Dist. Atty. Evelle J. Younger.

In a syndicated column appearing in many newspapers, Frank Mankiewicz and Tom Braden said Younger, after advising Secretary of State William Rogers that he was considering such an arrangement, was informed that the "proposed deal" was acceptable.

According to the columnists, the State Department—"as a matter of U.S. foreign policy"—felt that if a trial were avoided "it could only have a beneficial effect as far as the fierce and violent Middle East passions were concerned." Mankiewicz and Braden reported that Younger even went to Washington "for some foreign policy advice and got it" after the offer by Sirhan to plead guilty with a guarantee of life imprisonment.

It was only after he was "armed with Rogers' approval" that Younger "approved the bargain" and with Sirhan's attorneys submitted the matter to Superior Judge Herbert V.

Walker for his consent, they wrote.

Contacted in Lima, Peru, where he is on temporary assignment, Mankiewicz said that he and Braden stand by their column.

Said Mankiewicz, "We obtained the facts that went into the column from an unimpeachable source in Los Angeles. Moreover, we double-checked them

with a high official in Secretary Rogers' office in the State Department."

In a statement issued Wednesday, Younger said Rogers never discussed the case with him and that "he (Rogers) did not approve, disapprove or otherwise comment upon any phase of the Sirhan case."

Younger noted that on Feb. 11 he disclosed that he had offered "appropriate (government) officials" the opportunity to make any comments concerning the disposition of the case and that they "declined and made no comment or recommendation."

"This statement was true at the time. It is still true. Mr. Rogers has not discussed the Sirhan case

with me to this date. He has made no recommendations. I don't anticipate that he will," Younger said.

The Times first revealed on Feb. 12 the existence of an agreement whereby Sirhan had offered to plead guilty if he could be guaranteed life in prison.

A week later The Times reported that the deal fell through only because Judge Walker had refused to give his required consent to the penalty stipulation.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-25 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/27/69
Edition: Home
Author: Ron Einstoss
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-694

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FEB 27 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
2-27-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Diary Use Triggers Sirhan's Outburst

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's emotional state has taken center stage in his murder trial and his lawyers doubt their ability to control him when diaries — in which he expressed his desire to kill Sen. Robert Kennedy — are read to his jury.

Sirhan tried twice yesterday to plead guilty and halt his trial, rather than allow the jury to learn the contents of three diaries he kept prior to June 6, 1968, when he admittedly shot the New York senator.

Both his attorneys and Judge Herbert V. Walker, who presides over the trial, refused to permit the change of plea, but Chief Defense Counsel Grant B. Cooper said later that there is no certainty Sirhan will not try the same tactic again.

Frustrated in his change of plea maneuver, Sirhan erupted in the courtroom, forcing a halt to his trial while counsel and family tried to calm him.

Emerging from a holding cell where he had reasoned with his client for more than an hour, Cooper said Sirhan was "relatively calm."

But the veteran trial lawyer warned, "he is very mercurial."

Cooper said he and his associates, Emile Zola Berman and Russell E. Parsons, would withdraw from the case before permitting Sirhan to plead guilty.

"He doesn't know what the hell he's doing," Cooper said.

Chief Deputy Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton disclosed that Sirhan had told Judge Walker:

"I'd rather plead guilty and die in the gas chamber than

have people think I'm getting a fair trial."

Explaining that remark, Cooper said, "Sirhan feels his constitutional rights were violated in taking these documents of his (the diaries) and offering them in evidence."

He said that in an in-chambers conference Sirhan, "blew up the same as he did this (yesterday) afternoon."

"He said he wanted to talk to the Judge."

"He told Judge Walker, in effect, that he didn't think he was right in admitting the diaries into evidence. He said he didn't think he was getting a fair trial."

Later in the conference, according to Cooper, Sirhan told Walker, "I want your honor to take my plea of guilty."

"Judge Walker told him," continued Cooper, "Mr. Sirhan, you are represented by three able counsel with your best interest at heart . . . Listen to their advice."

Cooper explained that even if Sirhan persists, Judge Walker is not bound to accept his plea.

If he persists, Cooper avowed, "first he has to discharge us. Neither I, nor Zook (Emile Zola) Berman, nor Ross (Russell E.) Parsons would consent to such a thing."

Cooper forecast that if Sirhan insisted on the plea change, Judge Walker would not act without lengthy consultation with the young Jordanian defendant. A psychiatric examination would also probably be ordered, Cooper said.

The defense lawyer disclosed that Judge Walker already has rejected a prosecution suggestion, voiced first by Compton and later by Dist. Atty. Evelle J. Younger that Sirhan be allowed to plead guilty and be

sentenced to an automatic life term.

The defense turned down an offer that the young Arab plead guilty to first-degree murder and throw himself on the mercy of the jury, Cooper reaffirmed.

After Sirhan's first courtroom outburst, the trial proceeded normally. But Cooper asked for a recess and then adjournment after the second.

That came as Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts sought to begin reading to the jury the diaries' contents.

Sirhan rose to his feet calling, "Forgive me your honor . . ."

In an instant, Inspector William Conroy, in charge of courtroom security, forced Sirhan into his seat. Conroy, Cooper and Chief Defense Investigator Michael McCoy huddled around him, vainly seeking to calm him.

Sirhan was removed from the courtroom and his three lawyers joined him in an antechamber. In a few minutes they sent for his mother, Mrs. Mary Sirhan. She emerged some 10

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/26/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 27 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

56-156-21-623

minutes later, tears streaming down her face.

The defense lawyers and the prosecutors then conferred in chambers with Judge Walker, arranging for a halt in the day's proceedings.

When Sirhan was brought back to court for adjournment proceedings, his face was marked with tears.

He was returned to the antechamber. He waited there until joined by his mother and brother, Munir. After 30 minutes they left, and Cooper said his client was "relatively calm."

None of Sirhan's behavior, short of a change of plea, prevented the jury learning of his diaries' contents. Judge Walker has admitted most of them in evidence and the reading of them to the eight men and four women jurors and their six alternates is today's first order of business.

Only two pages which the judge found "inflammatory" will be kept from the jury. Robert Fitzgerald (sic) Ken Compton released these pages as the "public and national" interest, with Judge

Walker's permission. Cooper sought unsuccessfully to get Walker to forbid their publication.

In the so-called inflammatory passages, Sirhan wrote:

"I advocate the overthrow of the current president of the (obscenely) United States of America. . .

"I firmly support the Communist cause and its people—whether Russian, Chinese, Albanian, Hungarian or whatever—Workers of the World Unite.

This passage is signed "Sol Cord" and bears an Arabic inscription.

In addition to the diaries, notes Sirhan made on two envelopes will be read to the jury this morning.

One, recovered from a garbage can behind his home by Pasadena police reads:

"RFK must be disposed of d d d . . . disposed . . . disposed . . . disposed d of . . . disposed . . .

"Disposed of properly . . . will be kept from the jury. Robert Fitzgerald (sic) Ken Compton released these pages as the "public and national" interest, with Judge

The second envelope notation states, "RFK must be disposed of like his brother was . . . reactionary."

Sirhan prefaced a diary entry:

"My determination to eliminate R.F.K. is becoming more the more of an unshakable obsession."

He continued:

"Port wine . . . Port wine . . . port wine . . .

"R.F.K. must die—R.F.K. must be killed, R.F.K. must be assassinated, R.F.K. must be assassinated . . . R.F.K. must be assassinated, must be assassinated . . .

RFK must be
to be disposed of
d 22
disposed

disposed of

disposed

disposed properly

Robert F. Kennedy

Kennedy must soon die

die die die die
be die die die die

—UPI Photo

SIRHAN'S WRITING ON BACK OF ENVELOPE
Its introduction prompted defendant's tantrum

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Enraged, Wants to Plead Guilty, Got Death

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, enraged at public disclosure of his writings and their admission into evidence at his murder trial, now wants to plead guilty and go to the gas chamber, his defense counsel said Tuesday.

"We're not going to let him," said Grant C. Cooper. "He's blown his top, that's all."

Sirhan's sudden change of heart came Tuesday morning in Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker's chambers, before the trial resumed with argument on admission of notebooks in which Sirhan wrote of his intent to assassinate Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Sirhan's writings describe the 24-year-old Jordanian immigrant's resentment of his poverty, his anger at the United States, a firm but obviously uninformed belief in communism and a growing determination to kill Sen. Kennedy.

Six pages of chaotic, sometimes illegible scribbling in a spiral notebook, along with samples of Sirhan's handwriting and two envelopes, were admitted into evidence. On one envelope carelessly tossed into the

trash and found last June 6, hours after Sen. Kennedy died, was the note: "RFK must be disposed of like his brother was."

Before the ruling on the notebooks, it was learned that Sirhan told Judge Walker that if they were admitted, he would be railroaded into the gas chamber.

He reportedly told Judge Walker that he didn't want the judge "gloating over the fact that you made the people think I got a fair trial."

Instead, Sirhan is reported to have said, he would rather "stand up right now and plead guilty and go to the gas chamber."

It was learned that Sirhan said Judge Walker was not giving him a fair trial in letting the notebooks into evidence and claimed that prosecution use of the notebooks, taken from his Pasadena home last June 5 without a search warrant, violated his constitutional rights.

Judge Walker reportedly told Sirhan that his best interests were being protected by his three-man defense team—Cooper, Emile Zola Berman and Russell B. Parsons—and that he should follow their advice.

Explodes Twice

But Sirhan apparently remained dubious Tuesday about staying with his not guilty plea, and twice exploded verbally in court during discussion of the notebooks' contents.

At his second outburst, moments after the afternoon session convened, Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts had just begun to describe the notebooks' contents to the jury when Sirhan raised his left hand in a commanding gesture and said, "Your honor, excuse me for interrupting."

Defense attorneys swooped down on their obviously agitated client, whispered urgently for several minutes and then requested a recess.

The jury was taken out, and Sirhan, normally led from the courtroom by two deputies, stalked quickly ahead of them to an adjacent holding room.

Half-Hour Huddle

There, for about half an hour defense attorneys, Sirhan's mother, Mary, and brother, Munir, 21, sought to calm the excited defendant and talk him out of changing his plea. Both the mother and brother appeared to have been crying when they reappeared.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/26/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-692

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FEB 26 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Sirhan's Outburst
in Court

Cooper then was granted a continuance until this morning.

Cooper said Sirhan "apparently was calmed down" after their private huddle, but added, "I don't know what he'll do in the morning. He was highly excited."

Sirhan's wish to plead guilty and face the death penalty is a reversal of his position of two weeks ago, when both defense and prosecution attorneys were willing for Sirhan to plead guilty to first-degree murder with the understanding that he would receive a life sentence.

Judge Walker rejected that arrangement, insisting that the question of penalty — death or life imprisonment be left up to the jury.

At that, Sirhan, then unwilling to risk a possible death sentence, refused to change his plea.

Since then, the prosecution has laid out most of its case against Sirhan, including color photographs of Sen. Kennedy's fatal head wound and the diary with its repeated injunctions that Sen. Kennedy must be killed.

With so much prosecution evidence before the jury and no defense evidence to counterbalance it, the defense would run a risk if Sirhan now pleaded guilty and took a chance on escaping the gas chamber.

Another irony is the fact that while the prosecution regards Sirhan's notebooks as proof of premeditation, the defense regards them as indispensable evidence of Sirhan's psychological incapacity to premeditate and the most likely single avenue toward saving Sirhan's life.

Why is Sirhan so opposed to disclosure of the notebooks?

Fears Ridicule?

Sirhan is said to be intensely proud of his intellect and fearful of having his political views and inner thoughts held up to ridicule or criticism. Defense attorneys have said that Sirhan resents any implication that he might be mentally ill, and in fact he protested aloud in court when Berman referred to him as an "immature, emotionally disturbed and mentally ill youth."

Some months before he shot and killed Sen. Kennedy, Sirhan wrote:

"I advocate the overthrow of the current president of the United States of America. I have no absolute plans yet—but soon will compose some . . . I am poor."

This was in two pages—labeled "highly inflammatory and prejudicial to the defense" by Cooper — which were barred from evidence.

Denies New Curb

But Judge Walker denied Cooper's repeated plea to admonish all parties not to divulge their contents to the press.

"I don't think the court can restrict the press in any way," said the 69-year-old jurist.

The controversial two pages will be kept from the eyes of the jury, which is sequestered throughout the trial.

But Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton argued — successfully — that the public had the right to know "what motivated the defendant." Compton also suggested that the contents of the two pages, inflammatory or not, illustrated Sirhan's thinking and thus underscored the "sole issue" in Sirhan's trial.

As Compton argued for release of the two pages, Sirhan sprang to his feet and shouted angrily in Arabic, gesticulating fiercely with his left hand.

The outburst, the most dramatic so far, came just as Compton referred to Sirhan's "advocating the overthrow of the country."

Court officials jumped to

Sirhan's side and defense attorneys pushed him down in his seat as Compton went out. Minutes after the angry shout, Sirhan was smiling again and whispering with his attorneys.

The defense has admitted all along that Sirhan killed Sen. Kennedy, but maintains that he did so in an obsessive frame of mind.

It was not clear when Sirhan wrote most of the material contained in the 8½-by-11-inch notebook.

The embattled two pages read:

"Equality before and AFTER the law.

"I advocate the overthrow of the current president of the —United States of America. I have no absolute plans yet—but soon will compose some . . . I am poor. This country's propaganda (sic) says that she is the best country in the world—I have not experienced this yet—the U.S. says that life in Russia is bad — WHY — Supposedly no average American has ever lived in a slavish society so how can he tell if it is good or bad—isn't his gov't putting words in his mouth.

More of Writings

"Anyway—I believe that the U.S. is ready to start declining, not that it hasn't (sic) — it began in Nov. 23, '63, but it should decline at a faster rate so that the real utopia will not be to (sic) far from being realized during the early '70s in this country.

"I firmly support the communist cause and its people—wether (sic) Russian, Chinese, Albanian, Hungarian or whoever.

"Workers of the world unite, you have nothing to loose (sic) but your CHAINS and a world to win.

"Workers of the world unite, you have nothing to loose but your chains and a world to win—

"Workers of the world unite, you have nothing to

loose but your chains.

The rest of the page trails away in scribbles in English and Arabic, including his nickname, "Sol."

Elsewhere, Sirhan wrote variations on "RFK must die, RFK must be killed" across one entire page. At the top Sirhan wrote the date May 18, 9:45 a.m. '68, and the note, "My determination to eliminate RFK is becoming more the more (sic) of an unshakable obsession."

Further on he wrote: "Robert F. Kennedy must be assassinated assassinated assassinated assassinated . . ."

Opinion Supported

On two other pages, Sirhan neatly inscribed what appear to be quotations from another source that evidently supported his own dour assessment of U.S. life. That section ends with Sirhan's own summary, in characteristically messy writing:

"Well, my solution to this type of government, that is to do away with its leaders and declare anarchy the best form of gov't — or no gov't . . . The president elect is your best friend until he gets in power. Then he sucks every drop of blood out of you—and if he doesn't like you—you're dead."

On another page, Sirhan also wrote that "Ambassador Goldberg must be assassinated" — referring to former U.N. Ambassador Arthur Goldberg.

In a manifesto-like paragraph, similar to several other portions of the diary later to be cited by the defense as indicative of his obsessions, Sirhan wrote:

"The so-called president of the United States of America must be advised of their punishments for their reasonable crimes against the (sic) state more over we believe that the glorious United States of America will eventually be felled by a blow of an assassin's bullet—b—bullets bullets assassin's bullet . . ."

RFK must be
be disposed of
d d
disposed
disposed of
disposed
disposed of properly
Robert Fitzgerald
Kennedy must join die
die die die die
be die die die die

ADMITTED INTO EVIDENCE—Envelope with hand-
scribbling that was found in a trash can at home
of Sirhan Sirhan after Robert F. Kennedy's death.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Coroner Noguchi Quits in Feud With Hollinger

Will Leave Office After He Testifies at Trial of Sirhan

BY RAY ZEMAN
Times County Bureau Chief

Dr. Thomas Noguchi resigned Tuesday as chief county medical examiner and coroner.

The sudden resignation climaxed a bitter feud with L. S. Hollinger, the county's chief administrative officer.

Last Friday Dr. Noguchi said Hollinger had threatened to file "some type of charge" against him if he didn't quit.

Dr. Noguchi will become a pathologist in the county medical service at no reduction in salary. He is paid \$31,104 a year.

His resignation will take effect March 4.

Called in Sirhan Case

"I have been called to testify as county coroner in the Sirhan case," Noguchi said. He referred to his autopsy last year in the assassination of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

"I've decided, as soon as that is completed, to give up my position as coroner so that I can devote all my time and energies to the practice of forensic pathology in which I am specially trained," he said.

"The administrative duties of the coroner take up a lot of time that I should like to spend in my professional field.

"I am fortified in my decision by my knowledge that as coroner I have contributed to improvement of the office and its ability to serve the public."

Passes Out Copies of Letter

Dr. Noguchi passed out copies of his letter of resignation in the Hall of Administration press room just 20 minutes after the supervisors had adjourned their regular session at noon.

The board had intended to go into executive session to hear Hollinger's analysis of complaints against the coroner. It adjourned amid reports that Dr. Noguchi's resignation was imminent.

Last Friday Dr. Noguchi defended his record, including the autopsy in the Kennedy assassination.

Hollinger insisted he was not referring to the Kennedy death when he issued a statement that he had received "a number of complaints and charges about the way Dr. Noguchi runs his office."

Dr. Noguchi, 42, had been coroner since Dec. 19, 1967.

He was appointed by a 3-2 vote of the supervisors after the UCLA and USC schools of medicine opposed the appointment. The schools contended he was too young and too inexperienced for the job.

The supervisors will choose his successor after a civil service examination.

Dr. Noguchi, Japanese-born, is a naturalized citizen. He is a graduate of the Nippon Medical School and served his internship in the Tokyo Imperial Hospital and the Orange County General Hospital.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/26/69
Edition: Home
Author: Ray Zeman
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-691

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 26 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Work Routine Criticized

Hollinger has complained that Dr. Noguchi spent too much time investigating routine deaths from natural causes and not enough on violent and suspicious cases.

He remained silent Tuesday about other complaints and charges he said he has received.

The compromise in transferring Dr. Noguchi averted publication of these charges and a long airing in civil service hearings.

Keeping Dr. Noguchi's salary at the same level when he transfers from the Coroner's Department to the Department of Hospitals will follow a county policy known as "Y-rating." This insures an employee against any cut in salary in an interdepartmental shift.



Dr. Thomas Noguchi

Times photo

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Fight Looms Over Sirhan Diaries Use

By John Douglas

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

A major clash in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial loomed today as prosecutors sought to put before the jury three diaries written by the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

A preliminary skirmish in the battle of the notebooks was abruptly halted yesterday when the young Arab became visibly upset in the courtroom and his chief defense counsel, Grant B. Cooper, called for a recess.

Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding over the trial, then adjourned for the day. Cooper and his associate, Russell E. Parsons, calmed Sirhan before he was returned to his cell.

The two attorneys declined to say what their client had told them, but Parsons indicated that Sirhan had misunderstood preliminary legal maneuvers and believed Judge Walker had admitted the diaries in evidence. Actually the judge will not make that ruling until today.

Sirhan's position is that "the notebooks are his and he does not want them read by anyone," Parsons said.

The lawyer charged police who searched the Sirhan home at 606 E. Howard St., Pasadena, following the shooting had "stolen" the diaries. Police admit they acted without a search warrant.

During examination of Police Sgt. William E. Brandt Sirhan rose in his chair and talked excitedly with his lawyers and Chief Defense Investigator Michael McCowan. He wiped his brow several times during their discussion.

Brandt, under questioning by Dep. Dist. Atty. John Howard, told the jury of eight men and four women that the defendant's brother, Adel Sirhan, 30, gave him permission to search the family home. He said he went to the Howard Street address from Pasadena Police Headquarters where he met both Adel and Munir Sirhan, another Cuneo that Sen. Kennedy might have fared better had he received different treatment at Central Receiving Hospital where he was taken immediately following the shooting in a pantry off the Ambassador Hotel's Embassy Ballroom.

Dr. Cuneo disputed this. He said he thought the physicians at Central Receiving had done all they could for Kennedy before transferring him to Good Samaritan.

A major portion of yesterday's trial session was taken up with the testimony of DeWayne Wolfer, Los Angeles Police Dept. ballistics expert.

Wolfer identified, and the jury was shown, bullet fragments removed from Kennedy's brain during surgery and at the subsequent autopsy. Also shown was a bullet taken from the slain senator's neck.

Wolfer identified this slug, as well as slugs taken from the wounds of three other persons injured in the shooting melee which claimed Kennedy's life, as having been fired by Sirhan's gun.

Shown the jury over Cooper's vigorous protests were autopsy photographs showing Kennedy's head wounds, which Cooper denounced as "inflammatory" to the jury.

His efforts to block the photos were unsuccessful as were those to put short Dr. Cuneo's testimony, which the defense lawyer objected to as a "gory detail."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-2 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/25/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification:
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-26-690

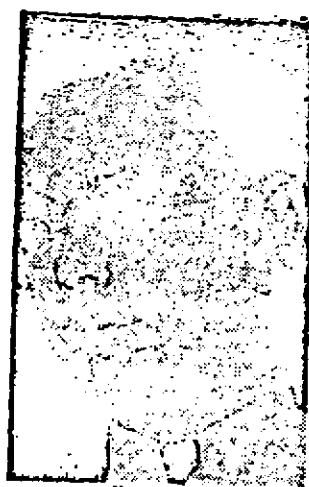
SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 26 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	



—Herald-Examiner Photo

DR. HENRY CUNEO ENTERS COURT

"We knew things were really bad"



Herald-Examiner Photo

SGT. W. E. BRANDT
He found diaries

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Move for Mistrial May Be Made by Sirhan's Attorneys

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

The possibility of motions for a mistrial or a change of venue were raised Wednesday by two defense attorneys for Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, accused slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

New York lawyer Emile Zola Berman told Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker that the defense would be prepared to present evidence in support of a motion this morning regarding "the saturation of publicity in this area."

During a 10-minute recess, co-counsel Russell B. Parsons said the defense is concerned about both the amount and character of publicity devoted by local news media to the Sirhan case.

Refuses to Answer Directly

Asked if this indicated the defense would seek to move the Sirhan trial elsewhere, Parsons refused to answer directly, but referred to earlier defense statements indicating it was felt that there were few places in the world where the case had not been greatly publicized.

Asked if a motion for mistrial seemed the more likely prospect, Parsons answered, "I would say a motion for mistrial is more likely."

But the specific character of the planned defense motion was discussed in Judge Walker's chambers during a closed meeting that brought Wednesday's court session to a close.

It was expected that after motions are dealt with this morning, the trial will recess until Monday morning, when jury selection will begin.

Court observers felt the prospects were not bright for either possible motion. Judge Walker has declared his impatience to get the trial moving and in denying a continuance Wednesday, cited a long list of delays in the case since the assassination of the New York senator last June.

Big Expense Cited

As to moving the trial to another county, observers cite the enormous expense already incurred and the massive security precautions undertaken to protect the defendant here. The money, manpower and time required to duplicate these precautions elsewhere could weigh heavily against Judge Walker's ruling favorably on a change of venue.

The observers add that Walker, 69, plans to retire in July with the Sirhan trial as the capstone of a career that has made him the dean of criminal judges in Los Angeles County.

Wednesday, only the second day of Sirhan's long-delayed trial, was marked like the first by defense efforts to forestall the immediate opening of the jury selection phase — a process expected to consume three to four weeks.

Defense counsel Grant B. Cooper moved for a 30-day continuance, which he said the defense team needed to compile its evidence in support of other motions left unresolved Wednesday by Judge Walker.

But Judge Walker denied a continuance of that length, and after a closed session in chambers, Co-

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 1/9/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-689

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
JAN 9 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

per said defense and prosecution had agreed to begin questioning prospective jurors Monday.

Cooper suffered heavy going in arguing a series of motions aimed at gaining time. He first reintroduced a motion—denied Tuesday—that separate juries be impaneled—one to determine guilt or innocence, the other to fix the penalty if the 24-year-old Jordanian is convicted.

Cooper cited a pending case before the U.S. Supreme Court on grounds that the single verdict procedure forces a defendant to decide whether to offer mitigating evidence which could reduce the penalty but would also bring the risk of self-incrimination.

Cooper contended that the single verdict procedure poses a dilemma which violates the 5th and 14th Amendments.

Another Rejection

Judge Walker again denied the motion, repeating the opinion he expressed Tuesday—that Cooper could reintroduce the same motion at a later phase of the trial if circumstances warrant.

The judge also pointed out that an earlier defense motion to set aside Sirhan's plea of innocence was no longer required under recent penal code changes. These allow for quashing of an indictment—still another defense motion—even after a plea has been entered.

With Judge Walker's denial of the 30-day continuance plea, the jurist also pointed out that the motion to quash the indictment could be ruled upon at any time in the course of jury selection and that this phase should give the defense ample time to gather its evidence.

The bulk of Wednes-

day's court session was taken up with arguments on Cooper's motion to set aside the jury list, which the defense contends does not represent a broad cross-section of the population.

Cooper cited a long list of occupations which are excused from jury duty, including legislators, attorneys and their employees, clergymen, teachers, those in the medical profession and many others.

He then introduced Los Angeles County Jury Commissioner William A. Goodwin as a defense witness, said he had not had adequate time to question Goodwin in advance and asked to recall him later.

Begins Questions

But Judge Walker denied this request and Cooper launched a series of questions designed to support his contention that selection of jurors from voters' lists automatically involves exclusion of broad classes of citizens.

Goodwin testified that the list of jurors for the county's central district, in which the Sirhan case is contained, is drawn up by data processing machines which select every fifth name from every sixth precinct throughout the county.

Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard, cross-examining Goodwin, asked if there was ever any exclusion of prospective jurors on the basis of political belief, race, religion, or occupation.

To each question, Goodwin replied, "No."

Cooper protested that the defense still was not prepared to present its evidence supporting the motions to set aside the

jury list and the indictment.

Judge Walker then ruled that both motions would be held open for later ruling, but that the trial would continue.

Waves to Mother

For the second day of his trial on charges of first-degree murder, Sirhan was quiet but seemed in generally good spirits. Upon entering the courtroom, flanked by two sheriff's deputies, the short, slim defendant waved at his mother and two brothers in the back row.

Once seated, he again turned to his family, smiled broadly and waved again. He held numerous whispered conferences with Parsons, at his immediate right, and followed the courtroom procedure with an alert air.

Sirhan's mother, Mary, 55, in a black and gold dress, sat with two of Sirhan's four brothers, Munir, 21, and Adel, 30, who live in the family home in Pasadena. Two other brothers, Sharif, 37, and Saidallah, 36, who also live in the area, have yet to attend their brother's trial.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Trial: Defense Hits Indictment

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Defense attorneys for Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, 24, accused as the slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, today resorted to seldom used legal stratagems in an attempt to have Sirhan's murder indictment set aside.

The defense mounted a major legal attack on the indictment, which, if successful, would return the young Jordanian immigrant to the status he had the day he was arrested for Kennedy's murder.

First move in the complex legal maneuver was a demand by Chief Defense Attorney Grant B. Cooper that Sirhan's plea of not guilty be set aside.

If this is successful, the way would be cleared to assail the indictment through an attack on the 1968 Los Angeles County grand jury which returned it.

Should that attack succeed, Sirhan would become simply an

individual arrested by Los Angeles police for the June 5 slaying, and the process of bringing him to trial would have to start again.

If Cooper's attack on the indictment fails, Sirhan would still have the right to restore his plea of not guilty.

Cooper has indicated that testimony he wants to introduce in support of one of his maneuvers will be lengthy. At one point yesterday he suggested a 30-day delay to iron out legal points.

Cooper's suggestion, which never reached the formal motion stage, was brushed aside by Superior Court Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding over the trial.

Cooper has made it clear that the reason he wants the plea set aside is to lay the groundwork for an attack against the 1968 Los Angeles County Grand

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 1/9/69
Edition: Sunset
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-188

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 JAN 9 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Jury, and California's Grandman of New York, joined his Jury selection system in general colleagues even later.)

al.

In yesterday's proceedings

The system has been attacked Cooper lost two of his moves. before, and at the level of the He failed:

State Supreme Court the attacks To get Judge Walker to have been unsuccessful. However, agree to two juries in the case—er, Cooper points out that the one to hear the evidence, the attack against the system is other to set the penalty, should being carried to the U.S. Su. there be a first degree murder preme Court. conviction.

Cooper has assailed selection To get the jurist to assent of the 1968 Grand Jury on the to written, instead of oral, ex- grounds that the system which amination of prospective jurors. permits judges to nominate Chief Deputy District Attor- Grand Jury candidates, who are ney Lynn Compton, who heads then chosen by a spin of the the prosecution, opposed both wheel, inherently excludes moves. Walker rejected the two- "members of some minority jury request out of hand, and groups and persons of some denied the plea for written ex- national background." aminations on the grounds that

The legal concept of "timeli- the jury prospects might act in ness" could mitigate against collusion in filling out written Cooper's move to withdraw the questionnaires.

"not guilty" plea, even though At a post session news confer- withdrawal of the plea is but a- ence yesterday Cooper con- technical maneuver. The con- firmed speculation that the Sir- cept's rationale is that there, han defense will be based on was a proper time and place for legal and psychological grounds. Cooper's argument, and that it may not have been made.

The chief defense counsel's He said: "The defense will not deny answer to that is: "I wasn't, in Sirhan shot Kennedy. A lot of the case then." people saw him.

"The defense will be along other lines."

(Cooper joined defense attor- ney Russell E. Parsons in the Sirhan case last month after conclusion of the Friars Club card cheating trail. The third defense lawyer, Emile Zola Ber-



—Associated Press Photo

THREE DEPUTIES FORM DISTRICT ATTORNEY'S OFFICE, PROSECUTORS OF SIRHAN
From left, John Howard, David Fitts, and Lynn Compton arrive at hall of Justice for trial session

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Trial Due to Start Today but Defense May Request Delay

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

The trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, accused slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, was scheduled to begin in Superior Court at 9:30 a.m. today, seven months and one day after Sen. Kennedy's death, but late Monday the possibility arose that the defense might seek a fourth postponement.

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper, involved in a federal grand jury investigation growing out of the Friars Club card-cheating case, said he felt it might be in Sirhan's best interests that another postponement be granted.

Cooper has refused to answer grand jury questions on how he came to possess unauthorized transcripts in the Friars Club case.

The attorney indicated late Monday that he felt it might prejudice the 24-year-old Jordanian's right to a fair trial if the case were to go on while the federal grand jury's investigation is under way.

No Indication of Barrier

There was no indication there would be any barrier to Cooper's appearance for this morning's session of the Sirhan trial before Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker.

But Cooper is scheduled to appear in federal court at 1 p.m. today, one hour before the scheduled afternoon session of the Sirhan trial, to either answer the federal grand jury's questions—which he has said he will refuse to do—or show cause why he should not be held in contempt.

Another lawyer for Sirhan, Ed-

sell E. Parsons, has previously indicated that he would not be willing to proceed without Cooper and the latter cannot be taken off the case except at Sirhan's request. Cooper could, however, withdraw voluntarily.

Sirhan Administered Test

Parsons said Monday that Sirhan had been administered a chromosome test for the so-called XYY syndrome about a month ago.

(The XYY syndrome, in which each cell of a person's body contains an extra Y, or male, chromosome, is thought by some psychiatrists to indicate a tendency toward violent behavior.)

Parsons said he did not know the results of the test on Sirhan, and thus could not say whether it would be entered in evidence.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-4 Los Angeles Time
Los Angeles, Calif..

Date: 1/7/69

Edition: Home

Author: Dave Smith

Editor: Nick B. Willie

Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

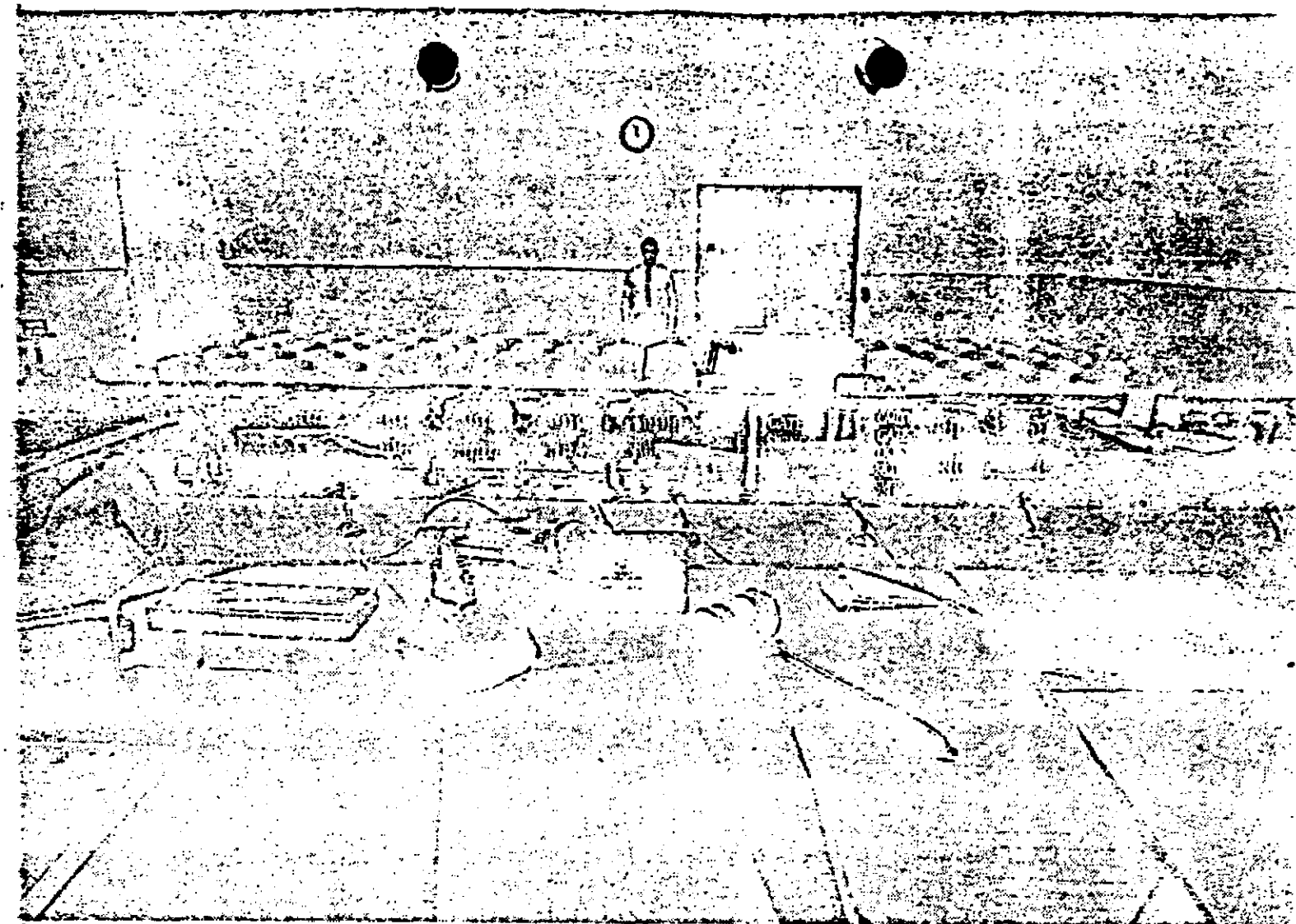
Submitting Office: Los Angel

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-68
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED

1 JAN 7 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

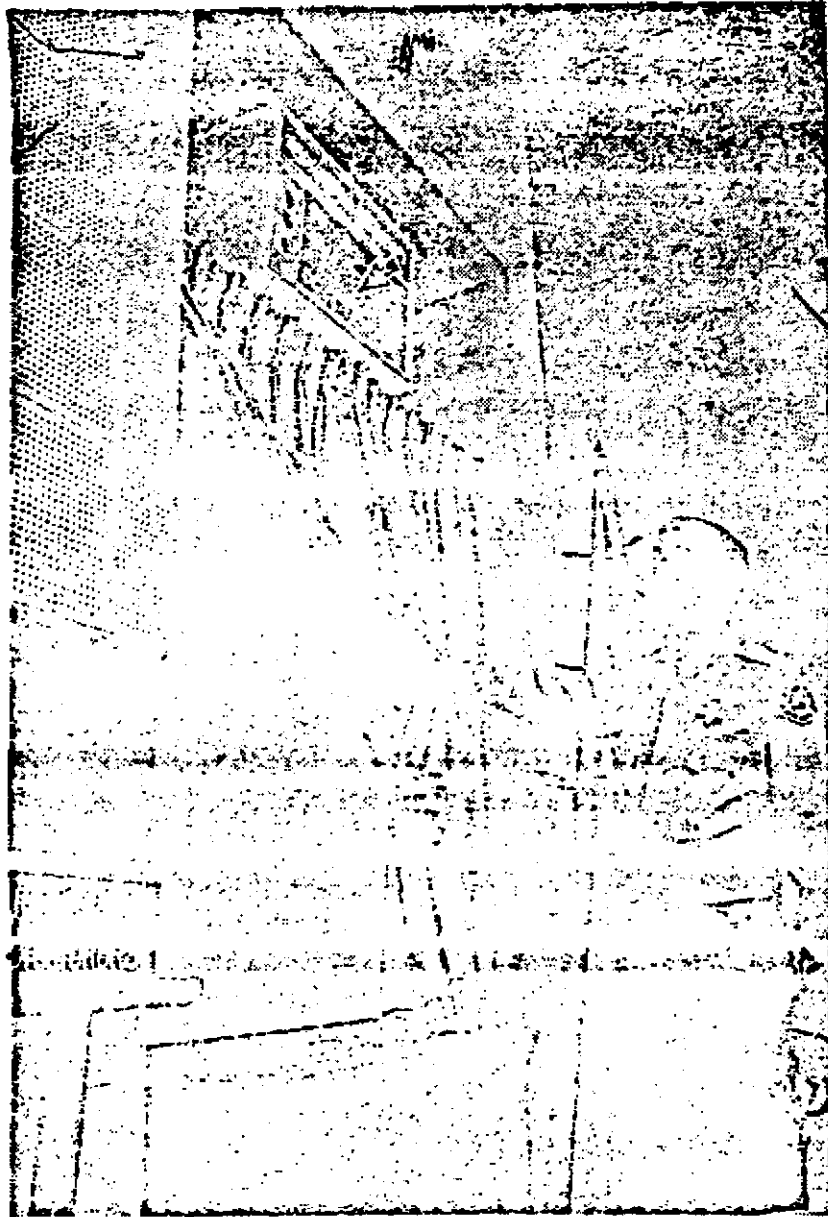
cc to Bureau
1-9-69



JUDGE WILL SEE IT—View from bench of courtroom on the eighth floor of the Hall of Justice where Sirhan Bishara Sirhan goes on today in the slaying of Robert F. Kennedy. Presiding over the

closely guarded trial will be Superior Judge Herbert V. W. Just in front of bench with row of microphones is counsel at which prosecution and defense attorneys—and Sirhan—will

Times photos by John M.



PROTECTIVE MEASURE—Dep. Sheriff George Psareas inspects quarter-inch thick steel-plated window in courtroom. Just above it in an air conditioning unit is closed-circuit television camera, arrow, that will carry Sirhan trial proceedings to newsmen in auxiliary courtroom on fourth floor. The camera, however, will not show the jury.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Cooper Case Won't Delay Sirhan Trial

Sirhan trial chief defense counsel Grant B. Cooper's federal court hearing on his statement he lied in connection with the recently concluded Friar's Club trial is not expected to delay the trial of the man accused as the slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Superior court officials have indicated that they expect the trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan to get underway as scheduled tomorrow.

Today Cooper goes into federal court for a hearing on his Friday statement he "didn't tell the truth" when asked how he obtained a secret grand jury transcript in the recently concluded Friar's card cheating trial.

Cooper said that, "it would have pointed a finger at my client," had he testified truthfully about the transcript.

Final preparations of the armor-plated eighth floor courtroom in the Hall of Justice in which Sirhan will be tried will be completed today. Also to be completed is the so-called auxiliary courtroom in which those of the 114 newsmen assigned to

courtroom seats will observe the trial for whom there are not the proceedings on closed-circuit television. There are only 67 press seats in the courtroom itself.

Sirhan remains in an isolated cell on the 13th floor of the Hall of Justice. He is said to be growing increasingly nervous as the trial approaches.

It is expected that as many as 250 witnesses may be called during the trial, but Superior Court Judge Herbert V. Walker, who will preside, may try to cut this list down.

Several witnesses will be those who were in the crowded kitchen area of the Ambassador Hotel, where Kennedy was shot shortly after midnight June 5.

Sirhan was arrested in the kitchen immediately following the shooting.

Although Sirhan has pleaded innocent, Cooper and his associates Russell B. Parsons and Emile Zola Berman are expected to seek a verdict which might find Sirhan guilty, but which would not warrant the death penalty — either second degree murder, or manslaughter.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-2 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 1/6/69

Edition: Night Final

Author:

Editor: Donald Gooden

Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

cc to Bureau
1-7-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

THE BEGINNING OF THE SIRHAN TRIAL

By John Douglas

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, 25, goes on trial Tuesday as the accused slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy in a case in which the defendant's mental state may occupy more court time than testimony relating to the shooting.

The somber fact that, if convicted the young Jordanian emigrant could suffer the death penalty, has been overshadowed in the preliminaries of the case by questions of motive raised again and again by the defense.

In the words of Russell E. Parsons, one of Sirhan's lawyers:

"... What are the real issues?"

"If he is the man, why did he do it?"

To the prosecution, headed

by Deputy District Attorney Lynn Compton, there is little question that Sirhan is guilty.

The indictment returned by the Los Angeles County Grand Jury alleges that "on or about the fifth day of June, 1968, at and in the County of Los Angeles . . . Sirhan Bishara Sirhan did willfully, unlawfully, feloniously and with malice aforethought murder Robert Francis Kennedy, a human being." And that is precisely what Compton and his associates think they can prove.

There is every indication that the prosecutors will seek the death penalty.

But if Attorneys Grant Cooper, Parsons and Emil Zola Berman can convince the

jury that Sirhan acted without malice, their client could get off with as little as five years in prison.

The facts in the case are these:

Following his winning the California Presidential Primary Kennedy issued a victory statement early June 5 in the Ambassador Hotel's Embassy ballroom. He left the podium to go to a victory party at The Factory—a private club.

He was accompanied by a number of aides, including Roosevelt Grier, 300-pound ex-Los Angeles Rams football tackle; Rafer Johnson, former Olympic decathlon champion; and Bill Barry, a former FBI man who had protected Ken-

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 1/5/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodeno
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-686

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 JAN 7 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
1-7-69

...edy physically during cam-
paigns.

They headed into a corridor leading to a hotel kitchen where they planned to get into a freight elevator. Kennedy was shaking hands with a young busboy near a row of refrigerators when shots began ringing out "like a string of Chinese firecrackers."

The time was about 12:20 a.m.

Martin Patrusky, 23, an Ambassador waiter and an eye witness tells this story:

"The guy who shot him came out of the corner near the ice machine where Kennedy was standing. He had a kind of funny smile on his face and one hand was in front of the other.

"Then I saw him raise his hands. I didn't know this thing was real until I saw Kennedy sliding down in front of the ice machine. One of the (waiter) captains grabbed the guy by the neck. The guy was waving the gun and a couple more shots went off. I saw two people fall.

"Everyone was shouting, 'Grab the gun.' Then one of the football players (Grier) and one of the other captains grabbed the guy and started pushing him to the floor. I looked back at Kennedy. He was saying: 'Please don't move me.'"

Grier and his companions wrestled the weapon away from the gunman and subdued him.

When taken into custody by Los Angeles Police moments later, the young man refused to identify himself or talk about the shooting. He was later identified by his brothers.

Kennedy was rushed to Cen-

tral Receiving Hospital and then quickly transferred to Good Samaritan Hospital.

He underwent lengthy brain surgery, but failed to rally.

At 2 a.m. Thursday, June 6, Kennedy's press secretary Frank Mankiewicz faced newsmen who had been keeping vigil at the hospital for more than 24 hours with a bulletin:

"I have a short announcement to read, which I will read at this time.

"Sen. Robert Francis Kennedy died at 1:44 a.m. today June 6, 1963. He was 42 years old."

On June 7, after deliberating for nearly seven hours the County Grand Jury indicted Sirhan.

In addition to the murder charge, he was accused of shooting five other persons in the melee. They were all hospitalized and have since recovered. He will also be tried on these additional shooting charges.

This, basically, is the case the prosecution will present to the jury.

But first the jury must be selected.

Superior Court Judge Herbert V. Walker, who is to try the case, expects jury selection to take three weeks. Part of that process of selection, says Walker, will take place in open court.

But part will be in secret.

Walker says he intends to question each prospective juror in his chambers as to what publicity he has seen of the case. Defense and prosecution lawyers will be present, but no one else. The jurors' answers will not be disclosed until after the trial—if then.

When it is their turn to argue, Sirhan's lawyers are expected to plead that even if their client did shoot Kennedy, he did so with "diminished capacity."

Diminished capacity is a legal defense in California. It provides, in effect, that if it can be shown that a defendant's mental condition prevented him from developing either the malice or the intent to kill, he may be convicted of second-degree murder. This carries a sentence of five years to life. Or he could be convicted of manslaughter, which brings six months to 15 years.

Diminished responsibility has been claimed in several cases when the defense could not establish legal insanity, but could show the person was influenced by rage, fear, obsession, drugs, or even alcohol.

Many attorneys prefer the defense to an actual insanity plea because, if found insane, a defendant can be confined indefinitely in a mental institution.

It is believed the objective of Sirhan's lawyers is to obtain a prison sentence that will end with parole as soon as possible, perhaps in 10 years or less.

To get this, it will be the task of Cooper, Parsons and Berman, in effect, to take prosecution evidence and turn it to their advantage.

Chief among this evidence are diaries allegedly kept by Sirhan and seized by police in his Pasadena home the morning of the shooting.

These diaries have been a bone of contention in the case since the disclosure of their existence by Mayor Sam Yorty at a press conference.

Yorty maintained the letter showed Sirhan planning Kennedy's murder and claimed one stated in part:

"Kennedy has to be assassinated before June 5, 1968"—the first anniversary of the six-day Israeli blitz in the Middle East.

Both Attorney General Thomas Lynch and Los Angeles County District Attorney Evelle J. Younger assailed Yorty for making the diaries public, but the Mayor retorted that he had to do it to protect the reputation of the city.

Parsons fought long and hard in court to keep the diaries out of evidence, but on Oct. 22, Judge Walker ruled they were admissible.

Parsons moved speedily to obtain copies of the diaries then and told a news conference:

"I don't know what effect these writings might have on the opinions of the psychiatrist in the case."

Sirhan has been under observation by several psychiatrists since Parsons took over his defense from the Public Defender. Their reports are available only to the defense lawyers and Parsons refuses to discuss them or even to identify the psychiatrists.

However, court records identify them as Dr. Eric Marcus, Dr. Edward Davis, and psychologist Roderick Richardson. At different times, they have observed Sirhan in court and elsewhere.

They have also studied the diaries.

Most of the contents of these are still secret, but it is known that in addition to the references to Kennedy one entry refers to a girl whom Sirhan said he loved, although he had never asked her for a date.

Sirhan wanted to be a jockey, but he was thrown by a horse.

Parsons has the record of his treatment.

The record shows that Sirhan was working as an exercise boy at Granja Vista Del Rio, a ranch owned by the Altshuler Construction Corp. in Corona, when he was thrown.

He was treated twice, on Nov. 8 and Dec. 20, 1966, by Dr. Milton Miller in Corona. He complained, he suffered pain, blurring, and "extreme motion" in his eyes after the fall.

Dr. Miller said Sirhan "seemed to exaggerate his disability."

Also very much on Sirhan's mind was the conflict between Israel and his native Jordan.

A shopkeeper he worked for in Pasadena was Jewish and a member of Holland's anti-Nazi resistance movement in World War II. Sirhan was persistently engaged with his employer in bitter arguments about the Arab-Israel conflict.

Thus, there may be an attempt by the defense to show an "obsession" with this that made Sirhan unable to act rationally.

Finally there is the defendant's family.

His mother, Mary, and brothers, Adel, Munir (Joe), and Sadallah, have been present in court at most of the trial's preliminaries and are expected to be there Tuesday. The father is in Israel.

But this family reportedly gave Sirhan a rough upbringing, which is also expected to be described in detail by the defense.

How much of this kind of evidence will Cooper, Parsons and Berman be able to get before the jury?

That will be up to Judge Walker—and lengthy arguments against it by Compton and his associates, David N. Fitts and John Howard, are expected.

Setting for the trial will be Department 107 in the old Hall of Justice, in the downtown Civic Center.

Quarter-inch steel plates have been placed inside the courtrooms four windows, and the windows of Judge Walker's adjacent chambers.

Tight security will be imposed not only in the eighth-floor courtroom, but also in a fourth-floor "auxiliary courtroom". Newsmen not admitted to the main courtroom will watch the proceedings there via closed circuit television. There will be no public television.

The trial is expected to take three months, with nearly a third of this time being given over to jury selection.

Once the jury is finally chosen and sworn in it will be "sequestered"—locked up in a downtown hotel.

In an unusual order, Judge Walker has said that he will permit jurors' spouses to visit them on weekends—staying overnight.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Trial... Judge Herbert V. Walker Man in Charge

By Phil Hanna

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Superior Court Judge Herbert V. Walker, chosen to preside over the murder trial of Sirhan B. Sirhan, is called a "careful, legal technician" by his contemporaries.

The accused slayer of New York Sen. Robert F. Kennedy can expect fair, honest and humane treatment from Walker, who has served on the Los Angeles criminal court bench for 13 of his 15 years as a judge.

The 59-year-old Walker whose best-remembered decision came in the Confidential Magazine criminal libel case 10 years ago, will be a familiar name in most households as every courtroom move will be examined closely around the world.

Appointed to the Superior Court in 1933 by then Gov. Earl Warren, the jurist is senior in term of years on the criminal bench in Los Angeles County.

Other noteworthy decisions rendered by Walker include his upholding of the death penalty in the case of convicted sex offender Robert Emmett Thornton.

The judge said the death penalty "was not cruel and unusual punishment" in Thornton's case.

"The death penalty does not violate the dignity of man nor does it violate the standards of decency that mark the progress of a maturing society," Judge Walker held.

An aircraft worker, Thornton was convicted of a series of sex attacks and kidnaping of three women. None were killed but one was injured so he was convicted under California's Little Lindbergh Law.

Judge Walker became involved in the Caryl Chessman case when he disqualified himself in the sentencing of the "Red Light Bandit."

It was Chessman's ninth appeal, and Walker said he took himself out of the case when it appeared that defense attorneys had a chance for two more years of appeals because it was alleged that the judge had discussed the case with District Attorney William B. McKesson.

At the time he denied he held any prejudice in Chessman's case.

Asked if he had been compared with famed criminal judge Charles Fricke, Walker laughed.

"You are talking about the man who was my ideal on the bench," he said. "He was an author, a lecturer, and I'm none of those things."

Walker aspired to the bench following his graduation from the University of Southern California Law School in 1928.

He was deputy corporation commissioner for 15 years following graduation from

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-12 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 1/5/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: Phil Hanna
Editor: Donald Goodenc
Title: Kinsalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-7-685

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 JAN 7 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

*cc to Bureau
1-7-69*

school; spent three years as chief deputy district attorney; and was in private practice for seven years before his appointment to the bench.

"I've sat on all three corners of the triangle and I think I know pretty well what the attorneys down front are thinking," Walker said.

He is given credit for running a tight courtroom during the Confidential Magazine trial. With all the "racy" material that was placed in exhibit, he wouldn't let the trial become a "three-ring circus."

Although he has been reversed many times on appeal with the "liberality of U.S. Supreme Court decisions," Walker has seldom questioned a jury verdict.

"When that has happened, I discussed the case with the jury, and I had to agree with them each time that their conclusion was logical," Walker said.

The courtroom for the Strahan trial is small, with just 75 seats, 37 of which have been reserved for the news media.

Walker said he would not object if attorneys on both sides agree to a closed-circuit television transmission to a

second room on the floor below the main courtroom. This will be used to accommodate additional news media who have asked to cover the proceedings.

Walker's courtroom on the 8th floor of the Hall of Justice was selected because it offers maximum security for the defendant.

Before entering USC in 1922, Walker held a number of jobs to finance his education. He worked in an oil field in Casimalia, Calif., and at the La Brea Oil Fields in Los Angeles. He also served as chain man for a Los Angeles city surveying crew.

Before college he served two years in the Navy during World War I on the battleship USS Kentucky.

He might have had a career in motion pictures.

"They used to shoot movies near where I lived in Hollywood as a boy, and I got to be an extra in a series called 'Bill the Office Boy.'"

Born in San Francisco in 1891, Walker moved around the country with his family. They lived in Connecticut, New York and Arizona before returning to California.

He attended Los Angeles High and Lemoore Union High in his teen years.

Judge Walker, an active Episcopalian, met his wife, the former Alice Sophia Phelps, at church. They were married in 1923 and have three children and 12 grand-children.

A daughter, Mrs. Kathleen Brockelhurst, lives in Sunset Beach; a son, Herbert Weston Walker, lives in Newport Beach and practices law in Santa Ana; and a second daughter Mrs. Elizabeth Suzanne Zentner lives in Los Banos.

A resident of Glendale near the La Crescenta line, Judge Walker is a member of the Los Angeles, Glendale and American Bar Associations, Lawyer's Club, American Judicature Society, and Phi Alpha Delta legal fraternity.

He is a member of the American Legion, Masonic Lodge, Shrine, Acacia fraternity, Native Sons of the Golden West, Los Angeles Athletic Club, Chancery Club, Legion Lex and is past president of the USC Law Alumni Association.

He is a past president of the California State Employee's Association.

Recalling the Scene That Night

It was approximately 12:20 a.m. the morning of June 5, 1968.

More than 1000 wildly enthusiastic Democrats jostled each other and cheered in the hot, jammed Embassy Room of the Ambassador Hotel, a California victory theirs.

At the Cinderella hour, Sen.

Robert F. Kennedy had stepped before the microphone to acknowledge his triumph in the California Democratic primary election and to thank them for their support.

Clustered at his elbow were some of his super supporters—his wife, Ethel, other mem-

bers of the family of tragedy and triumph, Assembly Speaker Jesse Unruh, athlete and singer Roosevelt Grier.

The senator's speech was low key—one of thanks, of encouragement for the campaign ahead—and it was largely drowned out by the cheering.

The Kennedys and their party, bound for private celebrating at The Factory, changed their planned exit course through the packed crowd in the stifling ballroom.

Avoiding the room's main entrance, they moved toward a kitchen pantry.

In the pantry was a man now accused as the assassin of Sen. Kennedy—Sirhan Bishara Sirhan.

Shots rang out.

A man identified by police as Sirhan was crushed to the floor and a pistol wrenched from his hand.

Nearby Senator Kennedy sprawled on his back on the floor, his eyes glazing, immobile.

Twenty-five and one half hours later Senator Kennedy was dead.

The Other Victims

On that fateful early morning exactly seven months ago today, violence unparalleled in Los Angeles political history shattered the hopes of the California Democratic Party and of much of the nation.

At that hour Sen. Robert F. Kennedy was mortally wounded by gunshots that rang out in a pantry kitchen of the Ambassador Hotel.

Five other persons, all recovered, were wounded in the barrage of bullets. They were:

Paul Schrade, western director of the United Auto Workers, 4150 S. Hillcrest Drive, shot in the head.

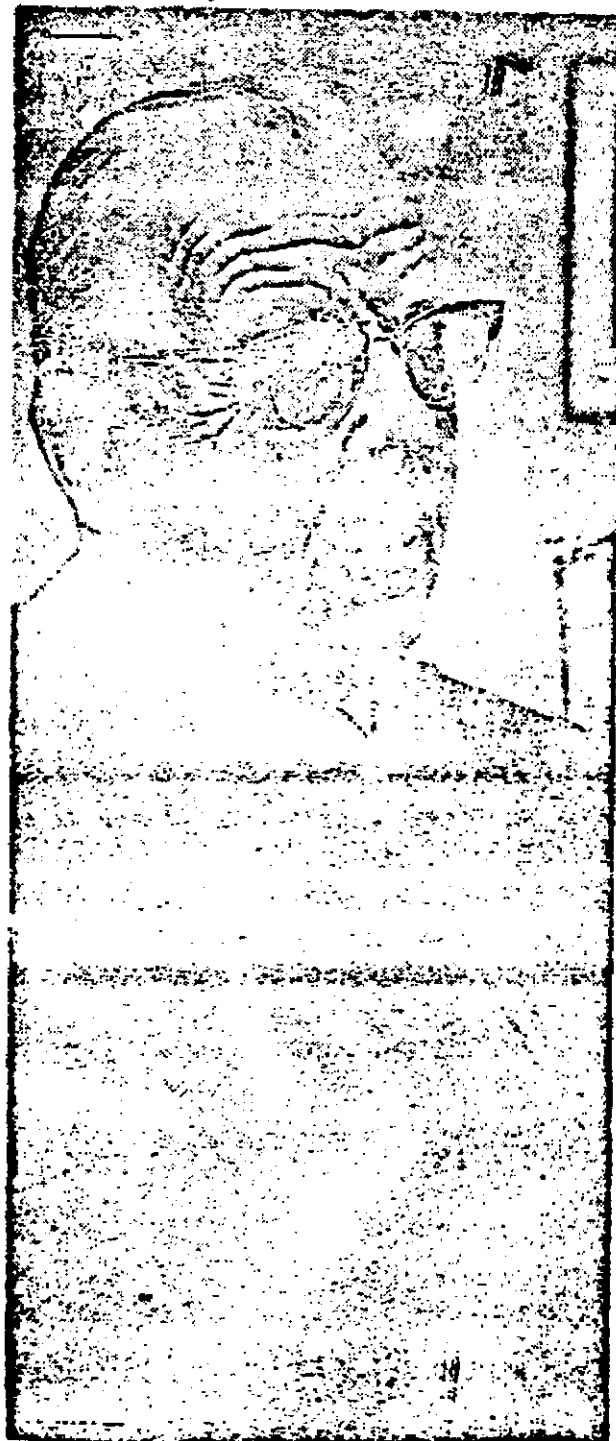
William Weisel, 30, network newsman for ABC-TV, of Washington, D.C., wounded in the abdomen.

Irwin Stoll, 17, of 6059 Horner St., shot in the leg.

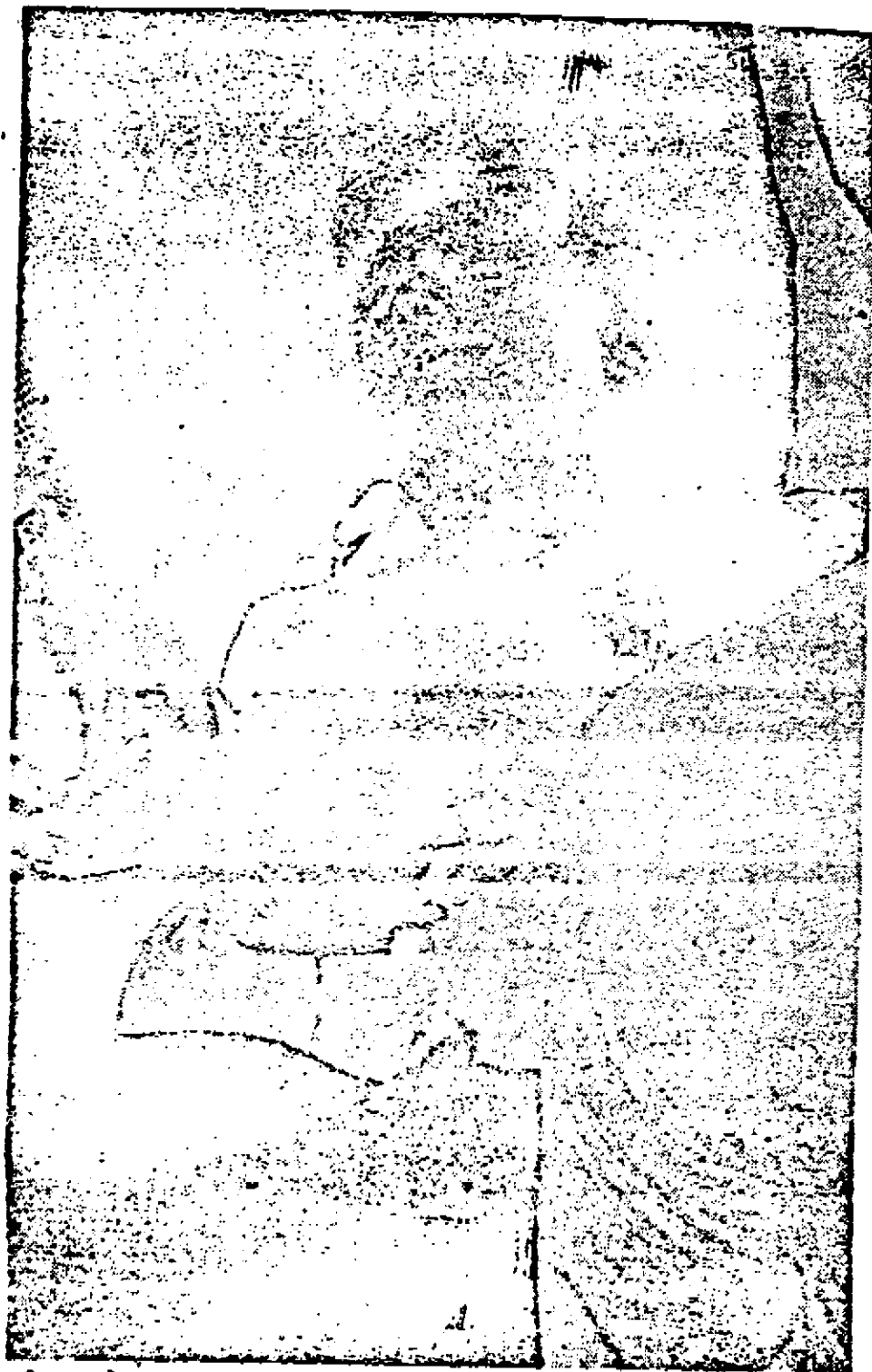
Mrs. Elizabeth Evans, 43, Saugus, a scalp wound.

Ira Goldstein, 19, of 4077 Hayvenhurst Ave., Encino, newsman for Continental News Service, shot in the left hip.

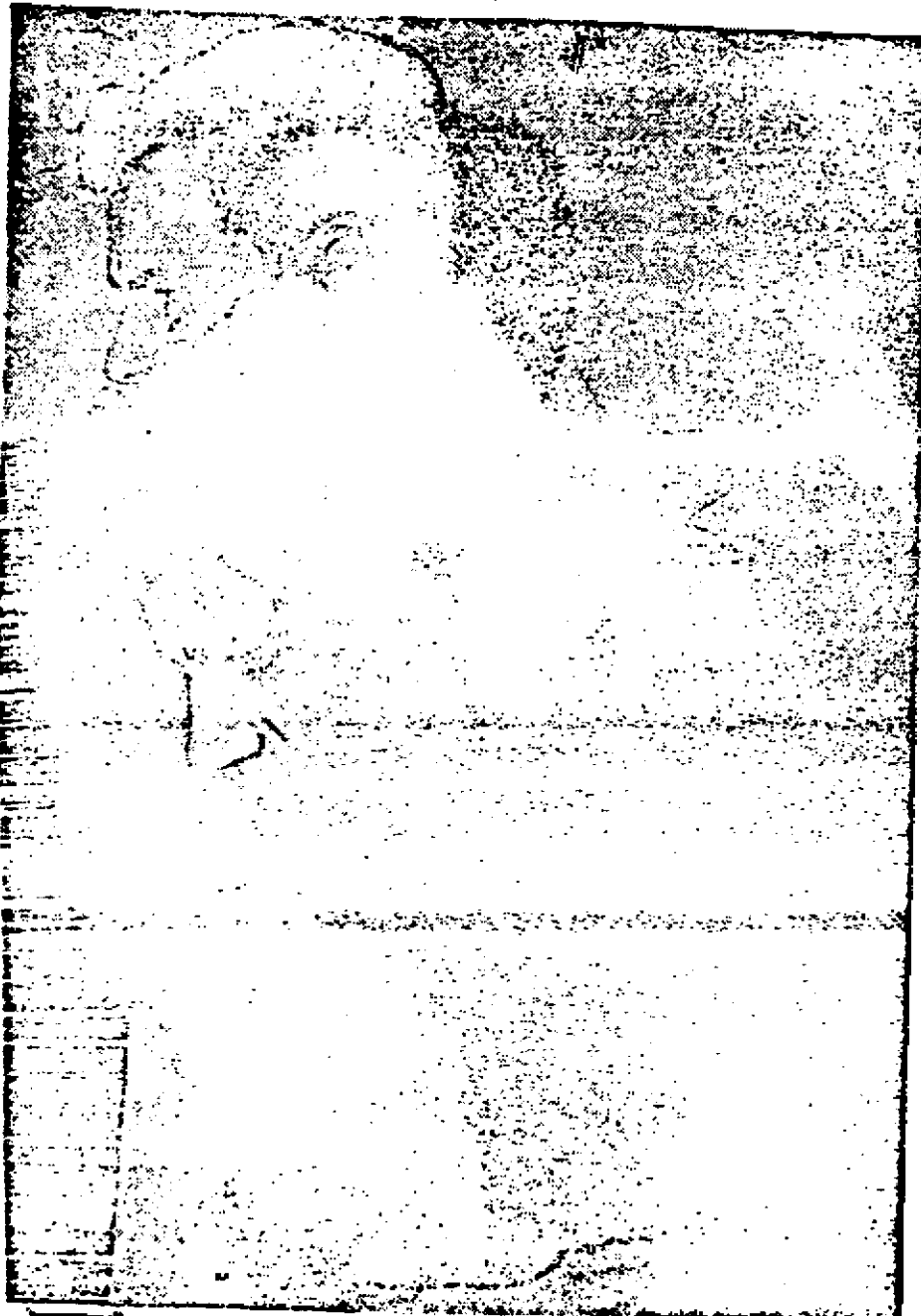
All are expected to testify in the murder trial of Sirhan B. Sirhan.



**Superior Court
Judge
Herbert V. Walker.
Called a
"careful legal
technician"
by his
colleagues,
he is
remembered
for the
Confidential Magazine
libel trial
and other
notable cases
including the
Robert Emmett Thornton
and
Caryl Chessman
cases.
He is 69,
has served on
the criminal
court bench
for 13 years.**



Sen. Robert F. Kennedy
Has clutching
a rosary
shortly after
he was shot
early on June 5
of last year.
He succumbed
early the
next day.



Sweatshirt-clad
young man,
later identified
as
Sirhan B. Sirhan,
was grabbed
at the scene
of the
shooting and
disarmed.
He was then
hustled away
by Los Angeles
police and
other
security forces.

UPI Telephoto

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Behind Scenes

Should transcripts of closed sessions in a murder trial be made public or should they remain forever secret? For the second time since they began barely more than a week ago, the state's proceedings against the alleged assassin of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy were interrupted by that question.

And this time, it resulted in chief defense attorney Grant B. Cooper's not only demanding a mistrial, but accusing Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker of misconduct. Judge Walker disclosed in a closed session with opposing attorneys that he had talked with a reporter of The Times about Sirhan B. Sirhan's bargaining for a guilty plea, and Cooper told the judge he "should not have done it."

"In connection with plea bargaining," he said, "it is always a secret matter."

Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton disagreed. Said he:

"We feel that everything has got to be on the record and public and that there should be no secret negotiations, conferences or matters which are in that category."

Motion Refused

Judge Walker refused Cooper's motion. Cooper said he had made the misconduct charge merely to have it on the record "in case we make an appeal," and the trial moved on.

Alvin Clark, a Negro trash collector who said he had struck up a friendship with the 24-year-old Jordanian immigrant defendant while at his home last April, quoted him as saying, "What do you want to vote for that son of a B for, because I'm planning to shoot him."

"I told him," said Clark, "Well, you'll be killing one of the best men in the country."

Other witnesses testified that Sirhan spent at least five hours practicing at a firing range the day before Kennedy was fatally wounded.

One of them, David Montelano, was shown a handgun and promptly identified it as the one Sirhan was using on the rifle range.

The gun, a .22 caliber revolver, is the one that pumped the bullets into Kennedy.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

G-5 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/23/69
Edition: Final
Author:
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-684

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

celebration
2-24-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Pathologists Defend Noguchi's Handling of Kennedy Autopsy

BY RAY ZEMAN
Times County Bureau Chief

Pathologists familiar with Dr. Thomas T. Noguchi's handling of the autopsy in the Sen. Robert F. Kennedy assassination came to his defense Saturday when they learned the county coroner may face custer proceedings Tuesday.

Dr. William G. Eckert, former chairman of the pathology section of the American Academy of Forensic Sciences, said in Wichita that he and Dr. Cyril Wecht of Pittsburgh, present chairman, were shocked to learn the Board of Supervisors may be asked to initiate dismissal action.

Noguchi said Friday that L. S. Hollinger, county chief administrative officer, had demanded his resignation from the \$31,101-a-year post as the county's chief medical examiner-coroner.

Hollinger has received complaints about Noguchi's asserted delay in handling the Kennedy autopsy and on other phases of his work, officials said.

County supervisors are expected to hear Hollinger's report in executive session Tuesday.

If they then favor dismissal of Noguchi, the Civil Service Commission may be requested to call a public hearing on the question.

Eckert, deputy coroner and forensic pathologist at Francis Hospital in Wichita, said: "It grinds us the wrong way to have Noguchi subjected to criticism."

Eckert assisted in the Kennedy autopsy last year after being deputized by Dr. Noguchi as a consultant.

In a telephone interview, Eckert said:

"It was probably the best, most thorough and most minutely handled forensic case I've ever seen."

"I've talked to Dr. Wecht and he also feels very strongly about this character assassination of Dr. Noguchi."

"Dr. Wecht reviewed the entire report in the Kennedy case as a coroner's pathologist. He is chairman and director of the Pittsburgh Legal Medicine Institute."

"Dr. Wecht is in New York today. He told me by telephone that he is writing to the Los Angeles Board of Supervisors to protest any action against Dr. Noguchi. We both consider him a brilliant man."

Eckert offered to come to Los Angeles to testify if the Civil Service Commission considers any action against the coroner.

Suggesting there may be some malcontents in the coroner's department, the Wichita pathologist said, "Maybe he should have cleaned house when he went in."

Then, referring to the opposition of the USC and UCLA medical schools to Noguchi's appointment as coroner in 1967, Eckert said, "The problem probably revolves around the medical schools' wanting political control of the coroner's office."

At the time of the appointment, medical school spokesmen had complained that Noguchi, then 40, was too young and inexperienced for the post. Because the coroner traditionally served on the medical faculties of the two schools, the schools claimed they had a special interest in his appointment.

Noguchi had previously served as assistant professor and associate clinical professor of pathology at USC.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

B-2 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/23/69
Edition: Final
Author: Ray Zeman
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-71-683

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FEB 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

October
2-2469

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

WETHEL... AM I GOING TO DIE?

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
 Los Angeles, Calif.

*Emergency Medical
 Attention!*

Date: 2/22/69
 Edition: Night Final
 Author: John Douglas
 Editor: Donald Goodenow
 Title: Kenselt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
 Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-70-684

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

2-24-69

Doctor Recalls RFK Plea in Sirhan Trial

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

"Ethel . . . Ethel . . .

"Am I going to die?"

Robert F. Kennedy lay mortally wounded on the floor of a pantry off the Ambassador Hotel's Embassy Ballroom. The time was 12:20 a.m., June 4, 1968.

His wife had not been at his side when Sirhan Bishara Sirhan fired the shot that pierced the New York senator's spine and skull. But she was nearby, and almost immediately beside him.

They whispered together as Dr. Stanley Abo, on the scene, worked over Kennedy, giving him what help he could before a Central Receiving Hospital ambulance arrived.

Dr. Abo testified yesterday at Sirhan's murder trial. He was not permitted to recount the conversation between the slain senator and his pregnant wife while in the witness box. But he recalled it vividly for The Herald-Examiner outside the courtroom.

Dr. Abo was the first physician to reach Kennedy's side after the shooting. He had been at the hotel as a partisan of the senator—celebrating victory in the California Presidential Primary.

His recollection:

"Mrs. Kennedy reached her husband's side and knelt beside him.

"His eyes had opened by then and he looked sorrowfully at her and asked: 'Am I going to die?'"

"She was holding his hand and looked up at me, as if for an answer.

"I had no answer."

Kennedy kept repeating: "Ethel . . . Ethel . . . Ethel," as pandemonium broke about the couple at the shooting scene.

A few feet away Roosevelt Griffith, George Plimpton, Rafer Johnson and a host of others fought to subdue Sirhan. The Kennedys did not see them.

Kennedy fell silent.

"He just moaned a few times," Dr. Abo recalled.

The ambulance attendants arrived and Kennedy objected vigorously, telling them: "Don't move me. . . Please don't move me."

Then he was on his way to Central Receiving Hospital, then Good Samaritan Hospital, and finally, 25 hours later, dead.

On the stand, Dr. Abo testified:

"I was standing near the door of the pantry," he told Dep.

Dist. Atty. John Howard. "I heard several popping noises. . . . Somebody screamed and a small commotion started.

"I saw a television cameraman, he may have been a light man, standing on a stool mouth 'Kennedy,' and put his finger to his head. . . .

"From that, I knew the senator had been shot.

"Someone rushed out to ask for a doctor and I shoved ahead until I reached the victims."

Dr. Abo said he first reached Paul Schrade, United Auto Workers Union official injured by another of Sirhan's bullets. He determined that Schrade was not seriously injured and moved to Kennedy's side.

"Sen. Kennedy's head was on a folded coat, which I presumed to be his."

Q—What did you find?

A—He was lying very still, very quiet. I did not know initially whether he was breathing, or if he had a pulse. I thought if he was not breathing, I would do artificial respiration.

"His left eye was open and staring aimlessly. His right eye was closed. I could feel a very strong, but slow pulse, could observe that he was breathing very shallow, but at a good rate. . . . He looked up at me. . . . He was holding a crucifix in both hands, moving both

legs, contorting his body every so often and moaning.

Q—Did you notice anything about his head?

A—Yes. There was considerable blood on the jacket under his head. There was a small but penetrating injury just back of his right ear. . .

Dr. Aho testified that, having no instruments, he probed the wound with his fingers.

Q—Was there a medical reason for this probing?

A—At first just to locate it then because I wanted to keep the wound open and oozing slightly to keep from having a build-up of blood in the skull.

Q—What else did you do?

A—I tried to keep other doctors who began to arrive from too vigorously jumping on the senator to give him artificial respiration or heart massage. I was convinced his heart was beating, and he was breathing all right.

Dr. Aho's testimony provided the second series of dramatic events at yesterday's session.

The first came from Pasadena garbage collector Alvin Clark.

Clark swore that in April, 1968, some two months before he slew Kennedy—Sirhan told him: "I'm planning on shooting him."

Clark said the threat came as the two talked politics in front of Sirhan's home, 696 E. Howland St., Pasadena, shortly after the assassination of the Rev. Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr.

Sirhan was upset about the King shooting, Clark said, and kept asking him what the Negroes intended to do about it. Clark is a Negro.

The talk turned to the California presidential primary, Clark said, and Sirhan asked him for whom he intended to vote.

"I told him I was going to vote for Kennedy," Clark testified.

Sirhan said, "What do you

want to vote for that son of a B—, because I'm planning on shooting him."

Defense attorney Emile Zola German sought vigorously to impeach Clark's testimony in cross-examination. He demanded:

"Didn't you say (to an FBI agent in September, 1968) you wouldn't want to take the oath because you hated Sirhan so much you would do anything to see him convicted?"

"Yes," Clark admitted.

But Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts countered quickly:

"Have you told the truth here, sir?"

"Yes, I have," Clark said.

Clark was one of three witnesses put on the stand yesterday as the prosecution sought to show premeditation in Sirhan's admitted slaying of Kennedy.

Another, Mrs. Miriam Davis, a Kennedy campaign volunteer, told of seeing Sirhan in a kitchen in the Ambassador Hotel June 2, 1968—some 47 hours before he shot Kennedy. The prosecution contends he was "casing" the place.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Witness Claims Sirhan Vowed to Shoot Kennedy

**Former Friend Tells of
Talk About King Murder;
Says He Hated Defendant**

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

Soon after the assassination of Martin Luther King last April 4, Sirhan Bishara Sirhan was described as arguing with a Negro trash collector he had befriended about Sen. Robert F. Kennedy and demanding:

"What are you going to vote for that son of a B for? Because I'm planning on shooting him."

Sirhan did, less than two months after that conversation, and prosecution witness ~~Alvin Clark~~ testified to defense attorney ~~David Zola Berman~~ Friday that he told the FBI the following September he was unwilling to testify against his accused friend—but the reason was not friendship now.

"Didn't you tell the FBI you did not want to take the oath because you hated Sirhan so much you'd do anything to see him convicted?" asked Berman.

"Yes, I did," said Clark.

Dramatic Moment

Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts quickly interjected: "Have you told the truth here, sir?"

"Yes," Clark replied firmly. "I have."

The testimony of the bearded Clark was the most dramatic thus far in the seven-week-old trial of Kennedy's admitted slayer. Clark told Fitts of a casual friendship reaching back nearly three years with the 24-year-old Palestinian immigrant.

"I thought very much of him," said Clark, adding that Sirhan fell into the habit of bringing out coffee, soft drinks and sometimes sandwiches when Clark made the usual Wednesday trash pickup at the Sirhan home at 606 E. Howard St. in Pasadena.

Clark testified to jurors in Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker's court that shortly after the King assassination in Memphis, Sirhan was "upset somewhat about the death of Luther King. He asked me how the Negro people felt about it."

"I said we felt there wasn't just one person responsible.

"He asked me what the Negroes were going to do about it and I said, 'What can they do about it? You're just one person.'

"Then he asked me how I felt about the election and I said I was going to vote for Kennedy.

"He said, 'What do you want to vote for that son of a B for? Because I'm planning on shooting him.'

'One of the Best Men'

"I said, 'If you do, you'll be killing one of the best men in the country.

"I told him of Kennedy going down to Tennessee to bring back Luther King's body and paying all the expenses.

"Sirhan—but I never knew him by the name of Sirhan. I knew him by the name of Saul—said he (Kennedy) did it just for publicity."

Two other witnesses, Irwin Stroll and William Weiner, told of having been among the five wounded in the fusillade that killed Kennedy in a kitchen hallway of the Ambassador last June 5.

Stroll, 17, testified that he was a Kennedy volunteer worker guarding doorway that night, and that he was about to follow the victory party to another party at The Factory nightclub in West Hollywood when he was cut down by a bullet in his left calf.

"I felt someone kick me," said Stroll, adding that he didn't know at first that he had been shot. "Then I noticed—because I had on blue pants—that one of my legs was red."

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper cross-questioned Stroll briefly and asked finally, "Incidentally, didn't you bring an action of a million and

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/22/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kinsalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-680

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

2-24-69

a half dollars against the defendant for the injury to your leg?"

Stroll flushed slightly and said "Yes." (The suit, filed earlier this month, actually seeks \$1,050,000.)

Two other witnesses told of seeing Sirhan at a Kennedy pre-election party on June 2 at the Ambassador, not far from where Sen. Kennedy later was killed.

Dr. Stanley Abo, a physician who attended the Kennedy victory party, told of going to the stricken senator's aid moments after the shooting.

Abo said Sen. Kennedy's right eye was open, "staring aimlessly," and the left eye was closed. As he bent

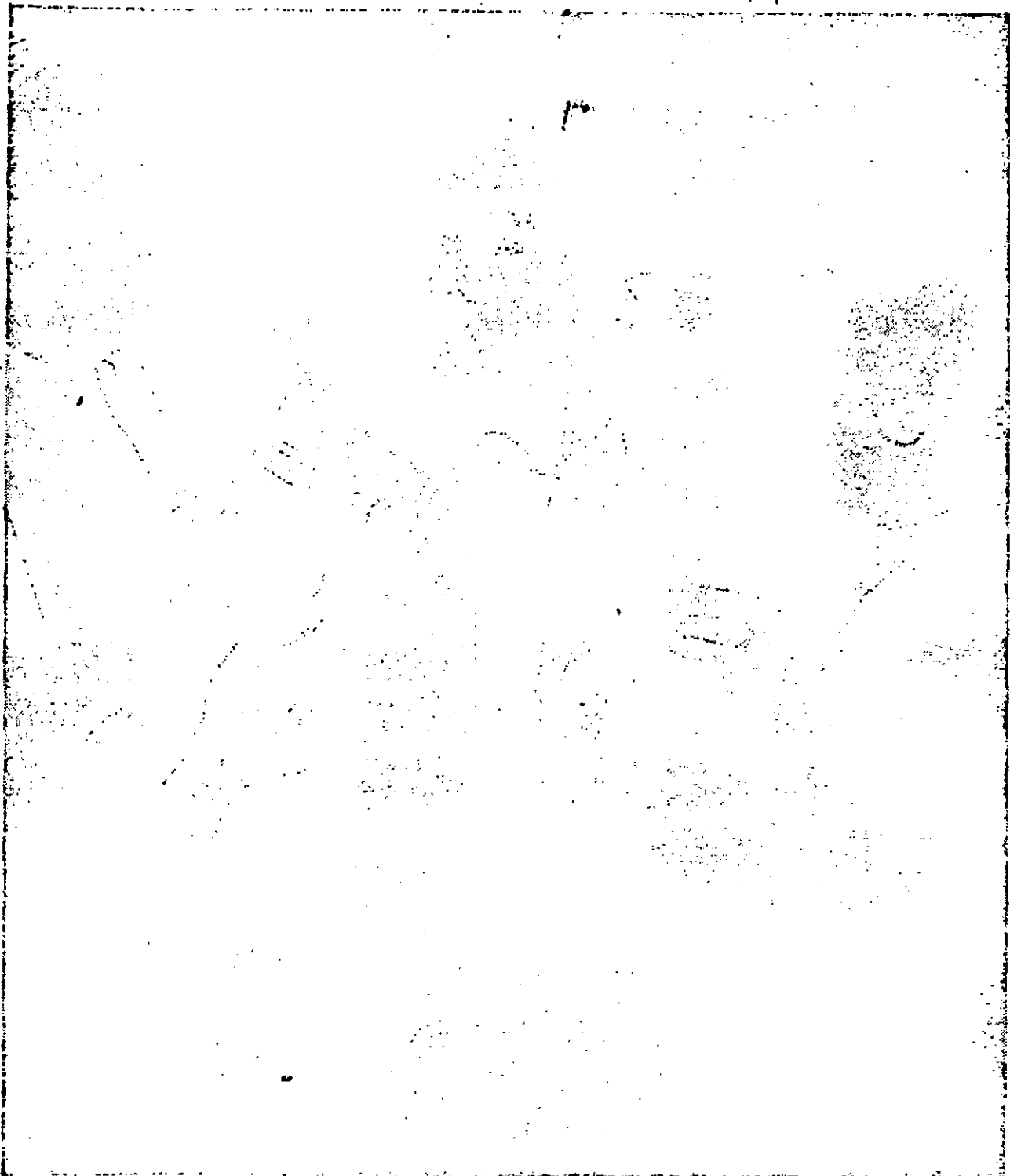
to see if Sen. Kennedy needed artificial respiration, Abo said, Kennedy's left eye opened "very quickly, with a puzzled look."

Abo said he had earlier mistaken another wounded man, Paul Schrader, for Sen. Kennedy's brother-in-law, Stephen Smith, and thus told Sen. Kennedy that his brother-in-law (actually Schrader) had a superficial scalp wound.

"Good," he quoted the dying Sen. Kennedy as saying.

Abo said Mrs. Ethel Kennedy arrived then at her husband's side, and Sen. Kennedy "reached out and took her hand and spoke to her."

The defense objected that the conversation was immaterial and the objection was sustained.



TELLS OF THREAT—Alvin Clark, who collected trash at the Sirhan home, testified at the trial of Sir-

han B. Sirhan that the defendant told him last April he was planning to shoot Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.
Times photo by John Malmán

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Victims Testify

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Two more of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's victims have given his jury of eight men and four women their accounts of the shooting in the pantry off the Ambassador Hotel's Embassy Ballroom which claimed the life of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy and wounded five.

The testimony of Ira Goldstein and Mrs. Elizabeth Evans unfolded yesterday against the background of another defense plea for a mistrial in the case of Kennedy's admitted slayer. The mistrial plea again was based on allegedly prejudicial material printed in the Los Angeles Times.

Presiding Judge Herbert V. Walker denied the mistrial. He confessed in an in-chambers hearing that he personally was the source of part of the information contained in the morning newspaper's story.

Former newsman Ira Goldstein, who was shot in the left thigh, recounted his memory of the events of the morning of June 5, 1968, at the close of yesterday's session.

He said he had been covering Kennedy's victory speech, but midway through it to go to Embassy room kitchen in search of something to eat.

During the shooting, Goldstein said, "I heard loud popping noises."

"How many of them?" Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts asked.

"Two of them at first. I quickly moved to my left. I stepped

over someone who had fallen to the ground."

"Did you recognize anyone?" "No sir. I moved to the left. I continued walking. I felt something on my pant leg—a gust of wind. I felt a bullet enter my left leg."

"Did you fall down?" "No. At this point I crashed into the wall."

Goldstein testified immediately after the other of Sirhan's victims, Mrs. Evans, 43, of Sausalito.

Mrs. Evans testified she came to the Ambassador Hotel to meet Pierre Salinger, former news secretary to President John F. Kennedy, and to participate in Kennedy's victory celebration.

She told this story under questioning by Dep. Dist. Atty. John Howard:

"I entered the pantry," she said. "It was crowded."

"I heard a sound like firecrackers. I lost my shoe. Everything happened very fast."

"Could you feel blood on your head?"

"Yes ... I was afraid I would be trampled."

She said someone took her to a table where she lay until she was taken away in an ambulance. She later underwent surgery for a gunshot wound.

In addition to being on trial for Sen. Kennedy's murder, Sirhan is charged with five counts of assault with a deadly weapon with intent to commit murder against Mrs. Evans, Goldstein, Edwin Sirel, 15, United Auto workers' official Paul Schrade

and Washington newsman William Weisel.

Stroll and Weisel are on today's witness list.

After his denial of the mistrial motion yesterday, Judge Walker ordered made public a transcript of the in-chambers arguments.

The transcript confirmed reports that Sirhan had sought a guilty plea to first-degree murder that would insure that he did not suffer the death penalty. Judge Walker, the record showed, refused to be a party to such a deal, holding that the jury must decide the penalty.

The transcript revealed that Walker himself was a source of part of the information regarding the squelched deal.

Chief Defense Counsel Grant B. Cooper termed Judge Walker's leak "improper." It may figure in a later appeal in the Sirhan case, he said.

Police officer Travis White, first witness of yesterday's session, scored an important point for the prosecution.

In his opening remarks, Attorney Emile Zola Bernman told the jury the defense intended to prove that Sirhan was "in a trance and intoxicated" when he admittedly shot Kennedy.

But Officer White testified that a pupil-reaction test of Sirhan's eyes, taken minutes after his arrest, indicated he was not drunk.

White held to his testimony despite vigorous attempts to discredit it by Cooper.

Fitts asked him: "In your opinion was he (Sir-

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-3 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/21/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goddenow
Title: Konsalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-22-679

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Cetaherian
224-69

han) under the influence of alcoholic liquor of any kind?"

"In my opinion he was not," the policeman answered.

Explaining the test, White said he shined a light in Sirhan's eyes in a darkened room and that the pupils contracted normally. An indication of intoxication, he said, would have been a slow contraction.

Fitts asked him what were other "indications of intoxication."

"Eyes watering, staggering, weaving, blurred speech and alcoholic breath," White replied.

"Did you observe any of these other indications in the defendant?" White was asked.

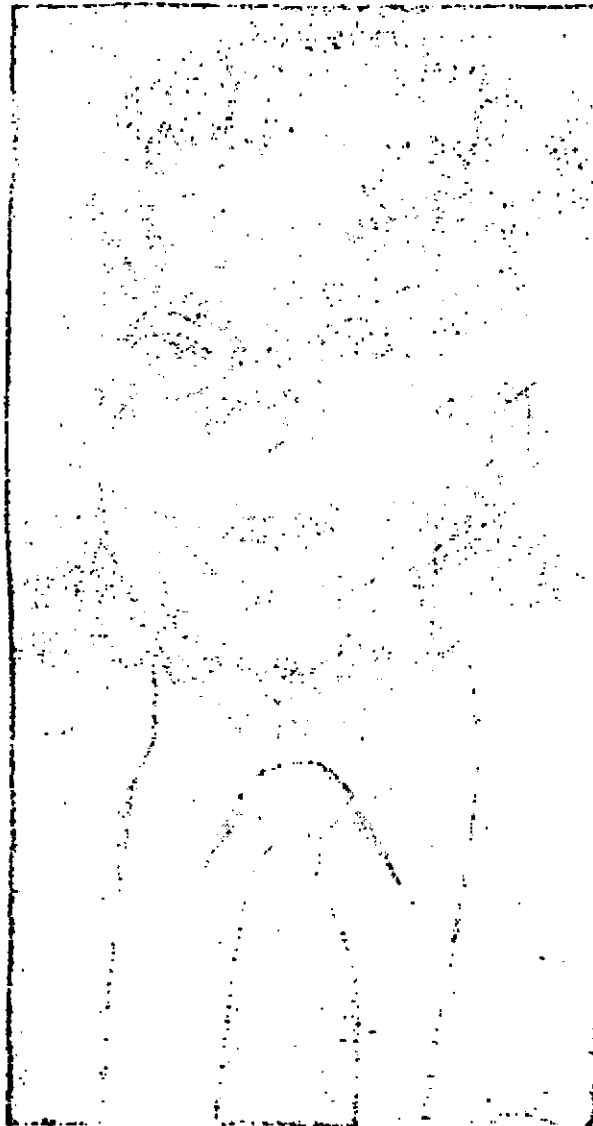
"There were none that I observed," he said.

Another witness, Miss Judy Royer, secretary to former California Gov. Edmund G. "Pat" Brown, testified to seeing Sirhan hanging around press headquarters for the Kennedy campaign before the shooting. She told him to go away and he did, she said.

Two Los Angeles Police fingerprint experts, Sgt. Riley Maxwell and Officer James E. Claborn, testified to discovering Sirhan's fingerprints on his car found parked on New Hampshire St., three blocks from the Ambassador Hotel.

In that car was a sales slip for ammunition purchased at the Lock, Stock N' Barrel Gun Shop in Pasadena for Sirhan's .22-caliber, Iver-Johnson "Cadet" revolver, used to shoot Kennedy.

Sgt. Maxwell said he found Sirhan's fingerprints on the sales slip, too.



DR. STANLEY ABO AT TRIAL

He attended Kennedy after shooting

—Morris L. Kaminer photo

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

PUBLICATION OF SECRET SESSION HIT

New Sirhan Mistrial Move Follows Story

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's defense made a second motion for a mistrial Thursday on grounds their client's defense was prejudiced by a page 1 story in The Times.

Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker denied the motion in an in-chambers session highlighted by a prosecution request that such closed proceedings, both past and future, be made public.

Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton said, "We think one of the vices of the whole situation . . . and what creates a problem, is the idea of sealing (transcripts) and secret sessions.

"We just feel that everything has got to be on the record and public and that there should be no secret negotiations, conferences or matters which are in that category . . .

"I would oppose any further . . . proceedings which are sealed, secret, or otherwise handled in that fashion."

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper answered: "In connection with plea bargaining, it is always a secret matter."

Cooper protested release of the transcript of Thursday's chambers session, saying, "If this entire thing is released, now that we have it only with the Los Angeles Times, but, if this is released, this is going to make front page news, this is real hard, good news."

Plea bargaining was the subject of the story in The Times Thursday in an explanation of why Sirhan did not plead guilty to first-degree

murder, as was expected the week before.

On Feb. 12, The Times said a guilty plea appeared probable after negotiations between the defense and the prosecution had resulted in an agreement that Sirhan would be assured of life imprisonment for the slaying of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy last June.

Judge Walker was reported willing to accept a guilty plea, but not an agreed-upon life sentence. The penalty, he held, must be submitted to a jury, which could decree life imprisonment or death.

At that, Sirhan refused to change his plea.

The transcript of Thursday's closed session corroborated The Times' account last week.

Cooper, in moving for the mistrial,

said Thursday's story "reflects quite accurately everything that . . . was said in chambers with respect to the possibility of the entry of a plea of guilty to murder in the first degree."

At another point, Cooper stressed that Sirhan "did want to enter a plea."

Judge Walker answered, "He did want to enter a plea to first-degree murder with life, but he didn't want to enter a plea with the suggestion I made as the record indicates" — that is, a guilty plea with the jury setting the penalty. After Sirhan's exit from the negotiations last week, one source quoted him as saying, "I'd rather die than spend my life in prison."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-3 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/21/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-678

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FEB 24 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

CC to Bureau
2-24-69

Judge Walker pointed out that it was he who told some details of the closed meetings which later appeared in print, and Cooper said, "I assign your honor doing that as misconduct."

Compton said some points similar to those covered in The Times' stories had been raised by reporters for some Eastern newspapers. He then pointed to what he felt were the "vices" of closed sessions.

Dilation Tested

Meanwhile, the prosecution continued laying out its case against Sirhan in open court, with police officer Travis R. White testifying that he examined Sirhan's eyes to test pupil dilation minutes after Sirhan was arrested.

White said he concluded from this single test that Sirhan was not under the influence of any drugs or liquor.

Other witnesses Thursday were fingerprint experts James E. Glabonne and Riley W. Maxwell of the Los Angeles Police Department, and Judy Rovey, a secretary for former Gov. Edmund G. Brown, who worked for the Kennedy campaign and witnessed the slaying.

Mrs. Elizabeth Evans and Ira Goldstein, two of five persons injured in the hail of bullets that killed Kennedy, also testified.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Composure After Shooting of Kennedy Described

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

After he had shot Robert F. Kennedy, and was grabbed by thunderstruck aides of the senator, Sirhan Bishara Sirhan was, "compared to the circle of people around him . . . enormously composed . . ."

"Amid this hurricane of sound and feeling, he seemed like the eye of the hurricane . . . He seemed purged."

This was part of the testimony Wednesday by George Plimpton, author, editor and Kennedy supporter.

Plimpton, called by the prosecution, gave testimony which pleased the defense. The latter has claimed that Sirhan killed Sen. Kennedy last June 5 while in an obsessive frame of mind and a trance-like state.

The witness told Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard of preceding Sen. Kennedy through the kitchen corridor at the Ambassador.

Series of Popping Sounds

Plimpton said he heard "a series of sharp popping sounds, which I didn't know what to make of . . . I had a sense that they were revolver shots."

He immediately grabbed for the gun, along with several others, and didn't see Sen. Kennedy fall to the floor, Plimpton testified. "I didn't have enough courage to look back in that direction," he added.

Paul Schrade, regional vice president for the United Auto Workers, and also a member of Sen. Kennedy's entourage, testified about being seriously wounded in the hail of gunfire.

He said he was walking with Sen. Kennedy when "all hell broke loose. I heard some crackling noises, like electricity, and I saw some flashes. I was badly shaken and I thought we were being electrified."

"I began shaking and I was falling. That was the last I knew until I regained consciousness on the floor. I felt great pain and a burning sensation in my head, and people were walking all over me."

Schrade was shot in the head, just above the hairline. He has since recovered.

Larry Kenneth Arnot, a former clerk at the Book, Stock and Barrel Gun Shop in Pasadena, acknowledged under questioning by Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts that he sold two boxes of .22-caliber ammunition to Sirhan.

Then, he began to tell of three men—one of them presumably Sirhan—who entered the shop on the date of the sale.

Arnot was quickly interrupted by Fitts, who asked him if a lie detector test later administered to him had not cast doubt on that story.

Arnot admitted that this was true.

Defense Attorney Grant B. Cooper then asked Arnot: "The truth of the matter is, you don't remember to whom you sold that ammunition, do you?" "No," said Arnot.

Four other afternoon witnesses traced the ownership of the death weapon from its first sale in August, 1965, to its private sale to the defendant's brother, Munir Sirhan, 21, last February.

Earlier testimony Wednesday placed Sirhan seven hours before the Kennedy assassination at a suburban pistol range.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-3 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/20/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

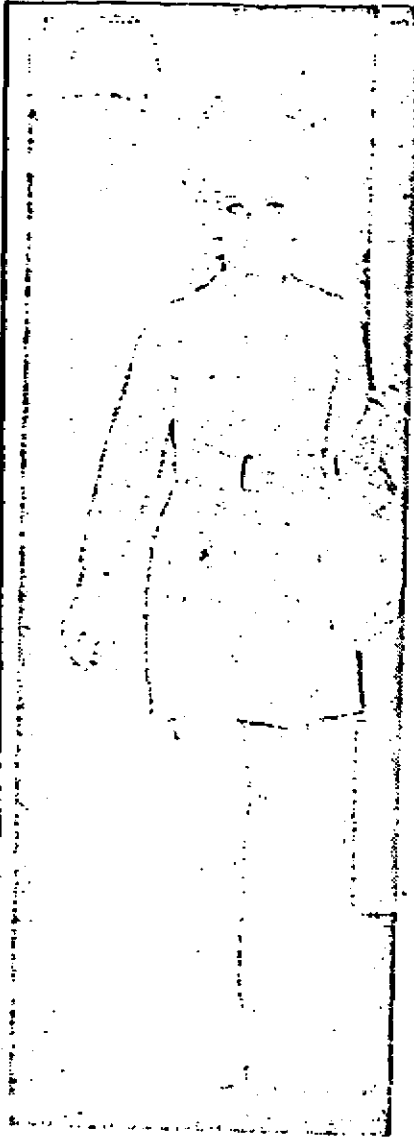
Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-1677

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 20 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)



SHE SAW SIRHAN—Mrs. Claudio Williams, a cocktail waitress, on way to trial with husband, Ronald. She told court of talking with Sirhan Sirhan at a pistol range 7 hours before Robert F. Kennedy was shot.
Times photo

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

**I-2 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.**

Date: 2/20/69

Edition: Home

Author:

Editor: Nick B. Williams

Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-1076

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FEB 20 1969	
FBI — LOS ANGELES	

*Oct. 1969
2-20-69*

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Possibility of Guilty Plea by Sirhan Now Appears Remote

Judge Walker's Insistence That Jury Must Determine Penalty in Case Seen as Barring Contemplated Change

Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker's insistence that the jury determine any penalty in the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy has all but eliminated the possibility of a guilty plea by Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, The Times has learned.

Sirhan and his attorneys were willing to plead guilty to first-degree murder last week—on condition that the defendant be guaranteed a life term rather than the death penalty.

But Sirhan balked at the last minute, when Judge Walker refused to give his required consent to the arrangement. The 30-year-old jurist indicated he would accept a guilty plea only on condition that the penalty be set by the jury.

Later he is said to have confided that his reason for this was a resolve to guarantee a full airing of the facts surrounding the senator's assassination.

Sirhan then reportedly took the position, after consulting with his lawyers, that the jury might vote the death penalty even if it were not sought by the prosecution.

Seems to Know System

There is reason to believe Sirhan knows the vagaries of the jury system.

He could have been influenced by the outcome last year of the trial of former Rep. Dist. Atty. Jack Kirschke.

Kirschke, after being convicted of killing his wife and her paramour, received the death penalty—since reduced by the court to life imprisonment.

Within a few hours of his arrest, Sirhan reportedly told investigators that he felt the jury was wrong in returning a death penalty verdict against Kirschke.

He insisted that the evidence was

too weak to justify such punishment.

Speculation that Sirhan did not want to change his plea because he desired to tell his story of the assassination is not altogether valid.

He had agreed to plead guilty if he could be assured of life in prison.

If he had accepted the alternative presented by Judge Walker—pleading guilty and taking his chances in a penalty trial—he could have taken the witness stand to relate at least some of the details of why he shot Kennedy.

Judge Walker, it was learned, also felt that disclosure of the evidence

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/20/69
Edition: Home
Author:
Editor: Wick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-1675

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 20 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

celebration
2-20-69

would have laid to rest any doubt that Sirhan was acting alone when he fired the fatal shots.

Why did the two sides—the prosecution and defense—decide to take the proposal of a change in plea to Judge Walker?

Concede Shooting

The defense attorneys concede that Sirhan did the shooting. They have publicly stated that their main goal in the case is to save his life.

By agreeing to a change in plea, with a guaranteed life prison term, they would have accomplished such a mission.

The prosecution, on the other hand, fully intended from the beginning to seek the death penalty—and felt there was a good chance of success.

However, psychiatric reports furnished to both prosecution and defense reduced these chances.

The prosecution is said to have felt that if it had only a marginal chance of

securing the death penalty for Sirhan, the interest of the public might best be served by accepting a guilty plea, with life in prison, thus saving a great deal of time and expense and personal anguish for the families and individuals involved.

And the prosecution has indicated that it would make public the full record of its investigations in the event of a guilty plea.

Presumably there still could be a change of plea. But that is unlikely unless either Judge Walker or Sirhan reverses his present thinking.

Meanwhile, the prosecution is pushing ahead with its case against Sirhan.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan's Trial Highlighted by Courtroom Drama, Bomb Scare

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Although the defense admits Sirhan Bishara Sirhan killed Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, the prosecution continued its methodical proving of the point Tuesday, with unexpectedly lively courtroom exchanges and a brief bomb scare.

The clearing up of an old mystery, and a hostile tug-of-wills between two other witnesses and defense counsel were the highlights in the court of Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker.

One brief flurry of excitement interrupted the trial when Judge Walker ordered the courtroom cleared after Bailiff Willard Polhemus reported a ticking noise in his desk.

After a short search it was discovered that telephone repairs in the building were causing a solenoid in Polhemus' desk phone to click at regular intervals.

The cross-examination of witnesses helped dismiss for a while the underlying fact that the outcome of this phase of Sirhan's trial—now seven weeks old—is a foregone conclusion: Sirhan did kill Sen. Kennedy and will not be acquitted; the only point at issue is determining the penalty.

En route to that point, the prosecution is laying out its entire case in an effort to show that Sirhan's act was sufficiently premeditated to warrant a conviction of first-degree murder.

The defense is bearing with the testimony on the uncontested point in order to undermine whatever evidence of premeditation they can and, if necessary, discredit witnesses who could strengthen the prosecution claim of malice aforethought.

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper employed this tactic on Everett C. Buckner, rangemaster of the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club where Sirhan went target-practicing June 4, the eve of the assassination.

In attacking Buckner's credibility as a witness, Cooper also wrote the finish to a statement that months ago provided slight fuel to speculation that Sirhan might have been part of a conspiracy.

After repeated and pointed questioning of Buckner about when and how long Sirhan was at the Duarte rifle and pistol range—and evident disbelief at Buckner's answers—Cooper asked suddenly:

"You have a kind of vivid imagination, don't you, sir?"

"No," said Buckner.

Citing Buckner's statements to investigators last summer, Cooper shot back: "Didn't you say that a lady was with him?"

"No," Buckner replied. "I said a lady came up and he showed her how to shoot."

"Did you or did you not say at that time that the lady told Sirhan, 'Get out of here, God damn you. Somebody will recognize us?'"

Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/19/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-256
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-51-674

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 19 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to [unclear]
2-19-69

Buckner denied making the statement, then said he had told police "it sounded that way," and that "I couldn't hear them that well."

Cooper asked Buckner if he had not taken a lie detector test and flunked it, and Buckner answered he had "just flunked on that question."

Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts objected that reference to lie detector tests was inadmissible and the exchange was stricken from the record.

But in further questioning about the alleged exchange between Sirhan and the woman, Buckner himself referred repeatedly to "the day I took the lie detector test."

Asked if he had admitted to police that he never overheard such a remark, Buckner said, "I didn't admit it wasn't made. I admitted that I could have misunderstood."

Still another, and more celebrated, mystery presumably was laid to rest Tuesday, with the testimony of Valerie Schulte, former manager of Sen. Kennedy's campaign office in Goleta, where she was a UC Santa Barbara coed.

Identified Earlier

Miss Schulte, 22, was earlier identified from photographs as "the girl Vincent DiPierro, a witness Monday, thought he saw near the scene of the shooting at the Ambassador."

DiPierro and Sandra Serrano, a witness yet to be called, told investigators last summer they had seen a girl in a black and white polka dot dress, talking to Sirhan and that she later ran from the scene shouting, "We shot him."

That story was later

admitted to be a fabrication, and Tuesday Miss Schulte testified that:

—She couldn't have run at all last June 4. She was on crutches as a result of a skiing accident, and still wears a brace on her right leg.

—She never even noticed Sirhan until the first shot was fired.

—She was wearing a polka dot dress, but not black and white. She exhibited the garment she wore that night. It was a lime green mini-dress with canary yellow polka dots.

The mood of the courtroom was somber as William Barry, chief of security for the slain senator, described in a subdued and halting voice how he got separated from Kennedy in the exuberance of the election victory celebration.

Barry said that after Kennedy finished a victory statement, the senator jumped from the back of the stage instead of returning in Barry's direction and then headed toward the kitchen corridor where he was shot.

Barry said he was back in the crowd, assisting Mrs. Kennedy and trying to catch up when the first shot was fired.

Johnson Story

Former Olympics decathlon champion Rafer Johnson also took the stand to tell of his part in the struggle to subdue Sirhan after the first shot was fired.

Johnson told Dep. Dist. Atty. John E. Howard that it was he who took possession of Sirhan's gun, after former Los Angeles Rams tackle Roosevelt Grier disarmed the suspect.

Author George Plimpton is scheduled as a prosecution witness today.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Jurors Hear Of Sirhan's Target Drill

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan fired his pistol "like it was a machine gun" as he practiced shooting hours before his admitted killing of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, jurors in the young Arab's trial have been told.

That testimony came late yesterday from Henry Adrian Carreon, who talked with Sirhan at the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club at Duarte around noon of June 4, 1968—some 12 hours before Kennedy was shot.

Carreon was scheduled to take the witness box again when the trial convened this morning.

Carreon's testimony, and that of Everett C. Buckner Sr., rangemaster at the club, marked a switch in emphasis in the prosecution's case from the events in Ambassador Hotel's Embassy Ballroom pantry, scene of the June 5, 1968 assassination, to Sirhan's preparations for the slaying.

The trial will return briefly to the hotel scene today when George Plimpton, editor of the Paris Review, and a member of the Kennedy entourage during the California presidential primary, takes the stand.

Buckner was in charge of the gun range the morning of June 4, 1968, when Sirhan showed up for what was to become several hours of target practice before Kennedy was slain.

However, the rangemaster was only a few minutes into cross examination by Chief Defense Counsel Grant B. Cooper before his testimony was subjected to sharp attack.

Cooper charged that Buckner had a "vivid imagination" and had given a false story to police about conversation between

Sirhan and a woman at the range.

Cooper asked:

"Did you at any time ever hear any lady say to Mr. Sirhan, 'Get out of here, God damn you, somebody will recognize us?'"

A—No.

Q—Didn't you tell police that some lady had said that to Mr. Sirhan?

A—I told police I don't know what was said.

Cooper said Buckner "took a lie detector test and flunked it" over his testimony.

The woman in question, Claudia Williams, will be a witness today. She will testify as to her conversation with Sirhan.

Carreon told the jury and Judge Herbert V. Walker, who presides over the Sirhan trial, that he and a friend, David Montellano, visited the San Gabriel Valley range about 10 a.m. June 4, 1968. Montellano will testify at today's session.

He said they "heard rapid firing that was . . . like a machine gun," and went to the pistol range to investigate.

"He (Sirhan) was there trying to shoot as fast as he could," Carreon said.

Surrounding the 24-year-old Jordanian immigrant at the range, according to Carreon, were 300 to 400 empty shell cases and five or six empty boxes of "regular" .22 calibre ammunition.

"There also was a box of mini-magnums," he said.

Sen. Kennedy was killed with mini-magnum ammunition. Buckner testified to selling a box to Sirhan when the latter asked for a type of ammunition that would not misfire or jam a gun.

Carreon also testified Montellano told him that he did not believe Sirhan was a particularly good shot.

Carreon said that Sirhan, asked what kind of a pistol he had, was at first reluctant to discuss it, but later identified the gun as an Iver-Johnson. Sirhan was disarmed of a .22 caliber "Cadet" Iver-Johnson, an eight-shot revolver, after he shot Kennedy.

Today, Dep. Dist. Atty. John Howard will trace the weapon from its original purchase in 1965 until it came into Sirhan's family in 1968. Witnesses will include Mrs. Albert Herlihy, wife of the original buyer of the weapon, and George Erhardt, who sold it to Sirhan and his brother, Muazir, in February, 1968.

Larry Arnet, Pasadena gunsmith who sold ammunition to Sirhan, also will testify.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/19/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

21a-156-21-673

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FEB 20 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Oct 1968
2-20-69

Much of yesterday's testimony. Miss Schulte said that when she was taken up by Officer the shooting took place she was Arthur Placencia, one of the either pushed or shoved to the policeman who arrested Sirhan floor.

In cross examination, Cooper brought out that Placencia examined Sirhan's eyes after the shooting to determine if he were under the influence of alcohol or narcotics, and that—exposed to bright light—the pupils failed to contract. He said this was a possible symptom of alcohol influence.

Placencia, however, denied he had formed any opinion as to Sirhan's sobriety.

The defense has said it intends to prove Sirhan was "in a trance" and "intoxicated" when he shot Kennedy. Defense lawyers say privately the young Arab, unused to alcohol, had consumed several drinks before the shooting.

The prosecution is expected to dispute any claim Sirhan was drunk.

Earlier yesterday, the "polka-dot girl" took the stand.

Valerie Schulte, 22, of Santa Barbara, stated she was present the night of the shooting and after hearing shots saw a hand with a gun extended.

She said she was on crutches at the time because of the fracture of her left leg in a skiing accident. She still wore a cast on the leg when she testified.

"I was on the floor and could not see," she said.

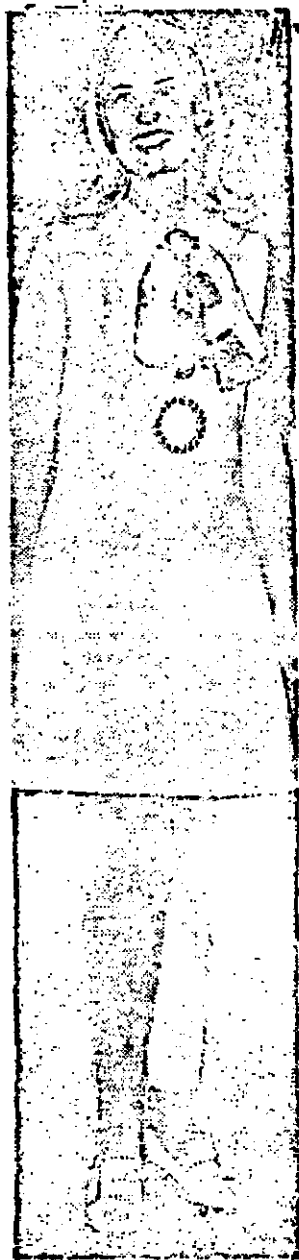
Miss Schulte said that she could identify Sirhan only from pictures and that she had told a policeman she could not make a positive identification.

She brought with her the polka-dot dress she wore the night Kennedy was shot and held it up for observation. It was green with yellow polka-dots — not black and white as testified by an earlier witness.

Rafer Johnson, former Olympic decathlon champion who had been helping guard the senator, also took the stand and testified he had been left behind when Kennedy disappeared through the curtain at the back of the Embassy Room's stage.

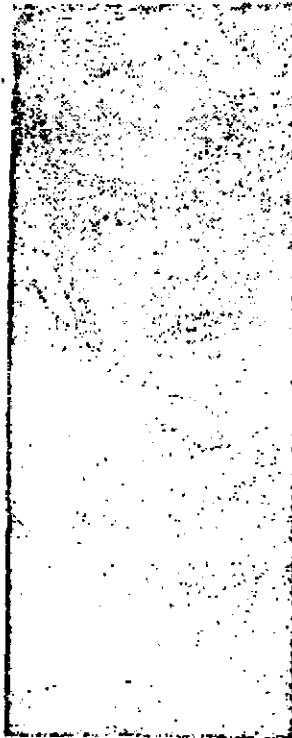
Johnson said he had worked his way through the crowd to the serving pantry and, "When I got there I heard what I thought at that point was balloons—one or two popping. Then I heard more and I saw smoke. I started for the smoke."

Johnson testified he, Roscoe Grier and others had overcome Sirhan and wrestled for the gun. "Roosevelt Grier had his hand on the gun, I had my hand on the gun. Then he let go and I took it."



—Herald-Examiner Photo

VALERIE SCHULTE
Brought her
polka-dot dress



—Herald-Examiner Photo

ARTHUR PLACENCIA
Checked Sirhan's eyes



—Herald-Examiner Photo

HENRY A. CARREON
"Like a machine gun"

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

'Polka-Dot Girl' On Sirhan Stand

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Valerie Schulte, identified in cross examination by defense testimony as the mysterious "polka-dot girl" in the Sen. Robert F. Kennedy murder case, testifies today in the trial of Kennedy's admitted assassin—Sirhan Bishara Sirhan.

Photographs, taken of Miss Schulte in her Santa Barbara home, were put in evidence by prosecuting attorneys yesterday and showed her clad in a short-skirted, green dress with pink polka-dots.

Vince DiPierro, Santa Monica City College student and part-time waiter at the Ambassador Hotel where Sen. Kennedy was shot, identified Miss Schulte as the polka-dot girl.

Immediately after the shooting, Miss Sandra Sora, a Kennedy campaign worker, told police she had seen a polka-dot-dressed girl running through the hotel yelling: "We shot Kennedy! We shot Kennedy!"

DiPierro said he saw a similarly-clad girl talking with Sirhan in a pantry off the hotel's Embassy room shortly before the shooting. He said under

cross examination by defense counsel Grant B. Cooper that she was there and that it appeared Sirhan had smiled at her.

DiPierro said she was wearing a white dress with black polka-dots and that she was a brunette.

Dept. Dist. Atty. David Fitts displayed the color picture of a girl in a polka-dot dress and DiPierro said she seemed to be the girl he had seen.

Cooper noted that the girl in the picture was wearing a different colored dress and that she was a blonde—not a brunette.

However, DiPierro said he felt she was the same girl.

There was no evidence that the polka-dot girl figured in any way in the shooting, except that she was present with dozens of other people trying to meet Kennedy.

Also on today's witness list are Kennedy's bodyguard, William Barry, and former Olympic

the polka-dot girl figured in any way in the shooting, except that she was present with dozens of other people trying to meet Kennedy.

Also on today's witness list are Kennedy's bodyguard, William Barry, and former Olympic decathlon champion Rafer Johnson.

Witnesses said Sirhan tried to explain his shooting of Kennedy to Johnson minutes after the senator was gunned down.

Officers William Placencia and Travis White, who took Sirhan into custody from Roosevelt Grier, former California Assembly Speaker Jesse Unruh and others also will testify.

Grier, 295-pound former Los Angeles Rams defensive tackle, testified yesterday he helped subdue Sirhan after the shooting and then beat off angry bystanders, who sought to kill or harm the young Arab.

Unruh, now Assembly Minority Leader, told of crying, "Don't kill him! Don't kill him," to a lynch-minded, hysterical throng in the hotel pantry. He then accompanied Sirhan to jail following his arrest to help assure no harm came to the admitted slayer he said.

Another witness, Jack Gallivan of Salt Lake City, who was an advance man in Kennedy's Democratic Presidential primary campaign, told of Grier's subduing Sirhan.

"Rosey sort of leaned over and plucked the gun from the suspect's hand," he said.

Gallivan said that he had earlier tried to disarm the wiry Jordanian, but failed.

Frank J. Burns Jr., friend of both Kennedy and Unruh, who was active in the primary campaign, also testified.

Burns echoed Unruh's con-

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/18/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification:
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

76-140-7-672

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 19 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Carl Johnson
2-19-69

cern that Kennedy's assailant be brought to trial and not harmed.

"The man had to be kept alive," the Inglewood Assemblyman testified.

He also said he told bystanders, "If our system means anything this one has to be brought to trial."

Two hotel kitchen helpers the night of the slaying told of seeing Sirhan skulking in the Embassy Ballroom pantry before the shooting.

Jesus Perez, speaking through a Spanish interpreter, said Sirhan spoke to him and asked him if Kennedy was coming through the kitchen and pantry following his victory speech in the ballroom.

Perez said he told Sirhan he didn't know.

Perez testified he watched Sirhan fire the shots that killed Kennedy, and prosecutors sought to elicit from him what, if anything, he heard the young Arab say when he fired the .22 calibre "Cadet" Iver-Johnson, eight-shot revolver. But Judge

Herbert V. Walker, presiding over the trial, ruled this testimony inadmissible:

Q.—Do you recall if the defendant said something?

A—I heard him murmur, I heard something, but I can't say what it was because there was a lot of noise.

Q—Can you recall any words?

A—I suppose it was something like "son a." I don't know.

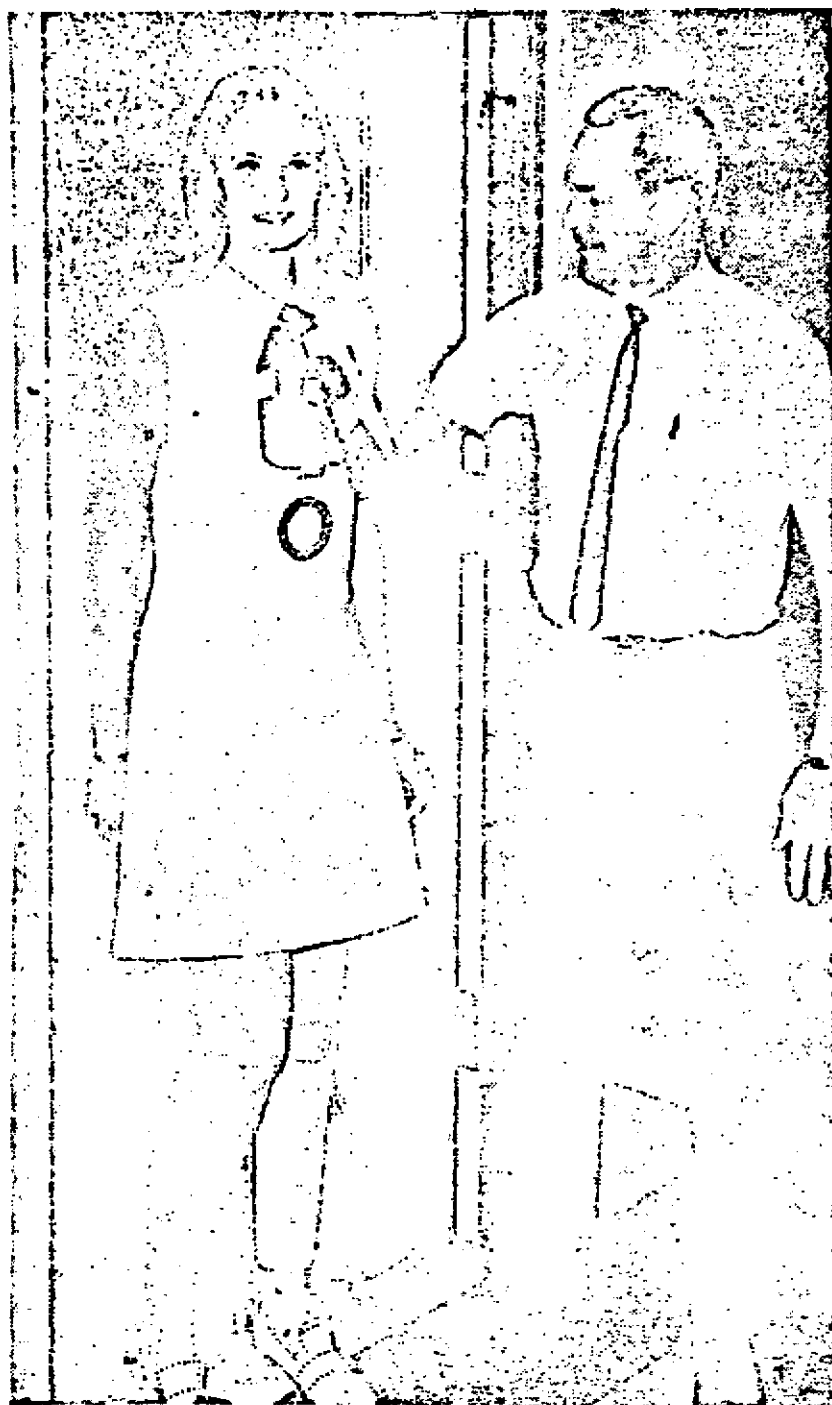
Perez, too, told of attempts on Sirhan following the shooting.

Q—What happened after the gun was fired?

A—I saw many lunge at him (Sirhan). But I don't know who they were. There were so many people there.

Defense attorneys had no cross examination for Perez, nor Burns, nor Martin Patrusky, another Ambassador kitchen staffer who saw Sirhan before the shooting.

Grant B. Cooper, chief defense counsel, is concerned about the impression on the jury the oft-repeated story of Kennedy's slaying by many eyewitnesses is making on the jury.



SIRIAN TRIAL WITNESS — Valerie Schulte arrives to testify she couldn't have been mystery girl who ran from shooting—she was on crutches then, still wears broce. Right, investigator Carmon Rojentine. Times photo by Frank Q. Brown

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

'THOSE FACES SHOWED EVERYTHING BUT GRIEF'

By Al Stump

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Roosevelt Grier put away his guitar and sundy walked the streets alone, at night—often not knowing where he was, nor caring—his huge body wracked with convulsive sobs.

His personal dirge for Robert F. Kennedy was the beating of his fists against a brick wall in an alley, a moan escaping under a lamppost.

"When the senator and I hadn't seen each other for a while, and met, we hugged each other," Rosey Grier said yesterday. "The senator and I always hugged."

"He'd squeeze me hard and I would squeeze him not so hard . . . and, oh, hell, why talk about it? A black man knows he's receiving true love from a white man when he feels it like that."

The 292-pound former defensive tackle of the Los Angeles Rams and all-pro star came to testify at the trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan and what he said only verified known facts—that Kennedy's bodyguard narrowly missed being at the senator's side (he stayed behind in the Ambassador Hotel

ballroom to help Ethel Kennedy leave the platform) when Kennedy moved into the pantry containing the killer. Normally, his 6-foot-5 frame would have been in front of the candidate or at his shoulder.

And it was Grier who "plucked" the gun from Sirhan's hand when others had failed the task, meanwhile pinning him to a metal table and kicking and punching away at least three persons who sought to harm the assassin.

But the Grier who merely verified from the stand wasn't the Grier who spoke, grimly, in a street outside the courtroom 20 minutes later.

This was a man who found the trial scene disgusting and disheartening, a shock to his sensibilities.

"All that joking, giggling and lighthearted stuff that goes on in the halls outside the courtroom. These people are taking it like it's some kind of amusement. You think a terrible thing never happened."

"Inside the courtroom it's all a business—cut and dried, with everything laid out and with nobody showing any emotion."

Rosey Grier, himself, was so overcome with emotion after testifying that tears welled behind his glasses. The man mountain looked down at a reporter and said:

"I'm disheartened by what I saw. Can't we learn from the senator's death, can't we learn when killings and riots keep happening that we must all do something about it and not just stand around shaking our heads at the social condition?"

"Doesn't matter about the little guy on trial. What matters is that this happening isn't focusing attention as it should on the need to have some brotherhood in the United States."

"Nobody up there in that Hall of Justice acted like it was the world we live in on review. Except the judge and maybe a few others. On the witness stand I feel nobody really cared about America and what's going on. There was no soul in that place, no sir."

A friend of Grier's pointed out that murder trials uniformly are clinical affairs, closely bound round by cold legal strictures.

"I know, —but that still doesn't explain why those faces I

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-3 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/18/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: Al Stump
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-671

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FEB 19 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

certification
2-19-69

looked at showed everything but concern and grief," he said gloomily. "Sen. Kennedy cared for people so much and if his spirit doesn't spread, God help us."

The ex-grizzer and star of a TV variety show admitted his continuing personal nightmare is the chance he missed to move off the Ambassador stage promptly and maintain strategic protection for Kennedy. How many times I've wished I'd been up there to block for him," said the giant. "But Ethel Kennedy needed help."

"Leaving the stage, she was almost pushed down and walked on by the crowd."

Would Grier's presence have changed anything?

Maybe. Kennedy advance man Jack Gallivan, who also testified yesterday and who was first of the party to enter the kitchen, speculated:

"Close to 300 pounds of Rosey might have blocked Sirhan's view." Also Grier might have stooped the first, fatal bullet.

"I first met Sen. Kennedy more than a year before I started campaigning for him," continued Grier, whose Rams career ended in 1967 when he

ruptured his Achilles tendon. "It was in Washington—a meeting called to help delinquent children. He didn't say what people always say—how big I am—but gave me a hard handshake and told me he was glad I was 'getting right into one of the hard-core problems of the country.' He told me I'd work hard, and I did."

Steadily, defense lawyers have sought to emphasize that their client was in a trance-like, wholly hysterical condition by emphasizing the size and strength of the man who leaped upon him.

—Ken Becker, George Plimpton, Jesse Crum, Rafer Johnson. The tactic failed when Rosey Grier was asked, "Did you have any trouble getting the gun away from him?"

(Jack Gallivan, 5-foot-11, 185 pounds, earlier admitted handling tiny Sirhan was "surprising—a tough job.")

Replied Grier, amused: "No, sir."

★ ★ ★

Counselors' recent tendency toward fluppance brings the dour Judge Herbert Walker into instant action.

Yesterday, attempting to es-

tablish the role of author George Plimpton on the RFK staff, Dep. Dist. Atty. David Pitts was told by a witness that Plimpton wasn't a regular staff member, "but with the senator's party."

Pitts: "Should I use the word party? Or should I say 'retinue.' Retinue's word I like."

Voice from the defense table, "Why not coterie? That's not bad."

Judge Walker, coming down hard: "Let's get on with the business!"

★ ★ ★

A first-time spectator, Art "Golden Boy" Aragon, ex-contender for world boxing titles, was asked by a curious guard, "What brings you here?"

"Well," cracked Aragon, who is in the business of financing people out of jail, "I didn't come to bail him out."

Seriously, Aragon said although he was a Gene McCarthy Backer, he came "as sort of a way to show my respect for the senator."

★ ★ ★

Prediction printed earlier by the Herald-Examiner, now becoming reality: defense will

make every effort to show Sirhan Sirhan was half-drunk, or maybe more than that, at the Ambassador.

Part-time Ambassador waiter Vince DiPiero was quizzed closely by defense on the number of bars in Sirhan's vicinity the night of the election. The total: five.

Sirhan came to the party with plenty of money. His tipple, if he was tipping, was three or more Tom Collinses.



—Associated Press Photo

ROOSEVELT GRIER ARRIVES TO TESTIFY
"These people are taking it like . . . amusement"

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Rosey Grier Is Sirhan Witness

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

All-pro football star Roosevelt Grier, who wrestled Sirhan Bishara Sirhan's gun from him after the young Jordanian's admitted fatal shooting of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, testifies today at Sirhan's trial.

Grier, now retired from football and a professional entertainer, will be the eighth witness produced by the prosecution as it details the events of early the morning of June 5, 1968—the time Kennedy was shot in a pantry off the Ambassador Hotel's Embassy Ballroom.

Four other witnesses who have testified so far in the trial have told of Grier's pushing through the crowd after the shooting and tackling the wiry, 34-year-old Arab.

Karl Uecker, 190-pound former Ambassador maitre d' hotel, said that it was all he and the huge ex-football player could do to subdue Sirhan.

Grier, according to Uecker, disarmed Sirhan, giving the .21 calibre "Cadet" Iver Johnson revolver to former Olympic decathlon champion Rafer Johnson for safekeeping.

Grier will be the first of the so-called star witnesses the prosecution will produce. Others are expected to be Johnson, George Plimpton and members of Kennedy's staff.

Other witnesses expected today, as the trial moves into its 23rd session, are Angelo DiPierro, present Ambassador maitre d' hotel and his son, Vince, the conclusion of whose testimony will be first order of business today.

Young DiPierro, in dramatic testimony Friday, told of standing near Sen. Kennedy when the first shot hit. Another of Sirhan's victims, United Auto Workers official Paul Schrade, fell wounded into DiPierro's arms. A third victim, Ira Goldstein, fell against him when hit and knocked him to the ground, the young man said.

He said his glasses were so splattered with Kennedy's blood he could not see.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/17/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kinsalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-670

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 18 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

226-156-21-670
2.18.69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Unruh and Grier Tell Dramatic Details of Kennedy's Slaying

Former Ram Football Star Describes How He Held Senator's Accused Slayer

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

The killing of Robert F. Kennedy and the capture of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan were retold in dramatic detail Monday by former Assembly Speaker Jess Unruh and former football star Roosevelt Grier.

It was the massive Grier who gave spectators in the court of Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker a thoughtful moment when he described the way he subdued the diminutive Sirhan.

Said Grier: "I folded his leg around my arm and put him on top of a table."

Grier, who retired from the Los Angeles Rams last year and now hosts a weekly television show, stands 6 feet, 5 inches and weighs about 290 pounds. Sirhan, 24, is a shade over 5 feet 2 inches and weighed 112 pounds at the time of his arrest.

Crowd Violence Feared

Both Grier and Unruh told of their concern that a frenzied mob in the narrow kitchen corridor of the Ambassador June 5 might kill Sirhan after Sen. Kennedy was fatally wounded.

Unruh, now Democratic leader in the California Assembly, said he was "terribly aware that we could have a repeat of the Oswald situation," and shouted repeatedly, "Don't kill him, don't kill him, we've got to keep him alive."

Unruh testified that he also shouted, "If the system works at all, we are going to try this one"—presumably Sirhan.

Lee Harvey Oswald, accused of assassinating President John F. Kennedy in November, 1963, was murdered before being brought to trial.

Tells of Defending Sirhan

Grier amplified on Unruh's account of Kennedy aides' concern to save Sirhan. Soon after he grabbed Sirhan, Grier testified, he saw "one guy hurting his leg and some people coming at him from the front, so I swung on them and kicked the guy back and they seemed to realize we were trying to save the guy, so they stopped."

Defense questioning of both Grier and Unruh brought out that Sen. Kennedy's detour through the kitchen corridor where he met death was a last minute change of plan.

Defense attorney Emile Zola Berman asked Unruh if, as chairman of both the Kennedy campaigns in California and the Kennedy delegation to the Democratic National Convention, he wouldn't have been privy to such sudden changes in plan.

Unruh replied: "Yes, but politics changes very rapidly, my friend—as we discovered on June 4."

Defense questioning of an earlier witness focused renewed attention on the much-discussed "girl in the polka dot dress" who was first reported running out of the hotel shouting "We shot him".

Vincent DiPierro, a part-time waiter at the Ambassador, acknowledged that he had told of seeing such a girl and further acknowledged that on July 1 he admitted his story was false.

Monday DiPierro testified that he had seen a girl in a polka dot dress earlier that night, and that after talking to another witness, Sandra Serrano, he had "injected" the girl into the events immediately surrounding the shooting.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

**1-3 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.**

Date: 2/18/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kenseit

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 18 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

56-156-24-669

2-18-69

At that time both Miss Serrano and Di Pierro described the girl as wearing a black and white polka dot dress and standing near Sirhan, perhaps even talking to him or smiling at him.

Dept. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts produced seven photographs of Valerie Schulte of Goleta, whom Di Pierro said he believed was the same girl. In the photographs, however, Miss Schulte's dress was of yellow polka dots on a green background. No further connection was made between Miss Schulte and the shooting scene.

Miss Schulte was scheduled to be called this morning as the first witness for the prosecution.

Other prosecution witnesses Monday were John W. Gallivan Jr., an advance man for the Kennedy campaign; Jesus Perez, an Ambassador Hotel kitchen worker; Martin Patrusky, a hotel bartender, and Frank J. Burns Jr., a Kennedy campaign worker.

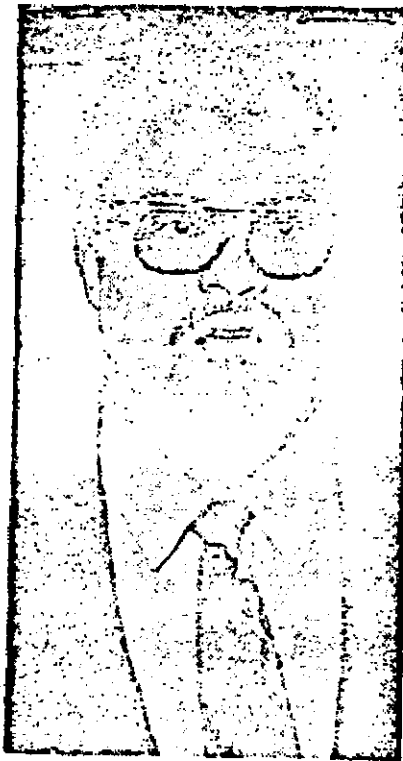
All gave eyewitness accounts of the slaying. Perez and Patrusky testifying that Sirhan had loitered in the corridor for about half an hour before Sen. Kennedy came through, repeatedly asking if they knew whether he planned to come that way.

Gallivan, like previous witnesses, said the first

gunfire sounded like firecrackers to him. "The sound didn't seem important enough to be shots, if you know what I mean," he said.

Asked if he could still recreate the scene in his mind, Gallivan said, "I've been trying to forget this scene, as much as possible. But I haven't been very successful."

Other witnesses for the prosecution scheduled today include William Barry, Sen. Kennedy's bodyguard, and Rafer Johnson, former Olympic star and a member of the Kennedy entourage.



Roosevelt Grier

Times photo

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan: Prison Problem if He Is Convicted?

Security Measures in State Institutions Held OK in Accused Slayer's Case

BY DAVID LARSEN
Times Staff Writer

In a prison, the most common method of murder is with a home-made shiv—quite often a steel bed-slat which has been sharpened on a cell floor.

The victim is usually an anonymous convict and the crime usually receives little outside attention. It happened 14 times in the prisons of the state last year.

Suppose an internationally known convict showed up who had murdered a presidential candidate. Wouldn't he be an exceptional target?

To be specific about it, if the defense of Sirhan B. Sirhan prevails and the accused assassin of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy is sentenced to a life of incarceration, how can he possibly be kept from harm?

Disclose Previous Steps

State prison officials were reluctant Sunday to speculate on Sirhan's future as such, but they did disclose the steps which have been taken regarding other convicts whose backgrounds or personalities indicate the advisability of providing them with protection.

"Protection cases aren't uncommon," said Philip Guthrie, information officer for the Department of Corrections. "They include informers, inmates who we think might be targets of the aggressive homosexuals, and former law enforcement officers."

At a minimum security penitentiary, there are no armed guards and the housing is in dormitories. Murderers are very seldom assigned to one from the reception center.

Although Vacaville is the state's mental hospital-prison, it is by no means automatic that Sirhan would go there.

"We figure we've got about 3,400 people who should be on some kind of psychiatric program," said Guthrie. "But Vacaville accommodates only 1,400 — and it is filled."

For instance, Jack Kirschke, the former Los Angeles County deputy district attorney who was convicted of murdering his wife and her boyfriend, is considered a special case.

Kirschke couldn't be thrown in with other men whose plight is due to his work as a prosecutor. For this reason, he has been assigned permanently to clerical duties at the reception center of the California Institution for Men at Chino. He lives with other inmates, not to be of stable natures.

Would Be First Stop

That reception center, incidentally, would be Sirhan's first stop, if he is sentenced to life imprisonment.

Any criminal sentenced in one of the 11 southern counties of the state is sent first to Chino (the rest go to a reception center at Vacaville).

The typical stay is six weeks. During that time the convict is given aptitude tests, psychiatric tests (if they are indicated) and a history of his life is compiled.

With this and other information in hand—such as how much of a security risk the inmate is likely to be—the reception center staff forwards to the director of corrections a recommendation of which facility he should be assigned to. The director usually goes along with the recommendations.

There are 11 prisons for men in California. They are Folsom and San Quentin (both maximum security), at Chino (separate from the reception center and considered minimum security), at Susanville, Jamestown and Chino (conservation centers considered minimum security) and at Tehachapi, Vacaville, San Luis Obispo, Solano and Tracy (ranging in security from medium to minimum).

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

3 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/17/69
Edition: Home
Author: David Larsen
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

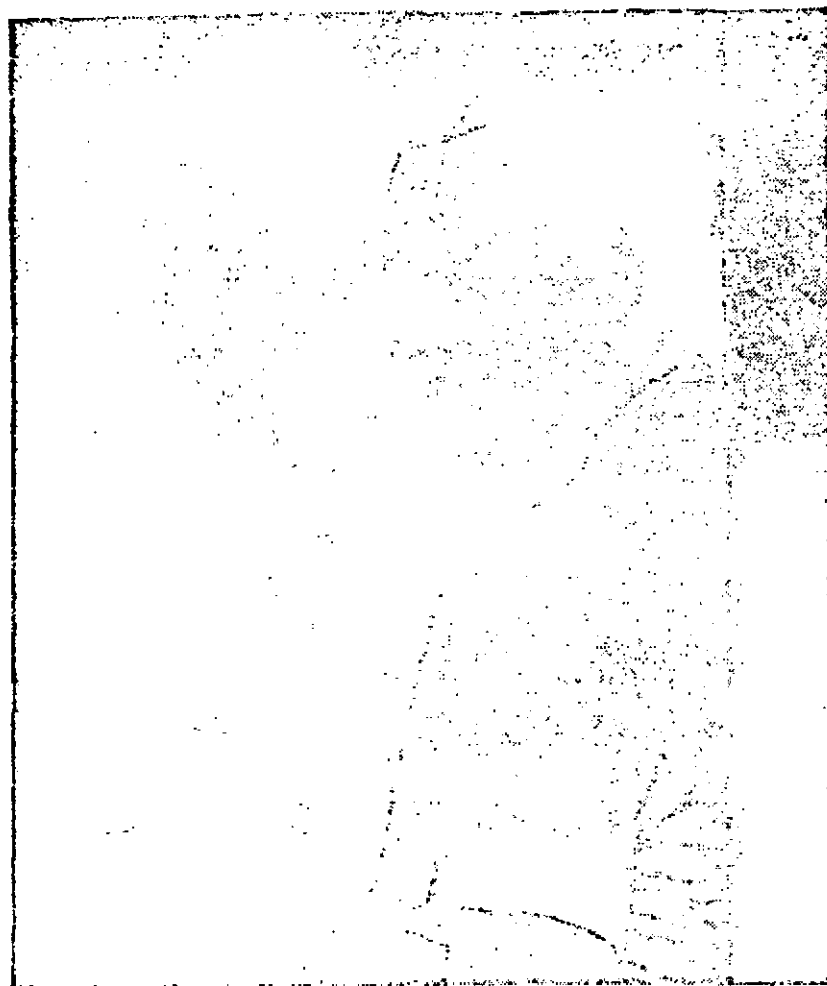
Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

57-156-2-168

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 17 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

2-17-69



SLAYING WITNESS—Juan Romero, left is directed by an official to courtroom where Sirhan B. Sirhan is on trial. Romero told the court about kneeling beside Sen. Robert F. Kennedy after the shooting.
Times photo by Steve Fontanini

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Steps Traced by Prosecution

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan makes his first big effort today to refute prosecution claims that he carefully plotted his admitted killing of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Emile Zola Berman, in an opening speech for the defense, will attempt to convince the jury of eight men and four women that Sirhan shot Kennedy in an act of political assassination while under obsession, rather than premeditated murder. The defense strategy will be an attempt to save the 24-year-old Jordanian immigrant from death in the gas chamber.

The Berman statement, on tap as this morning's first order of business, will follow yesterday's prosecution statement by Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Fitts in which the silver-haired prosecutor drew this word picture of Kennedy's murder for the jury:

• Sirhan shuffled through the kitchens of the Ambassador Hotel 47 hours before the Kennedy slaying and was seen striking them out by two witnesses. The occasion was a reception for Kennedy in the hotel's Palm Court.

• Returning to the kitchens June 5, 1965, Sirhan shot the New York Senator at almost point-blank range, firing several shots which fatally wounded Kennedy and injured five other persons.

• The day of the shooting, the young Arab spent most of the day target shooting at the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club, and told another club patron he was going to use his gun for hunting. "It could kill a dog," Fitts said

Sirhan told a witness who will testify later in the trial.

• Sirhan told former California State Assembly Speaker Jesse Unruh he shot Kennedy "for my country," when Unruh accompanied him and two police officers to the Rampart Police Station following the Jordanian's arrest. Unruh, said Fitts, will testify to this.

Detailing the prosecution case for the jury, Fitts, who spoke as a last-minute substitute for Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton, hung his presentation on a series of key dates, which he listed in chronological order.

The first, he said, was August 10, 1965. "While smoke still belched from the Watts riots. On this day, Albert Leslie Horst purchased a .22 calibre 'Cobra' Iver-Johnson, eight-shot revolver. The pistol eventually found its way into the possession of George Erhart, a co-worker of Munir Sirhan, the defendant's brother.

On the next key date, "on or about Feb. 2, 1966," said Fitts, Erhart drove to the Sirhan home at 665 East Howard St., Pasadena, with a companion and "in the daylight hours waited jointly for Munir Sirhan and the defendant Sirhan Sirhan." The purpose of visit was to sell Munir the gun.

"Erhart displayed the gun,"

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/14/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-664

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 17 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
2-17-69

continued Fitts, "and hageling with respect to the purchase price ensued."

"A bargain was struck for \$25 cash."

"Munir Sirhan produced \$18 and the balance was produced by Sirhan Sirhan."

Fitts went on: "The next day of consequence was June 1, 1968."

Sirhan, according to Fitts, visited the Lock, Stock and Barrel Gun Shop in Pasadena where he purchased "several boxes of .42 calibre ammunition called 'mini-magnum' from a clerk, Larry Ann."

"Getting ahead of my story," Fitts said, "Sirhan was killed with mini-magnum ammunition."

"On Sunday, June 2, 1968, there was a reception in the Ambassador Hotel's Palm Court for Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, who was then actively campaigning for the Democratic nomination for the presidency."

"... Among those who attended was Sirhan Sirhan. He was observed in the lobby area."

"He was observed by William Blison... who recognized him as a person he had known casually earlier" when both were stock boys in Pasadena shops.

"Mrs. Malan Davis went into the Ambassador's kitchens in search of a drink of water. She observed Sirhan in one of the kitchens leaning on a bar, dressed casually. She mistook him for a hotel employee."

"She will testify at this trial."

Fitts pressed on:

"On June 4, 1968, most people in California went to the polls to cast their ballot in the primaries. Sirhan Sirhan went to the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club."

"The defendant spent hours on the pistol range, engaged in rapid fire practice at which he excelled."

"Sirhan Sirhan told a witness... he was going to use his small side arm for hunting."

"He remarked, 'It could kill a dog.'"

Turning to the events of the shooting itself, Fitts said that following his victory speech in the Embassy room of the Ambassador, Kennedy and his party went into a pantry where Sirhan lay in wait.

"The defendant, Sirhan Sirhan, stood on a tray rack in a recess area immediately alongside the ice machine."

"Sirhan stepped quickly from the rack..."

"The Senator stood all unaware."

"Sirhan reached into the waistband of his trousers."

"He walked to the side of Karl Eucker (hotel maitre de standing with Kennedy)..."

"He extended his right arm across in front of Eucker. His left hand was in the vicinity of the Senator's head... and at point blank range he fired eight shots."

"It is probably the first shot that resulted in the Senator's death some 25 hours later."

"The muzzle range (of this

shot) was one inch," Fitts said. "Kennedy's right hand went to his right ear."

The force of the shots knocked Kennedy to the ground. "He fell backward and came to rest diagonally to the lee machine."

Fitts said that Bill Baggett, bodyguard to Kennedy, wrestled the gun away from Sirhan, but the wiry Jordanian regained it.

"... The scene was complete pandemonium."

"Roosevelt Grier (former football star and member of the Kennedy team) was accompanying Mrs. Ethel Kennedy... They were still outside the kitchen."

"Grier is a large man..."

"He pushed his way through the crowd... and wrestled the gun from the defendant."

"He gave it to F. Lee Johnson (former Olympic decathlete star) and another Kennedy partisan for safekeeping..."

Fitts continued, "Johnson asked, 'Why did you do it?'"

"Sirhan answered, 'I will explain.'"

Sirhan listened with great concentration as Fitts spoke, but at this statement he smiled and shook his head vigorously.

Moving quickly toward his summation, Fitts told of Sirhan's arrest and his refusal to divulge his name to police.

He said that when Travis White, one of the police officers who arrested Sirhan, asked him about the crime, the youthful Jordanian replied:

"You think I am crazy... so you can use it in evidence against me..."

Sirhan carried no documents when arrested, Fitts said. He did have a car key and \$150.10 in cash, \$100 of it in \$100 bills.

The key led to tracing the defendant's car to the place where it was parked on New Hampshire Street, three blocks from the Ambassador.

The car, a pink and white DeSoto, contained Sirhan's wallet and a receipt for the ammunition bearing his fingerprints.

Sirhan, said Fitts, was not

identified until his brother, Muhsin, went to the Pasadena Police Station to identify him.

Kennedy, Fitts told the jury, was taken to Central Receiving Hospital and transferred to Good Samaritan Hospital where a team of physicians, led by Dr. Henry Cuneo, performed brain surgery.

A bullet was recovered which ballistics tests will show was fired from Sirhan's gun, Fitts alleged.

"At roughly 1:45 a.m., June 6, 1963, the Senator expired," said Fitts. "He was pronounced dead by Dr. Cuneo."

There were, said Fitts, "five bullet holes in the coat the Senator was wearing—three entry holes and two exit."

"Tests showed that the muzzle range for all the shots fired ranged from one to six inches."

Concluded Fitts:

"The evidence in this case will show that the defendant Sirhan Sirhan alone was responsible for this tragic incident..."

"He acted alone and not in concert with others..."

The defense scored one point during the prosecution opening.

Fitts tried to make reference to diaries Sirhan kept which were seized in a search of his Pasadena home the morning of the shooting. The defense, which claims they were seized illegally, objected, and Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding over the trial, sustained their objection.

Fitts then quickly concluded.

Earlier in the day, Judge Walker denied a defense plea for a mistrial in the case.

Cooper denied his mistrial demand on the basis of a story in the Los Angeles Times Wednesday which stated that Sirhan contemplated changing his plea from innocent to guilty.

Defense counsel maintained the story was prejudicial to their client because the jury had not yet been locked up and had access to the Times' story, which they said was completely in error.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan's Motion for Mistrial Denied as Prosecution Opens

Jury Hears Statement That Defendant Attended Party
for Sen. Kennedy at Ambassador Two Days Before Slaying

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan attended a preselection party for Sen. Robert F. Kennedy at the Ambassador two days before the senator was shot to death there, it was disclosed in the prosecution's opening statement Thursday.

The disclosure came shortly after Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker denied a motion for mistrial by Sirhan's defense attorneys.

The motion was based on grounds that a story in The Times Wednesday prejudiced Sirhan's right to a fair trial by saying the 24-year-old defendant probably would change his plea from innocent to guilty of first-degree murder.

Jurors Interviewed

Judge Walker, after interviewing jurors privately in chambers, denied the motion. Though several jurors admitted hearing of the story, Judge Walker said, all agreed they could disregard it and decide the case solely on the basis of evidence produced in court.

Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Flitts, in the opening statement of the prosecutions' case, told jurors of Sirhan's activities, including target practice, for four months before the slaying on June 5.

The previously undisclosed highlight concerned a preselection party for the New York senator last June 2 in the Ambassador's Palm Court—a few yards away from the site of the fatal encounter in a pantry corridor.

Sen. Kennedy, destined to be the victor in the June 4 Democratic primary, addressed several hundred boosters at the party. Among the crowd, said Flitts, was the defendant, recognized by an acquaintance who had worked next door to Sirhan in Pasadena.

'It Could Kill a Dog'

Two days later, Flitts said, Sirhan was target practicing at the San Gabriel Valley Gun Club in Duarte with an eight-shot .22-caliber revolver. Asked by an observer what he planned to do with a pistol of such small size, Sirhan was quoted as answering:

"It could kill a dog."

Flitts was painstaking in his reconstruction of the slaying of Sen. Kennedy, the wounding of five others and the "complete pandemonium" that followed.

After Sirhan had been taken into custody, he said, the then Assembly Speaker Jess Unruh asked the

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/14/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-1-663

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 14 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

retracted
2-14-69

Jordanian: "Why did you do it?"

"I did it for my country," Sirhan was quoted as saying.

"Why him?" said Unruh. "He was trying to help."

"It's too late. It's too late," the defendant was said to have answered.

Sirhan, 21, was born in Palestinian Jerusalem, in a sector later held by Jordan and now held by Israel. He is said to be violently anti-Zionist and pro-Arab, and was described as embittered by Sen. Kennedy's campaign statements on U.S. aid to Israel after the 1967 Israeli-Arab war.

Fitts said Sirhan also asked police as he was being taken away, "You think I'm crazy, so you can use it in evidence against me?"

Fitts' smoothly delivered, hour-long statement was interrupted at one point by a defense objection when Fitts referred to six notebooks taken from Sirhan's Pasadena home.

These notebooks—from which Mayor Sam Yorty quoted Sirhan as having written that "Kennedy must be assassinated before June 5"—are the subject of a defense motion to suppress, on grounds they were illegally seized.

Judge Walker sustained the objection, and Fitts promptly concluded his statement by telling the jurors that evidence would show that Sirhan "alone was responsible for the tragedy at the Ambassador Hotel."

Facial Expressions

Earlier, during argument over the mistrial motion, Sirhan displayed a wide variety of facial expressions — from broad smiles of amusement to a hand at his forehead in apparent surprise—as defense attorney Grant B. Cooper detailed the content of The Times story.

It was known, however, that Sirhan had read the story previously.

Cooper asked the mistrial ruling "on grounds that publicity emanating from the Los Angeles Times, followed by resumes on every television and radio station," had publicized the story "to the saturation point before the sequestering of the jury" Wednesday night.

Cooper offered into evidence—not to be shown to the jury — copies of Wednesday's home delivered editions of The Times and transcripts of broadcasts Wednesday on most metropolitan radio and television stations.

The Times' front page story said Sirhan "probably" would switch from a plea of innocent to a plea of guilty of first-degree murder, based on his defense counsel's understanding or firm belief that life imprisonment would be the most drastic penalty he would face.

The story also said that the only likely obstacle to such a change of plea would be Sirhan's refusal to agree to the change.

After consultation later Wednesday between Sirhan and his defense team, it was not known whether he had refused or approved such a change.

Cooper said of the story Thursday in court:

"For obvious reasons, and I'm not pointing an accusing finger at anyone, I can only say that this did not emanate from the defense."

He said news of the defense plan to agree to a guilty plea, with the understanding that a life sentence would ensue, would deny Sirhan the right to be later found guilty of any lesser degree of murder, such as second-degree murder or manslaughter.

Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton answered Cooper's motion by saying there was "no showing at this time that jurors have read the article or heard of it on radio or television."

Compton said The Times' article was "simply a surmise on the part of a reporter" and that it was "beyond my comprehension that anyone could be so influenced by such an article."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Offered New Defense Team

Reports that Sirhan B. Sirhan, on trial for the assassination of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, might change his plea to guilty brought an offer from the Action Committee on Arab-American Relations to hire a new team of defense lawyers in Sirhan's behalf. Dr. N. T. Nebel, chairman of the committee, said the present defense lawyers have "failed to understand that the Sirhan case is a historic political event and not an ordinary legal problem."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-2 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/13/69
Edition: Home
Author:
Editor: Nick B. Willaim
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED <i>ac</i>
SERIALIZED <i>L</i>	FILED <i>h</i>
1 FEB 13 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

56-156-21-662

cc to Bureau
2-13-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Trial Arguments Open Today

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Legal counsel today set the stage for the life-or-death trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Opening arguments by both sides will be heard by a jury of eight men and four women in the court of Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker.

Court was not in session yesterday because of the Lincoln's Birthday holiday, and Sirhan's lawyers used the respite for a conference with their client and his family. They spent about 1½ hours in Sirhan's cell, but declined to discuss the meeting.

Present at the conference with Sirhan were his three lawyers, Grant B. Cooper, Russell E. Parsons, and Emile Zola Berman; Abdeen Sabara, Arab attorney from Detroit, who is consultant to the defense; Robert Kaiser, Sirhan's biographer and a defense investigator, and two of the defendant's brothers — Munir and Adel Sirhan. The brothers arrived late and were admitted to the jail only after a long delay.

The admitted slayer's mother, Mrs. Mary Sirhan, who has been in the courtroom nearly each day of the trial, remained at her Pasadena home. The brothers explained that she was "very tired and had to rest."

Parsons said the conference was called to "discuss all aspects of the case." He said it was the second such meeting in two days. The first, Tuesday, lasted two hours, he said.

Chief Dep. Dist. Att. Lynn D. Compton will open for the prosecution and Berman is scheduled to follow him. The New York defense attorney said yesterday he expected his speech to last 35 minutes. Berman said he was not sure any witnesses would be heard today.

Prosecutors made it clear they were ready to proceed with their case and expect no more delays in the trial. Asked if there was a possibility that Sirhan might change his plea to guilty and throw himself on the mercy of the court, Dist. Att. Evelle J. Younger replied through a spokesman, "We have made no deals."

Jurors and alternate jurors in the case reported last night to the Biltmore Hotel's sixth floor where they will be locked up for the duration of the trial. They will be brought to the Hall of Justice each day by Sheriff's bus and remain under constant guard until they return their verdict.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/13/69
Edition: Late News
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kinsalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-6611

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FEB 13 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

*cc to Bureau
2-13-69*

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Trial Focus Back To Grim Facts

By JOHN DOUGLAS
Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Murder is the name of the crime—first-degree murder.

Robert F. Kennedy, junior senator from New York and presidential aspirant, was the victim.

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, 24, stands accused of this murder, and, if convicted, could lose his own life in San Quentin Prison's gas chamber.

These grim facts—the reasons for the Sirhan murder trial—have been obscured in the past few weeks as defense and prosecution lawyers have stepped through the delicate minuet of jury selection and preliminary motions.

They will be back in perspective tomorrow when Chief Deputy District Attorney Lynn D. Compton opens the case for the People of the State of California.

Compton will detail the facts of the crime, and announce how he and his associates, Deputy District Attorneys David N. Fitts and John Howard, intend to establish them.

Near the jury box as Compton speaks will be a scale model of the ground floor of the Ambassador Hotel. The burly chief prosecutor will refer to it again and again as he traces the slain senator's movements early the morning of June 5, 1968.

He will trace Kennedy to a spot near an ice machine in the Embassy Room kitchen. There, he will say, Sirhan, with a .22 calibre revolver in his hand and malice in his heart gunned down the senator.

Sirhan admits the slaying, and denies the malice.

While there is little argument about the basic facts of Kennedy's murder, Compton says "there are things people don't know." The chief prosecutor will reveal these in his opening speech.

Compton's remarks will be to the jury and its alternates. But they will ring loudest in the ears of the man whose fate they are designed to seal—Sirhan.

Seated at the table with the diminutive Jordanian will be the one of his attorneys who has yet to say 10 words in the trial—Emile Zola Berman.

Soon after Compton finishes, Berman will break his silence.

He has been selected to make the opening speech for the defense. Berman, and his co-counsel Grant B. Cooper and Russell E. Parsons, had two options as to the opening. They could immediately follow Compton, or defer until the conclusion of presentation of the state's evidence.

The defense strategy is to move as rapidly as possible to take the edge off Compton's presentation—which it admits will be very damaging.

Compton is going for the jugular. Sirhan admits slaying Kennedy, and his lawyers concede he cannot escape punishment. But they want that penalty to be paid in prison, not in the death house. The prosecution wants the jury to find the youthful Jordanian immigrant guilty of first degree murder, and then, in the subsequent penalty trial, to condemn him.

Berman will listen carefully to Compton, checking the prosecutor's statements against the manuscript of his own opening, seeking where to counterpunch.

Listening, too, but not at the defense table, will be another lawyer—Abdeen Jabara of Detroit, an Arab, and mystery man of the Sirhan team.

Jabara is a source of friction in the Sirhan defense battery. To Parsons, he is a valued consultant. To Berman and Cooper he is often a thorn in the side.

He appeared almost unnoticed shortly after the trial began last month. At first he spoke to no one and declined even to give his name to newsmen.

After a few days he was assigned a seat next to the defendant's mother—Mrs. Mary Sirhan. He chatted with her in her native Arabic, and appeared to comfort her when trial developments disturbed her.

Pressed for an explanation, Defense Chief Investigator Michael McCowan identified Jabara as a lawyer who was helping the defense, at his own expense, in the translation of certain Arabic documents. McCowan mentioned entries in Arabic in the diaries Sirhan kept.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-3 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/12/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title:

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-660

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FEB 13 1969	
FBI — LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
2-13-69

Then Jabara left Los Angeles and some of the defense lawyers publicly expressed their relief.

Yesterday he returned, and in response to questions, Parsons identified him as a "consultant to the defense."

He said he had selected Jabara at the recommendation of an Arab lawyer practicing in this city, whom he declined to identify.

Parsons said Jabara was advising on aspects of the Arab-Israeli conflict which affect the defense. Jabara also prescribed a reading list of pro-Arab literature for defense counsel to read.

"He is most valuable to me," Parsons said.

But from other members of the defense battery came grumbling that the Arab attorney was attempting to turn the Sirhan murder trial into a forum for arguing the Arab-Israeli embroglio.

"I won't do it," said one.

Jabara himself denied this. He said he was interested in the Arab-Israeli question only as it was "relevant" to Sirhan's defense.

But he added that he expected the Sirhan trial "may bring better American understanding of Arab-Israeli problems."

Newsmen learned this of his background:

He is a member of a small firm of young lawyers in Detroit. His firm has a civil rights-type practice and has frequently represented hippies and tenants' councils.

He is active in Arab affairs in Detroit and Wayne County, Mich., and has several times spoken on behalf of the Arab cause at Wayne State University.

He says he was invited there jointly by the Young Socialist League and the Arab Students Association.

Jabara said he has represented Arab groups, but does not have as a client any Arab nation, or Arab nationalistic organization.

The defense views the Kennedy murder, in part, as a political assassination. As it seeks to prove that Sirhan acted under "diminished capacity"—that his killing of Sen. Kennedy was without the element of malice—Parsons believes that it may be necessary to show that obsession with the Arab-Israeli struggle, and Kennedy's avowed espousal of the Israeli cause preyed on Sirhan's mind. Witnesses will be produced to testify to this.

But not, perhaps, for a month. First, the prosecutors will have their innings and, through the use of 60 to 80 witnesses they will seek to convince the jury that the killing of Kennedy was "willful, deliberate, premeditated murder."

(These witnesses will be policemen, technicians, perhaps newsmen and above all friends of Sen. Kennedy who saw the slaying.)

Nucleus of the defense case will be the Sirhan family, compatriots of the young Arab, and a team of forensic psychiatrists headed by UCLA's Dr. Bernard Diamond.

They forecasts Deputy Dist. Atty. Pitts:

"The true arena of this conflict will become the mind of Sirhan Sirhan."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Change of Plea Seen Likely

Admission of Guilt May Shorten Trial and Bring Life Sentence

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan probably will plead guilty to first-degree murder in the slaying of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, it was learned Tuesday.

The switch from an earlier plea of innocence could come when the trial reconvenes Thursday morning, and would result from either an understanding or a firm belief that a life term would be the maximum penalty.

Such a change of plea would make it unnecessary to try Sirhan on the question of guilt or innocence and would reduce the trial—once expected to consume two or three months—to a penalty hearing, possibly only a few days' duration.

The only likely obstacle would be Sirhan's own refusal to change his plea.

Defense attorneys huddled Tuesday afternoon with Sirhan, his mother, Mary, and brother, Munir, to discuss the possible advantages of a guilty plea.

Sirhan has been described as fearful that a change of plea could rob him of the chance to publicly air his reasons for the assassination.

Reason for Switch Told

The willingness of the three defense lawyers to change the plea is said to be based on their conviction that, while psychiatric evidence would not warrant a death penalty, they could not hope for a jury verdict of less than first-degree murder.

They are confident that the psychiatric evidence by both sides would block any effort to secure a death penalty. Instead, they feel, it tends to support the defense contention that Sirhan's diminished mental or emotional capacity mitigated the degree of premeditation that must be proved to warrant a death penalty.

They are so confident that they consented about two weeks ago to allow the prosecution's psychiatric consultant, Dr. Seymour Pollack, to examine Sirhan.

It was believed that the prosecution, after considering Pollack's findings, substantially agreed with the defense assessment.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/12/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-N-639

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
7 FEB 12 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

ccto Bureau
2-12-69

It was also believed that Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker is inclined to accept the change of plea, with the understanding that the matter would proceed immediately to some form of penalty trial before a jury.

Under California law, whether a person pleads guilty to first-degree murder or is convicted of it, the only two possible sentences are death or life imprisonment.

Younger Makes First Visit

Speculation on a possible guilty plea has been rife since the plea of innocence was first entered last year. Matters came to a head Monday morning, however, when Dist. Atty. Evelle J. Younger made his first visit to the trial.

After a half-hour session between prosecution and defense counsel in Judge Walker's chambers, both sides were uncommunicative about the reason for the meeting.

It was learned, however, that a possible change of plea was discussed.

Then Younger himself, in a television interview Monday night, gave added impetus to the speculation when he commented cryptically that the Sirhan trial could take "three months or three days."

A change of plea is one of the few things that could reduce the trial so drastically after forecasts of months of testimony and nearly six weeks already consumed with preliminary motions and selection of 12 regular and six alternate jurors.

Younger and Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton enlivened the speculation still further Tuesday when they said the prosecution would not be willing to accept a guilty plea to either manslaughter or second-degree murder. They did specify that they would have to consider a plea of guilty to first-degree murder.

The defense has indicated for some time, it was learned, that it might consider a change of plea.

Younger's Stand

Younger is believed to have taken the position, however, that before accepting a plea of guilty he should have the full benefit of the results of the police investigation and of Dr. Pollack's evaluation of Sirhan.

Soon after Dr. Pollack first interviewed the defendant, Younger informed persons close to the Kennedy family that the acceptance of a change in plea was being discussed, and the information was received noncommittally.

Younger himself revealed Tuesday that he had offered the Nixon Administration an opportunity "to make any comments concerning the disposition of the case" in so far as it may have international implications.

Get No Comment

"I made it convenient," he said, "for appropriate officials in government to express an opinion to me—they declined and made no comment or recommendation."

The regular jury was sworn in two weeks ago, and six alternates were sworn in Tuesday morning, after questioning that was remarkably cursory in contrast to earlier, methodical testing by both sides of each prospective juror's religious, political and social views.

It was noteworthy, also, that the prosecution made no mention this week to prospective jurors of the possibility they might be asked to vote a death penalty.

The last alternate accepted before the alternate panel was sworn, Miss Gloria J. Halfey, was questioned briefly in chambers and not at all in open court. She was the only juror, among more than 100 prospects, to be accepted in such a manner.

Adds Speculation

This remarkably rapid and uncritical acceptance further deepened speculation that both defense and prosecution were eager to dispense finally with the time-consuming jury selection process and proceed.

Judge Walker, meanwhile, after swearing in the alternate panel, released all 18 jurors until 8 p.m. today, when they are to report to the Biltmore to be sequestered for however long the Sirhan trial will now last.

Dep. Dist. Atty. David N. Pitts accepted Miss Haffey on behalf of the prosecution and announced that the prosecution would accept the alternate panel.

Defense attorney Grant B. Cooper, asked whether the defense wanted to exercise another peremptory challenge, said "Your Honor, I'm happy to announce we have a jury."

In addition to Miss Haffey, the alternate panel included George Stitzel, a Los Angeles Times pressroom foreman; Miss Ruth A. Stillman, an insurance adjuster for Firemen's Insurance; John H. Johnson, a computer designer for Scientific Data Systems; Clarence Yaw, a purchaser for Standard Oil of California, and Mrs. Eleanor B. Landgreen, a Temple City housewife, mother of three sons.

Johnson is the only Negro among the alternates and the 12 regular jurors sworn in earlier.

Mrs. Landgreen is the only sworn juror to come close to opposing capital punishment. She admitted under questioning that she could impose the

death penalty "only in the most extreme cases."

The defendant's mother, Mary, 55, told reporters afterward, "They seem like nice people. I must pray for them and may God give them the light."

Defense attorney Emile Zola Berman said of his planned opening statement for the defense: "We're going to work in all the problems that make up Sirhan Sirhan and explain how he ticks of doesn't tick."

Noting that the trial would be recessed for Lincoln's birthday, Judge Walker adjourned proceedings until 9:30 a.m. Thursday and told the jurors "enjoy the holiday and take care of yourselves."

The judge told the jurors that facilities for confession and Mass would be provided for Catholic jurors and that an Episcopal priest will provide liturgical services for Protestants.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Full Sirhan Jury Expected by Today

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Only the selection of one alternate juror delays the start of presentation of the prosecution case in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial.

Grant B. Cooper, chief defense counsel for the 24-year-old admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, predicted at the close of yesterday's court session that this additional alternate would be chosen by today.

The Sirhan jury will have six alternates and Cooper said that the five so far seated in the jury box are probably acceptable to both sides.

According to Cooper, if selection of the alternates is completed by noon today, Chief Deputy District Attorney Lynn D. Compton, who heads the prosecution, can make his opening statement Thursday. Wednesday is a holiday—Lincoln's birthday.

Prosecution and defense attorneys conferred with Judge Herbert V. Walker presiding over the trial, yesterday on some major carpentry that will be needed in the armor-plated, eighth-floor, Hall of Justice courtroom where Sirhan is being tried before the prosecution can open its case.

The Los Angeles Police Department's special Sirhan task force has constructed two scale models—one of the ground floor of the Ambassador Hotel, the other of the kitchen off the hotel's Embassy Room where Kennedy was shot.

The larger mockup will give the jury a view of the scene of the crime. It will be used instead of letting the jurors visit the hotel. Security considerations for Sirhan rule out a visit to the scene.

The second model—that of the kitchen—will probably be introduced in evidence, Cooper said.

Both models are very large and will require considerable rearrangement of the small courtroom.

Dist. Atty. Evelle J. Younger personally took part in yesterday's conference, his first visit to the courtroom since the Sirhan trial began. Compton was absent.

Cooper said other matters besides the models were discussed, but neither he, nor Younger, would discuss the conference.

A total of 23 prospective alternate jurors were examined yesterday. Two alternates, tentatively seated, were removed by prosecution and defense challenge. Two replacements were selected for them.

Most of the jurors excused yesterday were let go after they testified it would be an economic or family hardship for them to serve during the trial, which may take as long as three months.

Three prospective alternates were challenged by Dep. Dist. Atty. John Howard after they said they had strong convictions against the death penalty. In two cases, Cooper opposed the prosecution challenge. The third, that of Mrs. Chester Hart, was not contested.

All five alternates tentatively seated in the jury box could be removed by defense and prosecution peremptory challenge—those for which the lawyers need give no reason. However, Cooper believes that the five now seated will be mutually satisfactory.

They are:

Clarence Yaw, Los Angeles businessman.

Mrs. Eleanor Landgreen, wife of an insurance company pension administrator.

Miss Ruth Stillman, Los Angeles fire insurance adjuster.

John H. Johnson, a computer systems designer.

Mrs. Bertha Fae Sira, wife of an electrician.

Unless challenged, these five, and one other, will join the trial jury of eight men and four women in hearing the case against the Jordanian immigrant. Should a regular juror

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-3 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/11/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-658

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 11 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

Ceto Bureau
2-12-69

fall ill, or for some other reason be disqualified, one of the alternates, chosen by lot, will take his place.

The alternates, as well as the jurors, will be locked up in the Biltmore Hotel when not in the courtroom. They will be housed in private rooms in a wing of the hotel's sixth floor. They will take their meals in a reserved section of the Biltmore's main dining room.

Husbands and wives of jurors and alternates will be permitted to visit them overnight on weekends.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Younger Pays Surprise Visit to Sirhan Trial

Confers With Attorneys for Both Sides,
Stirs Speculation of New Development

BY DAVE SMITH

Times Staff Writer

Dist. Atty. Evelle J. Younger paid his first visit to the murder trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan Monday, causing speculation that a new development may be forthcoming in the case against the admitted killer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Younger met with prosecution and defense counsel in the chambers of Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker.

Both sides said later they had discussed scale models of parts of the Ambassador, where Sen. Kennedy was shot last June 5. They declined to comment further.

Also on Monday, the defense and prosecution

ground through examination of 22 prospective alternate jurors, winding up at the same place they have occupied for a week: five alternates tentatively seated, one seat to be filled, with nine peremptory challenges still available to each side.

Two men were excused on legal grounds when they said they were opposed to the death penalty and could not vote a death verdict under any circumstances. They were the first men among more than 100 prospective jurors to voice this position. Five women also have expressed opposition to capital punishment and also have been excused on legal grounds.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-24, Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/11/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-1067

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 11 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
2-11-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Mystery at Sirhan Trial

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

New mystery surrounded the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial today as District Attorney Evelle J. Younger spent more than half an hour in a secret conference with lawyers for both sides in the chambers of Superior Court Judge Herbert V. Walker.

Neither Younger nor defense attorney Grant B. Cooper would discuss the conference.

The district attorney parried newsmen's questions by saying: "Afraid I can't tell you anything, sorry."

Cooper said: "I have nothing to say."

Except to seek modification of a court order limiting publicity in the case of the admitted slayer of Senator Robert F. Kennedy, Younger has taken little part in the Sirhan trial.

His chief deputy, Lynn D. Compton, has led the prosecution. Compton was not present for the conference and has not been in court for the past three trial days.

Since the trial began Jan. 7, he has frequently been absent, attending to other business.

After getting off to a delayed start, the Sirhan trial this morning again bogged down in the selection of alternate jurors.

Night prospective alternates were excused because they considered the court service during the lengthy trial would be a hardship to them.

Finally, Mrs. Eleanor Landgreen was tentatively selected as an alternate.

Mrs. Landgreen, mother of three, and downtown Los Angeles resident, is the wife of an insurance company pension administrator.

She testified she is not absolutely opposed to the death penalty, but would only vote to impose it in "most extreme cases."

Again today Sirhan took little interest in the court proceedings around him.

Entering court, his eyes sought out his family. Noting them, he gave his head a wave and then proceeded to ignore them and the rest of the spectators. Michael D. Egan, chief investigator for the defense, gave the 24-year-old Jordanian immigrant a copy of a political leaflet which Kennedy's admitted slayer spent a great deal of time studying.

The leaflet was captioned: "Sirhan knew the truth. We Americans do not know."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-2 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/10/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
1 FEB 11 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

see to Bureau
2-11-69

56-156-4656

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Jury Search Drags On

BY JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Search for six alternate jurors to hear the case of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, resumes today.

Defense and prosecution attorneys spent three days on the tedious task last week and ended Friday no nearer completion of the jury than they were when they began.

A number of factors complicate the search for the alternates.

Perhaps the most important one is that for the first time since Sirhan's trial began Jan. 7 the court of Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker has been faced with outright admitted hostility and prejudice toward the defendant, on the part of the prospective alternate jurors.

While none of the 39 panelists examined in the search for the basic trial jury of eight men and four women admitted he could not give the 34-year-old Jordanian immigrant a fair trial, in one day last week three prospective alternates were excused because they testified publicly that they could not and would not give Sirhan a fair

At week's end a total of five prospects had been excused because of self-admitted bias toward Sirhan.

This new factor is of major concern to the defense counsel team headed by Grant B. Cooper. It is something that Emile Zola Berman, New York City attorney who has joined the defense staff, has feared for a long time.

One of its results is that the defense is being, if anything, more cautious in the selection of alternates than it was in choosing the jury itself.

Cooper, discussing the state of mind of the jurors toward the mental capacity of his client, tends to repeat his questions again and again — until he is absolutely sure he is understood and he understands the juror.

While this repetition is at first hard to follow, its purpose becomes clear last week in the questioning of Los Angeles postman Robert W. Perry.

Perry had gone through basic questioning by Judge Walker in which he had said that he believed in the "American concept of justice that says every defendant is presumed innocent until proven otherwise."

In a secret in-chambers hearing before the judge, he had been questioned about his political views and his pre-conceptions, if any, about the case, and had passed.

But finally, near the end of his questioning Cooper asked Perry if he, considering everything he knew and had heard in the courtroom, felt prejudiced against Sirhan.

Perry answered: "Very possibly."

That was the end of his tenure as a prospective alternate juror.

Another prospect, in the in-chambers secret hearing, told Judge Walker that, as far as she was concerned, it would be up to the defense to prove to her that Sirhan should not be convicted of first degree murder and sent to the gas chamber.

The prosecution, too, has had its problems.

Two prospective alternates this week testified that they could not in conscience vote the death penalty in any case of murder, no matter what the circumstances. They, too, were excused.

The upshot of these difficulties is that selection of alternate jurors is bogged down, and consequently so is the start of presentation of evidence against Sirhan.

This deadlock will be broken sometime this week, the attorneys believe.

But neither side is in a hurry.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-2 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/10/69
Edition: Late News
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kinsalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 11 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

56-156-N-655

cc Bureau
2-11-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Jurors Ready to Undertake A Life of 'Splendid Isolation'

By John Douglas

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sometime this week, 16 men "good and true" will begin an experiment in communal living which may last a quarter of a year and end with their deciding whether a young man will live or die.

And some of these 16 "good men and true" are women.

They are the jurors and alternate jurors in the Sirhan-Bachara Sirhan murder trial. The designation "good men and true" applies equally in the lingo of the law to male and female jurors.

The 16 will live in splendid isolation in downtown Los Angeles' Biltmore Hotel.

Their material needs will be ministered to by the bailiffs of the Superior Court of the State of California in and for the County of Los Angeles.

And their spiritual needs will not be neglected.

Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker, a lay layman of the Episcopal Church, has seen to that.

At his request, His Excellency the Right Rev. Francis Edgar Blom, Bishop of the Los Angeles Episcopal Diocese, has agreed to appoint a chaplain to the jury. The selection of this priest, who will be an Anglican ministering to the jurors no matter what their faith, will be announced this week.

This weekend the jurors are at home, and the alternates the trial last that long—on holidays—they will be taken on trips. Disneyland is one destination . . . Knotts Berry Farm another.

Once they are, they will be sequestered (locked up) in the Biltmore.

Court attaches forecast that this sequestering may come Thursday, following the Lincoln's Birthday holiday on which there will be no Sirhan trial.

For the jurors, the Biltmore experience will in many ways be like living in a prep-school dormitory. But the prefects will carry guns and wear uniforms of Los Angeles deputy sheriffs.

There will be half a dozen stationed on the Biltmore's sixth floor, where the county has taken over a full wing of 21 rooms for the jury.

Each juror will have his own room for which the county will pay \$9 a day. The deputy sheriffs will be housed in rooms costing \$3 daily.

When the jurors want privacy they can stay in their own rooms. If they seek the society of their colleagues, they will be able to do so in two recre-

ation rooms. Television will be available—but censored by a deputy who will make sure that no television news of the trial is available to the jurors and alternates.

Jurors will also be able to read newspapers and magazines, but all reference to the Sirhan case will have been cut from these before the jurors see them.

Deputy Sheriff Willard Polhemus, Judge Walker's bailiff for the last nine years, will be "social director" for the jurors. He has done this job before.

If a juror wants a drink, he can have one, provided he doesn't want too many. But, he will have to pay for them himself. The County of Los Angeles does not buy liquor.

Weekends the jurors can be visited by their wives and husbands, if they have them. The visits can extend overnight, if the spouse is willing to pay the Biltmore \$3 for a bed.

Meals will be paid for by the county at the rate of \$8.50 a day. If a juror wants more food, or more expensive food, he has to pay for it himself.

When the trial is concluded, the jurors will know each other better than nearly any group in the world.

Among them will develop friendships and perhaps even love . . .

And perhaps hate.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-3 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/9/69
Edition: Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kenseit

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-H-654

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 - EB 11 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
2-11-69

of jurors, who will be confined day and night through the two or three months the trial lasts.

"Those jurors," he said, "they got a real nice deal. They get \$5 a day and the best of eats. I'd like to get a deal like that."

Jurors actually draw \$10 a day for jury duty, and they'll be allowed \$8.50 a day for "eats"—\$1.50 for breakfast, \$2.50 for lunch and \$4.50 for dinner. They'll be kept at the Biltmore and will be out of contact with their families and friends, except for weekend visits from a spouse, at his or her expense.

As the trial preliminaries drag on, prospective jurors are excused, questioned, challenged, seated, dismissed—it is a process

that could end in the next five minutes if both sides would accept the six alternate jurors — or could stretch over another week.

Neither defense nor prosecution attorneys are telling precisely what they're looking for in an ideal juror, so the courtroom waits.

In one row, a correspondent for an Arab-language news agency follows the wearying proceedings.

Immediately behind him, writing in Hebrew, sits Roni Eschel, correspondent for the newspaper Maariv of Tel Aviv.

And immediately behind Eschel, sits a tiny, gray-haired woman who from time to time writes down her own thoughts, in Arabic, in a small blue notebook. She is Mary Sirhan.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SIRHAN'S HOPE: AVOIDING DEATH

Defense attorneys in the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan murder trial expect the admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy to go to prison for the killing, but they hope to save him from San Quentin's gas chamber.

This startling admission came from Sirhan's chief defense counsel, Grant B. Cooper, yesterday as defense and prosecution continued their so far unsuccessful search for six alternates for the jury which will try the 24-year-old Jordanian immigrant.

Cooper told prospective juror Clarence Yaw that not only would the defense concede Sirhan shot Kennedy, but also it would not attempt to win an acquittal for him.

During a recess, the defense lawyer said that this "has been our plan all along, but we haven't said it publicly before.

"I thought it was time we did," he concluded.

Defense sources said Sirhan was aware of his lawyers' strategy and accepted it. However,

Cooper's courtroom announcement appeared to upset the defendant in the Kennedy assassination case.

Yaw was tentatively seated as an alternate juror yesterday, but despite this, the case moved no further toward final selection of the six alternates. They must be chosen to supplement the 12 trial jurors before the case may proceed.

Joe Morton, investigator for the State Insurance Department, who had been tentatively seated as an alternate Thursday, was removed by peremptory challenge late yesterday.

When court reconvenes Monday, questioning of another prospective alternate, Gordon Wilson, a plumber, will resume.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/8/69
Edition: 8 Star
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title:

Character:

or

Classification:

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 10 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

56-156-H-652

CC to Bureau
2-10-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Alternate Jurors Hunt Fails

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Lawyers in the Sirhan murder trial labored without success today to complete selection of six alternate jurors to hear the case of the man accused of the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Five prospective alternates were examined during this morning's session. None were chosen.

A Los Angeles woman, Mrs. Linda S. Katrenich, was excused because she said she was so opposed to the death penalty that she would never vote for it in a murder case, no matter what the facts.

Secret questioning in the chambers of Judge Herbert V. Walker, presiding at the trial, led to the disqualification of Mrs. Bernadine Holmquist.

She is a clerk for the Los Angeles Department of Water and Power and lives in La Crescenta.

It was learned that she told Judge Walker that her opinions of Sirhan were so strong that his defense lawyers would have to prove to her he should not be sent to the gas chamber for first-degree murder.

At day's end yesterday there were only five tentatively accepted alternates seated in the jury box. When the session opened there had been six.

Defense and prosecution each exercised one peremptory challenge during yesterday's session. Peremptory challenges are those for which lawyers need give no reason.

Marshall Wolfe, a Los Angeles Department of Water and Power technician, was challenged by the prosecution, and Mrs. Georgia Liddle, wife of an El Monte postman, was excused by the defense.

Each prospect is questioned in the judge's chambers about religion, political beliefs and the effect publicity in the case may have had on the prospective juror's judgment.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-3 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/7/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-2-1251

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 10 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
2-10-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Two prospective alternate jurors in the murder trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan were unseated by peremptory challenges by both the prosecution and defense. Mrs. Zena F. Lewis also was challenged on legal grounds by the prosecution after she told Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker that she could decide on the matter of innocence or guilt, but that under no circumstances could she ever vote a death penalty. She was only the third person in nearly 60 prospective jurors to oppose the death penalty. Five alternate jurors have been chosen, and one seat remains to be filled, but both sides have 11 peremptory challenges remaining, which could forestall the start of testimony until late next week.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-2 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/7/69
Edition: Home
Author:
Editor: Wick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-21-650

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 7 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cc to Bureau
2-7-69

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

'Not A Soul Smiles Back'

By AL STUMP

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Chief Dept. Dist. Atty. Lynn Compton's beefy shoulders opened space through the crowd-jammed corridors at the Sirhan Bishara Sirhan trial and the ex-UCLA football lineman said with satisfaction:

"Judge Walker's ruling was a foregone conclusion. Our investigation shows Sirhan was a fairly typical hard-up kid going to college before he dropped out—but no poverty case."

The prosecution leader referred to Judge Herbert V. Walker's droned-out denial of a defense motion to dismiss the grand jury indictment against Sirhan on ground the jury did not include members of minority groups. For 90 minutes yesterday, the team defending the man charged with slaying Sen. Robert Kennedy attempted to show that the jury which indicted Sirhan was unfairly constituted.

Then jaunty Chief Defense Counsel Grant B. Cooper went to work to establish the Sirhan family as poor and struggling.

When Walker made his decision, the freshly-barbered, neat-as-a-pin defendant sat stiffly for a moment, his face blank. For the first time during a morning of Sirhan half-smiles, grins and soulful glances toward his mother and the audience, he seemed dejected.

Until this setback, he had been alternately bored and pleased with what he heard. Three times he laughed, lightly. The little Jordanian's smiles come unexplainably—at times when the dullest of testimony is being heard. Often, he swivels his gaze around the audience,

as if seeking to share his mysterious mirth.

Not a soul smiles back. He's looking into the largest collection of dead pans in Los Angeles.

Pipe-smoking Compton said: "At one point today, I showed Mary Sirhan (mother of the accused) photos of her home on East Howard Street in Pasadena and placed them in evidence. For good reason. They show a reasonably nice home.

"The Sirhans are far from at the bottom of the economic barrel. They've lived decently."

Prior to Judge Walker's ruling, Grant Cooper snapped at a reporter. "I don't know how the prosecution measures poorness. Why, Sirhan and his mother together earned only \$2,305.64 last year!"

Cooper emphasized that 58-year-old Mary Sirhan's 10-year job at a nursery brought her only an average of \$1635 per year, while her "\$12,000 home" cost \$70 a month in payments.

"They have full utilities, a TV set, a car, don't they?" countered Compton, outside court.

"Now we can get on with this trial."

Although delicately built, Sirhan has good-size hands.

When he raised his right hand upon being sworn in yesterday, it was clenched into a fist.

He moved swiftly from his seat, when called to testify for the first time, and took the stand as if eager to enter some words of his own into this elocutionary contest. What the clenched hand meant was a mystery to viewers.

His voice was a bit hoarse, but firm. He was cool and seemed suddenly to gain in years as he crisply shot back answers concerning his jobs and income. Asked his age, he was precise—"I'll be 23 next month." (March 19).

At the trial's outset, the Jordanian was shy and clung to his attorney, Russell Parsons. Two weeks ago he shook off Parson's arm when the lawyer attempted to hook arms with him, then did it a second time. With that, Parsons gave up the effort. Further signs of independence have been seen, as with his departure from the courtroom during recesses.

No longer does he wait to be escorted out by plainclothes sheriff's deputies and a door opened for him. He lopes from his seat to a corner door, shoves it open himself and disappears with a flick of coattails.

Munir Sirhan, his 20-year-old brother, sat yesterday with one toe constantly tapping the floor. He left glumly, after Judge Walker's upholding of the indictment, with a muttered:

"We didn't do good today. Not good at all."

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-2 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/5/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: Al Stump
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

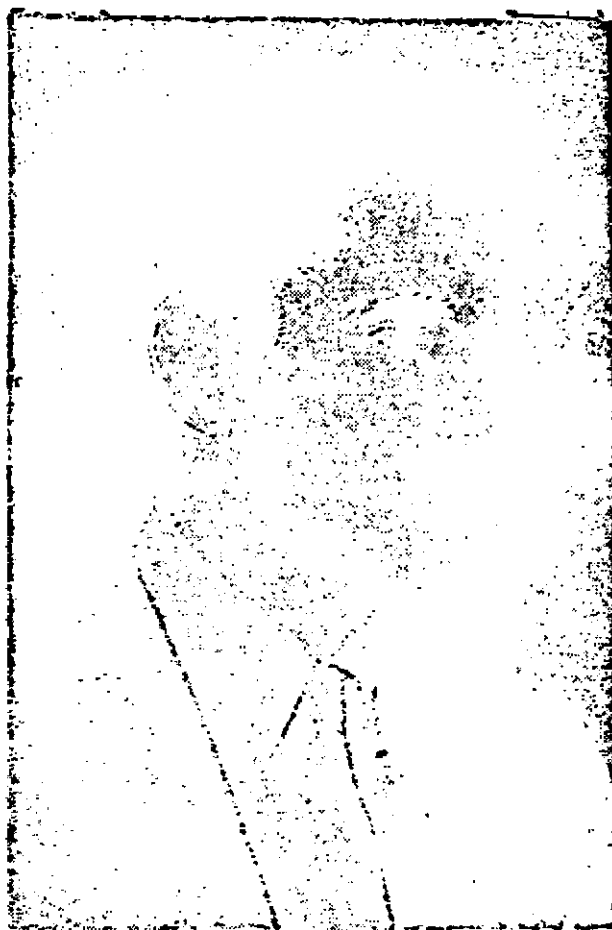
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-649

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 6 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

cetobuon
2-6-69



—Herald-Examiner Photo

SIRHAN ON HIS WAY TO TESTIFY
The suspect has shown signs of independence

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Jury Sworn In for Sirhan Trial

An eight-man, four-woman jury was sworn in to try Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, admitted slayer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, and attorneys for the defense and the prosecution then began selecting six alternate jurors. Although three were tentatively seated in the first day, each side has 12 peremptory challenges by which they may excuse jurors, and it was estimated that this last pretrial phase could last a week or more. The original 12 jurors were accepted Jan. 24, but swearing-in was delayed by argument on a defense motion to quash the indictment. Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker denied that motion Tuesday, thus clearing the way to the last legal roadblock before the prosecution begins presenting its case, probably late next week.

~~MOTION TO QUASH
INDICTMENT DENIED~~

cc to Bureau
2-6-69

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

I-2 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/6/69
Edition: Home
Author:
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FEB 6 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

56-156-34-646

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan's Trial Moves Into Crucial New Phase

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Last legal roadblocks cleared, the trial of Sirhan Bishara Sirhan on charges he murdered Sen. Robert F. Kennedy moved into a new and crucial phase today.

The eight men and four women who will decide the young Jordanian's fate are scheduled to be sworn in later in the day. Once sworn, they will be sequestered (locked up) in a downtown motel for the duration of the trial.

The way was cleared for swearing the jury yesterday when Judge Herbert V. Walker, who presides over the trial, rejected a defense motion to quash the indictment charging Sirhan with Kennedy's murder. Chief Defense Attorney Grant R. Cooper argued that the indictment should be dismissed because the 1963 Grand Jury was improperly chosen in that it included no poor persons and no one under 30.

Sirhan is 24 and his family is in a low income group, it was brought out in testimony yesterday.

Both Sirhan and his mother, Mrs. Mary Sirhan, 36, testified yesterday about the family finances.

When she had completed her testimony Mrs. Sirhan electrified the court by standing in the witness box and declaring:

"I thank God who gives me

strength . . . I thank the United States also that I never go hungry and that I have a roof over my head."

She explained to newsmen later that she made her little speech because:

"They were making me look like a poor woman.

"I have God's blessing. That is what I had to tell them.

"They say I make little money," Mrs. Sirhan continued in her thick Arabic accent. "That's not what is poor."

Asked if she was relieved that her testimony was over, she replied:

"Well, it didn't hurt me."

Will she testify again later in the trial?

"If I am needed."

Mrs. Sirhan is scheduled to pay another visit to her son in the isolated jail visiting room atop the Hall of Justice today when court adjourns. She last visited him last Thursday.

How is he bearing up under his long seclusion?

"He is the same . . . always the same," she answered, tears welling in her eyes.

Next order of business in the Sirhan trial is the selection of six alternate jurors. This cannot be done until the trial jury takes its oath. The alternates, too, once they are selected, will be sequestered.

Prosecution attorneys expect it will take from three days to a

week to choose the six alternates.

If they are correct, this means that opening arguments in the open-delayed trial could begin next week.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-2 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

*Not in Quash
Indictment Denied*

Date: 2/5/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

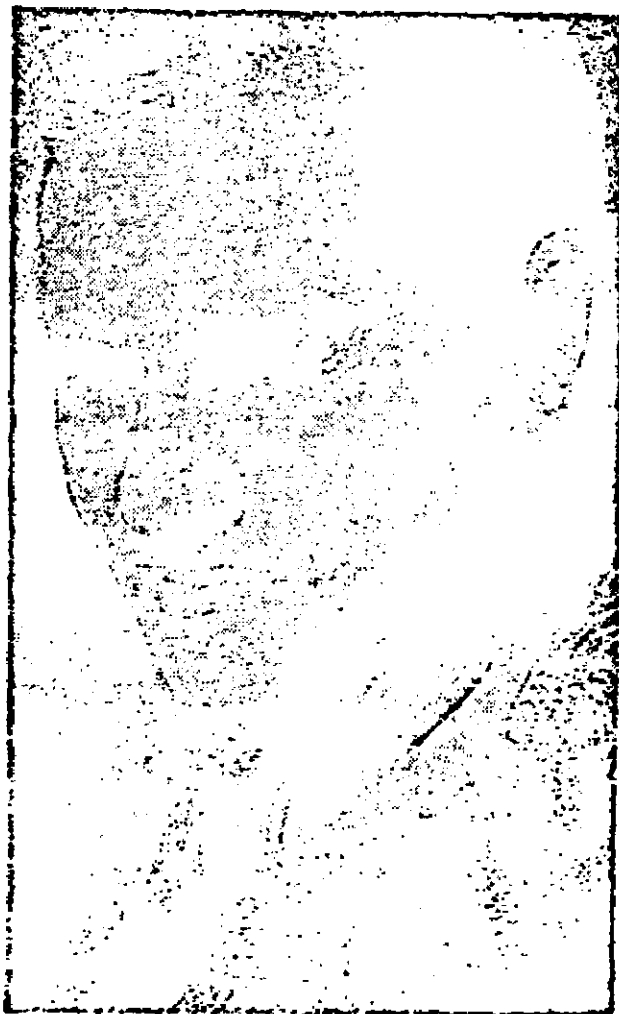
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 6 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

*cc to Bureau
2-6-69*

56-156-21-647



Herald-Examiner Photo by Michael Hartley

MARY SIRHAN LEAVES HALL OF JUSTICE

— She testified at her son's trial —

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Testimony Text

FAMILY'S FINANCES RECOUNTED AT TRIAL

Following is the testimony of Sirhan Lishara Sirhan and his mother, Mrs. Mary Sirhan, at yesterday's session of the trial in which Sirhan is accused of the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

The Sirhans testified as to their economic status as part of an unsuccessful defense move to overturn the indictment against the young Jordanian immigrant on grounds the 1963 Los Angeles County Grand Jury included no poor persons.

Chief defense counsel Grant B. Cooper directed the questioning as Sirhan preceded his mother to the stand.

Q—What is your name?

A—Sirhan Sirhan.

Q—Are you the defendant in this action?

A—Yes, sir, I am.

Q—Your mother furnished me with copies of your withholding tax statements for the years 1964, 1965, 1966, 1967 and 1968. Do you recognize them?

A—(Very loudly) Yes, I do.

Q—Did you work at Peak's Drive-In, Number Two ... in Pasadena in 1964?

A—Yes, sir, I did.

Q—Did you work for Clarence Cooping, who is also known as John H. Weidner's Organic Food Service ... in Pasadena in 1964?

A—Yes, sir, I did.

Cooper then read into the record the withholding statements which showed that Sirhan had earned net wages of \$108.34 working for Peak's, and \$130.69 working for Elite Motor for a total 1964 net income of \$1437.93.

Cooper then asked:

Q—In 1965, did you work for Ivan Millic, 233 N. Altadena, Pasadena?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—Did you work for Jack E. Davis, Pasadena?

A—Yes, sir, I did.

Cooper then said that his client's net income for 1965 was \$19.90.

Q—In 1966, did you work for the Yellow King Ranch in Chino?

A—Yes, sir, I did.

Q—And did you work for the Altalisch Construction Co.?

A—Yes.

Q—And that is in Corona, California?

A—Yes, sir.

Cooper said that Sirhan's net income for 1966 was \$2212.46.

Sirhan was injured when thrown from a horse while working on the Corona ranch and subsequently received a compensation settlement of \$2000.

Q—Did you work in 1967 for John H. Weidner ... that is John H. Weidner's Organic Foods, 158 N. Lake, Pasadena?

A—Yes, sir, I did.

Q—(By court reporter) How do you spell Weidner?

A—(By Sirhan) W-e-i-d-n-e-r.

A—(By Cooper) W-e-i-d-n-e-r.

Q—You did work for John H. Weidner — that is the Organic Food Place?

A—Yes, sir, I did.

Cooper said that Sirhan's net income in 1968 up through June 4, the day before he admittedly shot Kennedy, was \$752.35.

In cross-examination, Prosecutor Compton, after asking Sirhan his age, turned his attention to Sirhan's home life.

Q—During this time did you live with your mother?

A—For the most part.

Q—Were you attending school?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—What years were you in school?

A—1954, 1965, 1966 ... No, it was 1964 and 1965.

Q—That was Pasadena City College?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—Did you turn over the money from these parttime jobs to your mother?

A—Part of it, yes.

Q—Did you ever give her any money back?

A—Yes, sir, I did.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-10 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Sirhan Testifies

Date: 2/5/69

Edition: Night Final

Author:

Editor: Donald Goodenow

Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-646

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
1 FEB 6 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

*CE 6/6/69
2-6-69*

Mrs. Sirhan barely whispered when she took the oath following her son to the stand.

She sat erect in the chair, but she is only four feet 11 inches tall and was dwarfed by the walnut witness box. She was dressed in a black suit and wore a gold brocade blouse.

Cooper reviewed her tax returns from 1958 through the end of last year.

She testified she had worked for the Westminster Presbyterian Church Nursery School all that time.

Q—Are you working there now?

A—No.

Q—When did you last work?

A—Jan. 15.

During the noon recess, Mrs. Sirhan explained to newsmen she had left her job because of the trial which she attends nearly every day.

"My heart is here," she said. She said that the school had told her she could have her job back when the trial is over.

Obviously proud of her work, she opened her wallet and showed photographs of the classes at the school. As she rifled through the photo case, there were photographs of several of her children. There was none of Sirhan Sirhan.

Cooper asked Mrs. Sirhan about the family's life in Pasadena.

Q—Did you get paid every month?

A—Every two weeks.

Q—How much?

A—\$92.21 I took home.

Q—During all this time did Sirhan Sirhan live at home?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—Did he contribute money to the support of the home?

A—Not any regular amount.

Q—Did he buy his own clothes?

A—Yes, sir.

Q—Did he have an automobile?

A—Second hand.

Q—Did he pay to operate that automobile?

A—Very much.

Q—Did he give you money?

A—If I needed it and he had it . . . very little.

Mrs. Sirhan testified her youngest son, Munir, 21, also lived at home and paid no board and room.

Q—Did Munir give you money when you asked for it?

A—Yes, sir (pause) . . . very little.

Adel Sirhan, 30, also lived at home and paid no board, Mrs. Sirhan testified.

His income was the highest in the family and, according to tax records put in evidence by Cooper, had an average annual income of \$3892.70 for the last 10 years. Of Adel, Cooper asked:

Q—Did he help . . . did he give you money if you needed it?

A—If he had it.

Mrs. Sirhan testified Adel is a musician. He plays in an Arab night club in Pasadena.

Compton, in cross-examination, showed great interest in the home the Sirhan's are purchasing.

Q—Are you making payments on this house?

A—Yes.

Q—How much are the payments?

A—\$70 a month.

Q—And you pay your utilities — your lights, your water, your gas and your telephone?

A—Yes.

Q—And you have a television set?

A—A second-hand one.

Cooper, on re-direct examination, asked Mrs. Sirhan:

Q—Do you have an automobile?

A—No.

Q—How do you get to work?

A—I walk.

Q—Do you bake your own bread?

A—Yes.

Q—And you save in other ways, too, don't you?

A—Yes.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Testifies for First Time, Tells of Poverty

His Mother Also Takes
Stand, Expresses Thanks
to U.S. for Food, Home

BY DAVE SMITH
Times Staff Writer

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, on trial for the murder of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, eagerly took the witness stand for the first time Tuesday to testify that he was an impoverished youth in this country.

After his brief appearance, his mother, Mary, testifying with head bowed and voice subdued, captured the interest of courtroom spectators.

Just after she had testified to her own poverty and after she was excused from the witness stand, the 55-year old woman stood—she isn't quite 5 feet tall—and told the courtroom in a clear voice:

"I thank God that He gave me the strength, and I also thank the United States, that I never got hungry and I have a roof over my head."

'It Just Came Out'

Mrs. Sirhan told reporters later that her outburst was unplanned and that "it just came out. I was so glad to have a home to raise my children."

The testimony of mother and son was to support the defense contention that Sirhan was indicted by grand jurors who came from a much wealthier, older and better-educated class than he.

Chief defense attorney Grant B. Cooper sought to quash the indictment against the admitted slayer of Sen. Kennedy on grounds that the grand jury selection system is unconstitutional because it doesn't represent a broad cross section of the population.

Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker denied the motion on two grounds: 1, that it was irrelevant to the proceedings, and 2, on its merits.

The trial was adjourned until this morning, when the 12 accepted jurors are to be sworn in and when selection of six alternate jurors is to begin.

Opening statements in the trial proper are expected next Monday or Tuesday.

The short, slim defendant strode quickly to the stand about 11 a.m. and said "I do," when asked to tell "the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth, so help you God."

Confirms Net Earnings

Under Cooper's questioning, Sirhan was called upon merely to confirm that income tax withholding forms were indeed his and that his net earnings from 1964 through 1968 totaled only \$5,817.70 or an average of \$1,163.54 for each of five years.

Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton questioned Sirhan only briefly, asking his age—to which Sirhan smiled, hunched forward and said eagerly, "I'll be 25 next month"—and whether he gave some of his earnings to his mother.

Sirhan said he gave money to her when he could and admitted that he got most of his withholding taxes back from the government because of his low earnings.

In his eight minutes on the stand, Sirhan spoke more than he has publicly since he was indicted last June for killing the New York senator.

Mrs. Sirhan followed her son to the stand, blinking rapidly as Cooper gave a rundown of her earnings since the family immigrated to Pasadena from Jerusalem in 1957.

Cooper revealed that her net earnings as a housekeeper at West-

Grand Jury Selection Law

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-1 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

*Motion to Quash
Indictment Denied*

Date: 2/5/69
Edition: Home
Author: Dave Smith
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensealt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-645
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
1 FEB 5 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

*CC-Bureau
2-5-69*

minster Presbyterian Church nursery school in Pasadena ranged from a minimum of \$1,471.40 in 1958 to a maximum of \$1,772.56 in 1966.

Mrs. Sirhan was employed throughout 1968, even after the assassination, but was terminated last month when attendance at her son's trial interfered with her work.

Mrs. Sirhan also testified that two other sons who lived at home, Adel, 30, and Munir, 21, sometimes gave her money "if I needed it" but that, she said, was "very little."

Munir earned an average annual net of \$1,510.05 from 1966 through 1968, and Adel earned an average net of \$3,999.70 from 1957 through 1967.

Mrs. Sirhan said she bought the family home at 698 E. Howard St. in Pasadena in 1963 for \$12,000. She and her daughter,

Ayda, who died in 1963, each contributed \$1,000 toward the down payment and the mortgage cost \$70 a month, she said.

Then Cooper asked, "Well, how do you keep up the payments? I mean, do you have a car of your own? How do you get to work?"

"Walking," said Mrs. Sirhan.

"Do you economize in other ways?" Cooper went on. "Do you bake your own bread, for example?"

"Yes, I do."

Cooper had no more questions and Judge Walker had excused Mrs. Sirhan when she suddenly paused and startled the courtroom with her impromptu statement.

Judge Walker smiled as she spoke, and Cooper, at the noon recess, gave Mrs. Sirhan a big hug and told her. "You did fine, mother."

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

RFK Worker Sues Sirhan For Million

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan, now on trial for slaying Sen. Robert F. Kennedy, has been sued for \$1,050,000 by a Kennedy campaign worker.

Irving Stroll, 17, 6088 Horner St., Los Angeles, yesterday filed a suit in Superior Court charging he was shot in the leg, beaten and violently assaulted during Sirhan's alleged attack on Kennedy at the Ambassador Hotel June 5, 1968.

Attorney Barry A. Rose said Stroll, a student and Kennedy campaign worker, was talking with the Senator when the assassination occurred.

The suit asks \$50,000 for medical and hospital expenses, plus estimated loss of earnings, and \$1 million in punitive damages.

Sirhan, a low-income worker in his life, maintains he is without funds while held in County Jail.

Sirhan Sued for \$1,050,000

*Let's Bureau
2-5-69*

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/4/69
Edition: Night Final
Author:
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156

Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-54-644
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED

1 FEB 5 1969
FBI - LOS ANGELES

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

Sirhan Testimony Scheduled For Today

By JOHN DOUGLAS

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Sirhan is both poor and young, the defense has argued, and was entitled to have youthful and impoverished members on the grand jury.

Chief Dep. Dist. Atty. Lynn D. Compton, in charge of the prosecution, has countered that any grand jury, no matter what its membership, would have indicted Sirhan, given the facts in the case. Compton has pointed out to Superior Court Judge

Herbert V. Walker, who presides over the case, that Sirhan's attorney's already have admitted in court that their client fired the shot which killed Kennedy.

Cooper seeks to have the in-

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan today is scheduled to break his long silence and testify in Superior Court in support of a legal move to prevent his trial for the admitted slaying of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy.

Except for a few monosyllabic answers to procedural questions in the preliminaries of his case, today will be the first time the young Jordanian immigrant has spoken publicly on the witness stand since his arrest for Kennedy's murder the morning of June 5, 1968, in the Ambassador Hotel's Embassy Room kitchen.

According to Grant B. Cooper, chief of Sirhan's defense team, the 24-year-old ex-stableboy will testify only about his economic condition. There will be no questions about his admitted slaying of the New York senator and presidential aspirant.

Cooper and his associates, Emilie Zola Berman and Russell E. Parsons, contend the 1968 Los Angeles County Grand Jury which indicted Sirhan was unconstitutionally selected because its membership did not include either poor persons, or anyone 30 years of age or younger.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-1 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/4/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: John Douglas
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-643

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 5 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

*Superior Court Judges
Subpoenaed*

Grand Jury Selection

*cc Examiner
2-5-69*

dictment against Sirhan quashed because of the makeup of the jury.

Sirhan was unemployed at the time of the Kennedy murder. His assets totaled around \$1700 — the proceeds of a compensation case settlement — but this money was under the control of his mother. He carried four \$100 bills at the time of his arrest.

The mother, Mrs. Mary Sirhan also will be called to the stand today. She will tell of the family's struggle since coming here from Jordan in 1957. Bishara Sirhan, her husband, left the family in Pasadena to return to Jordan.

Mrs. Sirhan was left the sole support of her four sons and a daughter, now dead. At the time of the murder she was working in a Pasadena nursery school.

Nearly all the 133 Superior Court judges entitled to make nomination to the 1968 grand jury have been given questionnaires by the defense asking about the criteria they used in selecting their nominees.

Three judges, Arthur Alarcon, Edward Brand and Kenneth Chantry, testified personally about their grand-jury-selection process last week. Chantry and Alarcon said it was difficult for them to find young persons and members of minority groups to serve because of the financial sacrifice demanded by a year's service on the grand jury.

Dr. Robert Schultz, University

of Southern California population specialist, has already testified that no member of the grand jury was under 30 and that none had an income of less than \$10,000 annually. Judge Brand testified that his nominees all had incomes of more than \$15,000 a year.

Dr. Schultz is analyzing the results of the questionnaires submitted by the judges and comparing them with the age and economic profile of the country revealed in the 1960 federal census. He will be recalled to the stand today.

Cooper has told Judge Walker that he believes he can complete his attack on the indictment and grand jury system during today's session of court.

If he does, the next order of business will be the swearing in of the 12 jurors already selected to try Sirhan. This may come Thursday. After they are sworn, the 12 will be sequestered (locked up) for the balance of the trial, which may be as long as three months. They will be kept at a downtown hotel, but may be visited by their "spouses of record" on weekends under a precedent-setting order issued by Judge Walker.

After the swearing of the 12 jurors six alternate jurors must be chosen before opening arguments in the case may begin. Selection of these alternates may take as long as a week, prosecution sources report.

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

WOUNDED YOUTH SUES SIRHAN FOR \$1 MILLION

A \$1,050,000 damage suit against Sirhan B. Sirhan was filed in Superior Court Monday by a 17-year-old youth who was beaten and shot at the same time Sen. Robert F. Kennedy was fatally wounded.

Irwin Stroll, 6069 Horner St., said in his complaint he was "wrongfully, unlawfully and violently assaulted" by Sirhan at the Ambassador last June

5 "and struck in and about the face, arms and body and was shot in the leg."

Stroll, a student who was at the Ambassador as a member of Volunteers for Kennedy, asked \$50,000 in general damages and \$1 million in punitive damages. He is represented by attorney Barry A. Rose.

Sirhan currently is standing trial on a charge of murder in the death of Sen. Kennedy.

Sirhan Sued for \$1 Million

note to Bureau 2-4-69

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

II-3 Los Angeles Times
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/4/69
Edition: Home
Author:
Editor: Nick B. Williams
Title: Kensalt

Character:
or
Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles
☐ Being Investigated

56-156-24-642

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FEB 4 1969	
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

(Mount Clipping in Space Below)

SIRHAN... REFLECTIONS AND REACTIONS

By MYRNA OLIVER

Herald-Examiner Staff Writer

Tomorrow Sirhan Bishara Sirhan speaks, for himself.

It will be the first time the admitted killer of Sen. Robert F. Kennedy has testified publicly.

Defense attorneys want him to discuss his family's economic status, as part of their attempt to discredit the grand jury which indicted him. The grand jury, they say, was not representative of all age and economic groups and excluded Sirhan's.

In asking him to testify, the attorneys take the chance that Sirhan may lose his self control.

In and out of court, Sirhan has shown himself to be a volatile young man, and incarceration has far from calmed him.

Being locked up bothers him a great deal, indicated chief investigator for the defense Michael McCowan, who talks with Sirhan often in court and has seen him in his cell.

"He's climbing the walls," McCowan said.

The 24-year-old Jordanian defendant came casually to court one day, with more informal dress and less decorous behavior than any of the handful of spectators assembled to watch his battle for life.

Sirhan wore black cotton trousers, black shoes and socks, and a pale blue shirt that accented his features and the hollowness of his ever paler and thinning face.

(Indicate page, name of newspaper, city and state.)

A-10 Herald-Examiner
Los Angeles, Calif.

Date: 2/3/69
Edition: Night Final
Author: Myrna Oliver
Editor: Donald Goodenow
Title: Kensalt

Character:

or

Classification: 56-156
Submitting Office: Los Angeles

☐ Being Investigated

SEARCHED	INDEXED
SERIALIZED	FILED
FBI - LOS ANGELES	

56-156-JV-641

Grand Jury
cc to Bureau
2-3-69

Observers were surprised at the schoolboy costume, which he had not worn publicly since his preliminary court hearings long before the beginning of the trial. His mother was surprised, too. She had bought him a suit to wear to the most crucial sessions he will ever attend, and worried that he had given up the formal, adult look it pretended to give him.

Nervous, taut Sirhan spends his days in court occasionally listening to proceedings; sharing questions or jokes with his attorneys, particularly Russell E. Parsons; reading trial transcripts or more mundane materials; and staring at his audience.

He studies the people who come to dissect him. Sirhan stares at the few young girls in the courtroom and smiles at those he seemingly knows. He looks at his observers, but flinches when his stare is returned. Like a small boy, he at once relishes attention that is unquestionably his, yet shies away from it.

On a recent day when attorneys questioned prospective jurors about the death penalty, political leanings and the youth's age, Sirhan yawned. He laughed when juror Albert Frederico had difficulty answering questions. Sirhan spasmodically rocked in his over-size chair. More nervous than interested, he half-rose in his seat to shift positions or to look over Parson's shoulder at materials on the defense table. He slipped

out of his seat a number of times, was finally restrained by his attorneys at the request of deputies. He jumped at a knock on the courtroom door, at every sound.

Sirhan rubbed his eyes, smoothed wavy black hair, chewed well-bitten fingernails on his long, graceful bony hands.

He stood politely when introduced to persons in the courtroom, sat down and kicked his chair and kicked it again.

The angry young man wiped perspiration from his forehead, played with his button-down shirt collar, edged his chair nearer the table.

Sirhan poured himself a glass of water and savored it like a cocktail.

"He doesn't look like he could shoot anyone," said a girl in a yellow dress, object of several Sirhan smiles. "He looks so intelligent."

Being on constant court display appears to bother Sirhan. For there is no place for him to hide.

When Superior Judge Herbert V. Walker, who presides, called for an in-chambers session or a recess, Sirhan was the first person out of his chair. He bounced, showing youthful energy despite his long captivity and loss of weight, into a more private world, eager for a change, a break in his routine.

He moves quickly but quietly, politely. Friends and family have always praised Sirhan's politeness.

Leaving his court house stairwell to return to his place before the eyes of the fascinated, Sirhan ground out a cigarette.

He smokes a lot, his attorneys say. He tried to give it up after his imprisonment, but has gone back to as many cigarettes as he has time for outside the courtroom.

Mrs. Mary Sirhan, 56-year-old mother of the defendant, wondered about her son's courtroom antics.

"It would make anybody nervous," she said simply, standing quietly outside the courtroom during a recess. Wearing a blue dress that struck mid-calf, a black sweater and pumps with too-thin heels, her greying hair caught neatly in a bun, Mrs. Sirhan stood with her sons, Adel, 21, and Munir, 30.

The trio daily earns a smile and sometimes a wave from Sirhan. The mother, unshielded from press and public, is calmer than her son, although sometimes given to tears.

"I get my strength from above . . . every day before I come," she said with a pleasant but tight-lipped smile.

Sirhan Bishara Sirhan is a troubled young man. The trouble shows in his actions and reactions as he sits at the long defense table in Department 107 of the Superior Court in and for the County of Los Angeles.

Tomorrow is his day to speak.

4

**'Sirhan Bishara
Sirhan is a
troubled young
man. The
trouble shows
in his actions
and reactions
as he sits at
the long defense
table in
Department 107
of the Superior
Court in and
for the county
of Los Angeles.'**

**Staff photographer
Michael Harding
captured some of the
drama of the Sirhan
trial in these shots
taken in the Hall
of Justice. Above:
Reflections on a
marble wall
mirror the mental
reflections and
speculations of
visitors and
officials waiting
to gain access to
the courtroom.**

**Left: No two
spectators have as
much interest in the
proceedings as
Sirhan's mother
Mary and brother
Adel, who leave
the courtroom arm in
arm. Defense attorney
Grant Cooper (below)
waves a hand as he
emphasizes a point in
talk with newsmen.**

